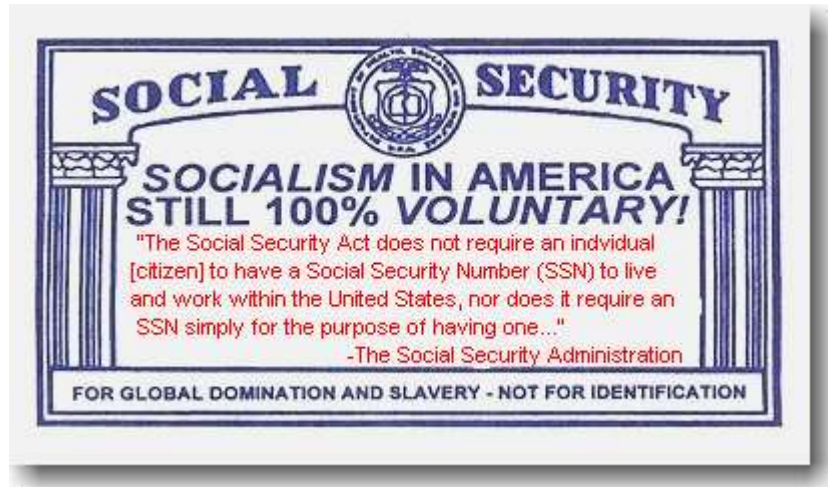


# *Social Security: Mark of the Beast*



Ver. 2.7  
August 12, 2016

*Written by:*  
Steven D. Miller  
[steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com](mailto:steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com)

*Electronically Published by:*  
Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/> (primary site)  
or  
<http://famguardian1.org/> (Mirror server #1)

# THE MARK OF THE BEAST

## A Study Guide

By Steven D. Miller

July 24, 2016

I will correct any factual errors.

Send your editorial comments to [steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com](mailto:steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com)

**THE MARK OF THE BEAST  
STUDY GUIDE**

By Steven D. Miller

**Disclaimer:**

Nothing in this book is legal advice, except for this: Obey the Author of your Being, and suffer the consequences.

## REVISION HISTORY

<i>Date</i>	<i>Version</i>	<i>Description</i>
6/1/02	1.00	1. Initial version
6/2/02	1.01	1. Added table of authorities, table of cases, Forward.
6/3/02	1.02	1. Added a table of statutes and Constitutional Provisions. 2. Indexed several more authorities. 3. Reformatted further.
6/7/02	1.03	1. Completely revised the book with new updates submitted by Steve Miller on 6/3/2002. Used his March 2002 version. 2. Normalized all cites to agree with conventions found in: <a href="http://www.legalbluebook.com">http://www.legalbluebook.com</a> . 3. Added table of authorities.
6/9/02	1.04	1. Fixed formatting problems in section 33. 2. Corrected some formatting problems at the beginning of section 16, just before 16.1 starts.
9/13/02	1.05	1. Corrected formatting errors in section 27, Appendix I. 2. Corrected a few minor spelling errors. 3. Corrected page numbering problems in section 22. 4. Added version number to the footer of the document.
2/9/03	1.06	1. Corrected the cite from Helvering v. Davis in section 6. 2. Deleted incorrect cite from Colonial Pipeline Co. v. Traigle, 421 U.S. 100 (1975) from section 25. 3. Added a source to the definition of "legal title" in chapter 14. 4. Replaced all occurrences of "US" with "U.S.".
3/15/03	1.07	1. Corrected the mirror server address for mirror #2 and added mirror #3.
8/6/03	1.08	1. Replaced the "libertyquotes.com" address with an email address in section 31.
8/15/03	1.09	1. Replaced all occurrences of "familyguardian.tzo.com" with "famguardian.org".
2/18/05	1.10	1. Updated cover page.
08/04/05	1.11	1. Corrected formatting problems in the footer. 2. Corrected typos in this Revision History. 3. Added several more items to the table of authorities at the beginning. 4. Improved formatting throughout the document.
05/05/10	2.0	1. New version.
09/17/10	2.1	1. Added a discussion of benefactors to the introduction 2. Added Blackstone quote to chapter 2.8 3. Added image of Black's Law Dictionary entry "personal liberty" to chapter 2.13 4. Added commerce speculations to chapter 2.13.2, with image 5. Added Treaty of Paris links to chapter 3.2 6. Added images of Marks on foreheads to chapter 3.4 7. Added 1 <sup>st</sup> Thessalonians quote to chapter 3.5 8. Added Corban discussion to chapter 3.8 9. Added Blackstone quote to chapter 4.3 10. Added more quotes from Supreme Court's Slaughter-House cases to chapter 4.9 11. Corrected misspelling of Statue 12. Chapter 4.7 and 4.13 added warnings that SS cards remain government property 13. Chapter 4.13 quote 38 Stat 166, clarified labor rights, added Starr Chamber history 14. Added Magna Carta discussion to chapter 4.17 15. Discussed New York's non participation in the first congress, chapter 4.17 16. Added photo of blood red sea to chapter 5.1 17. Added a new chapter 5.8 What third temple? 18. Corrected quote of Supreme Court's Minker case in chapter 7.1 19. Added 6 Bible verses to chapter 7.8

Date	Version	Description
		20. Removed bookmarks
10/01/10	2.2	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Corrected misstatement about Egyptian mythology in chapter 3.8.</li> <li>2. Corrected typo in chapter 4.10.</li> <li>3. Added Vattel's definition of Resident to Chapters 4.10 and 4.15.</li> <li>4. Deleted duplicate Supreme Court quote from chapter 4.10.</li> <li>5. Added Amish link to chapter 4.13.</li> <li>6. Added link to Mayflower Compact to chapter 4.17.</li> <li>7. Corrected several problems in the Table of Authorities at the beginning.</li> </ol>
12/01/10	2.3	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Corrected reference to Cain's mark in chapter 2.6</li> <li>2. Added to chapter 4.8 a quote from a 1925 theory on "purely equitable obligations" imposed by one-sided contracts.</li> <li>3. Added to chapter 4.9 the 1891 definition of <i>Citizen</i></li> <li>4. At the end of chapter 4.9 added info on 14<sup>th</sup> amendment children</li> <li>5. Added a new chapter 4.9.1 <i>Parens Patriae</i> (daddy government)</li> <li>6. Added to chapter 4.10 another proof that birth does not establish citizenship.</li> <li>7. Added to chapter 4.15 discussion of who owns the labor of government wards</li> <li>8. Added Supreme Court quote from <i>Retirement Board v. Alton</i> to chapter 4.15</li> <li>9. Added discussion of hypothecation of labor rights to chapter 4.15</li> <li>10. Added a new chapter 5.9 What false prophet?</li> <li>11. Removed line numbers</li> </ol>
7/15/11	2.4	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Chapter 2.7 contrasts between a Beast name and the Lord's name</li> <li>2. Chapter 2.9.1 added more legal quotes to prove that people are not persons</li> <li>3. Chapter 2.13 expanded commentary on the right to liberty</li> <li>4. Chapter 2.13 added new subchapter on Biblical warnings against welfare</li> <li>5. Chapter 2.13 added proof of government's legal duty to protect you from all known methods of compulsion (unless you waived your rights)</li> <li>6. Chapter 3.4 expanded commentary on America's Liberty Cap</li> <li>7. Chapter 3.8 added cite for obscure Lincoln quote</li> <li>8. Chapter 4.3 added link to Congressman Crockett's "It's not yours to give" speech</li> <li>9. Chapter 4.9.1 added link to Plutarch quote</li> <li>10. Chapter 4.13.2 added link to Starr Chamber <i>Shetar</i> article</li> <li>11. Chapter 4.16 cited a report on excessiveness of occupational licensing</li> <li>12. Chapter 5.1.1 timeline, cited NYT wormwood article</li> <li>13. Added new section 5.1.3.1 for upcoming astronomical events</li> <li>14. Chapter 5.1.4 timeline emphasis to Revelation 20:5 First resurrection</li> <li>15. Chapter 7.5 historical quotes about collapse of ancient Greece civilization</li> <li>16. Chapter 7.8 moved recurring themes of political power to 7.8 and moved previous text to new section 7.8.1</li> <li>17. Chapter 7.8 added Law Dictionary definition of the Law of Nature</li> </ol>
9/4/12	2.5	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Chapters 2.2, 2.4 and 2.8.1 Oaths. Added scriptural and historical references.</li> <li>2. Chapters 4.10, 7.2 and 7.4 corrected quote from <i>Luther v. Borden</i></li> <li>3. Added New Chapters 2.2.1, 2.2.2, 2.2.3, for more oath topics, incorporated the previous chapter 2.8 on Worship into the new 2.2.3</li> <li>4. Chapter 2.2.4 new chapter on oath history</li> <li>5. Chapter 2.2.5 new chapter on Supreme Court oath cases</li> <li>6. Chapter 2.3 added topic of Pope Gregory's heretic inquisition</li> <li>7. 2.12 added Supreme Court quotes from <i>Aptheker v. Secretary of State</i>, and <i>Michigan v. Sitz</i></li> <li>8. 2.13 removed misquote of <i>Staples v. US 21 F.Supp. 737</i></li> <li>4.9 Citizenship</li> <li>9. Rearranged Chapter 4.17 around the theme that the U.S. never existed</li> <li>10. Added to Chapter 4.17.1 a dozen more reasons why SSNs waive rights.</li> <li>11. Added to 4.17.4 quotes from North Carolina Declaration of Rights</li> <li>12. Chapter 5.1 Christ's timeline. Added further proof of post tribulation rapture.</li> </ol>

Date	Version	Description
		13. Chapter 5.2 Added original Greek to prove it is Beast's - not AntiChrist's - number. 14. Added a new chapter 5.10 on noisome and grievous sores. 15. Added Index entries for Bo-otes, Eagle Symbolism, Constitutor, Right Hand and Forehead, Tertullian 16. Fixed formatting errors.
7/10/2015	2.6	1. Introduction - added case cites that prove government interests override religion 2. 2.9 added UN requirements for U.S. driver license photographs 3. 2.14 deleted misquote of McCulloch v. Maryland 17 US 316 4. 3.2 added Tertullian quote in comments about Revelation 13:15 5. 3.8.2 added further quotes on $\Sigma\Sigma\Sigma$ worship of Isis, and a list of common origins of welfare, Vatican symbols, banking and licensed commercial traffic. 6. 4.12 added quote from Flemming v. Nestor, 363 US 603 7. 4.18.1 corrected spelling of Flemming, who was Secretary of HEW in 1960, expanded the introduction to the topic of foreign authority over SSNs, 8. 5.1.1 Timeline -- added Ezekiel 38 great earthquake commentary 9. 5.1.4 cited a source for the names of 12 stars. 10. 5.1.5 added government proofs of new pestilences in divers places, which are spreading as if to kill one-fourth of all mankind. 11. 5.5 added comments on Eusebius' 70th week theory 12 Added an index entry for the Great Earthquake
8/12/2016	2.7	1. Edits to chapter 5.1 timeline regarding prophecy fulfillment 2. Deleted obsolete Internet links 3. Deleted bad quote from Luther v. Borden in section 7.4. 4. Changed font color in Section 8, Index from gray to black. 5. Deleted egold from section 7.13. Now defunct.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

	Page
<b>REVISION HISTORY</b> .....	<b>IV</b>
<b>TABLE OF CONTENTS</b> .....	<b>VII</b>
<b>TABLE OF AUTHORITIES</b> .....	<b>10</b>
<b>WARNINGS</b> .....	<b>32</b>
<b>FOREWORD</b> .....	<b>33</b>
<b>1 SECTION 1: INTRODUCTION</b> .....	<b>35</b>
<b>2 SECTION 2: FUNDAMENTALS</b> .....	<b>41</b>
2.1 Is Satan deceptive, If possible to deceive the very elect?.....	42
2.2 What is an oath? .....	43
2.2.1 Salute oaths.....	43
2.2.2 Swearing oaths .....	44
2.2.3 Worship oaths.....	44
2.2.4 Oath history topics.....	46
2.2.4.1 Scriptures .....	47
2.2.4.2 History .....	48
2.2.4.3 All known methods of compulsion? .....	52
2.2.5 Supreme Court Cases On Abhorrent Oaths .....	54
2.3 A perjury oath is always a religious ceremony.....	56
2.4 Can you sell your soul with a signature?.....	58
2.5 What is a Beast? .....	59
2.6 What is a Mark? .....	61
2.7 What is a Name? .....	63
2.8 What is Christ's name .....	65
2.9 Is a perjury oath a form of worship? .....	66
2.10 What is an image? .....	68
2.10.1 Do you Worship graven images?.....	70
2.10.2 Supreme Court Confirms Government Is A Graven Image.....	70
2.10.2.1 What is a graven image ? .....	70
2.10.2.2 People are not "persons" .....	73
2.10.2.3 Quiz.....	74
2.10.2.4 Conclusions.....	74
2.11 Obey Authority part 1: We are all created equal .....	76
2.12 Obey Authority part 2: Obedience to false authority is mutiny.....	80
2.13 Obey Authority part 3: Romans 13 exousia. ....	81
2.14 Are unalienable Rights granted by government? .....	86
2.14.1 Your right to contract part 1: Your sacred right to contract.....	91
2.14.2 Your right to contract part 2: your commerce is now regulated .....	91
2.14.3 Welfare part 1: Lordship.....	95
2.14.4 Biblical warnings against accepting welfare.....	96
2.14.5 Receiving welfare is a form of worship.....	97
2.14.6 What is lordship? .....	98
2.14.7 Can you take care of yourself? .....	99
2.14.8 Debtors must lose .....	99
2.14.9 Can a slave own anything? .....	100
<b>3 SECTION 3: ENDTIME PROPHECY</b> .....	<b>102</b>
3.1 Prophecy.....	102
3.2 How will we recognize the mark? .....	104
3.3 The first and second beasts.....	117

3.4	Right hand and forehead, Revelation 13:16 .....	120
3.5	Revelation 13:13 Great signs, even fire from heaven.....	128
3.6	Signs of Revelation 13:14 .....	134
3.7	Revelation 13:17 No man might .....	139
3.8	666 – the number of man.....	141
3.8.1	The number 666.....	141
3.8.2	Possible meanings of 666 .....	141
3.8.3	Calculating the number 666.....	142
3.8.4	Other biblical occurrences of 666.....	144
3.8.5	Subjective ideas about the meaning of 666 .....	145
	Ancient sun worship Babylon Mystery Religions .....	146
<b>4</b>	<b>SECTION 4: CAN SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBERS BE THE MARK?.....</b>	<b>148</b>
4.1	Introduction .....	148
4.2	Social security is not a trust fund nor insurance .....	152
4.3	Welfare part 2: Federal entitlements, such as SS, were never intended for Christians .....	153
4.4	Court cases forcing people to get an SSN over their objections.....	159
4.5	Who can qualify for a Social Security Card? .....	160
4.6	Qualifying for a Social Security Card .....	163
4.7	Consequences of getting a Social Security Card .....	165
4.8	You waived your right to earn wages.....	167
4.8.1	Basic taxation principles.....	168
4.8.2	Your chains of slavery .....	169
4.8.3	For the advanced student .....	170
4.9	Your Government’s definition of the word “Citizen” .....	172
4.10	Parens Patriæ (daddy government).....	183
4.11	Does getting an SSN change your citizenship? .....	185
4.11.1	Natural birth does not create citizenship.....	186
4.11.2	Citizenship is allegiance to a government.....	188
4.11.3	Citizen birth is not natural birth.....	190
4.11.4	Warning .....	191
4.12	Socialism is not compatible with Christianity .....	192
4.12.1	Public education.....	195
4.12.2	Summary.....	195
4.13	Will the Lord punish someone for getting a Social Security Number? .....	196
4.13.1	Who then can be saved?.....	200
4.13.2	Commandments .....	200
4.13.3	Obey the ten commandments?.....	203
4.13.4	What about the teachings of paul? .....	203
4.14	Work without a SSN?.....	205
4.14.1	IRS Authority .....	211
4.14.2	Employment is not employment .....	212
4.14.3	Employee’s I-9 and W-4 forms.....	219
4.15	Citizens do not pay income tax .....	227
4.16	Federal ownership of slaves .....	228
4.16.1	Non-persons.....	234
4.16.2	Resident .....	235
4.16.3	Citizen.....	236
4.16.4	Person .....	237
4.16.5	Enfranchised citizens .....	238
4.16.6	Accepting benefits .....	239
4.16.7	State citizen.....	241
4.16.8	Employee .....	241
4.17	Conclusions of law .....	242
4.18	The missing Eagle wings.....	247
4.18.1	A foreign authority issues Social Security Numbers .....	249
4.18.2	Washington DC is a colony of the Holy Roman Empire .....	251



4.18.2.1	Pilgrims and puritans .....	253
4.18.2.2	The revolutionary war debt .....	253
4.18.3	The Revolutionary War Did Not Win Independence.....	254
4.18.4	District Of Columbia Is Land Cession From The Pope .....	254
4.18.4.1	Our rights come from the magna carta.....	255
4.18.4.2	Example .....	257
4.18.5	Other Federal Topics: .....	257
4.18.5.1	Constitutional law .....	259
4.18.5.2	Persons are government property.....	260
4.18.5.3	You do not have the authority to buy or sell .....	260
4.18.5.4	Ssns are issued by a foreign power .....	261
4.18.5.5	National id card.....	263
4.18.5.6	You and all your labor and your children have been sold.....	263
4.18.5.7	United Nations registration for ssn numbered persons. ....	264
4.18.5.8	Is new york city still on foreign soil?.....	265
4.19	Answers to skeptics.....	268
<b>5</b>	<b>SECTION 5: YOU WANT TO BE LEFT BEHIND.....</b>	<b>275</b>
5.1	Christ’s Timeline.....	275
5.1.1	Time Line .....	275
5.1.2	Christ will not come in secret.....	281
5.1.3	Watch therefore, for your Last trump .....	281
5.1.4	Astronomical events? .....	284
5.1.5	Where does the mark of the beast fit into the timeline .....	286
5.2	What AntiChrist?.....	289
5.3	What about the rapture? .....	291
5.3.1	You want to be left behind .....	293
5.3.2	When is the tribulation?.....	293
5.3.3	Who will be taken away?.....	294
5.3.4	Targeting those who are to die .....	295
5.4	What 42 months?.....	297
5.5	What about the 70 <sup>th</sup> week of Daniel 9:24? .....	300
5.6	What man of sin, son of perdition, restrainer? .....	302
5.7	Which abomination of desolation?.....	304
5.8	What third temple?.....	304
5.9	What false prophet?.....	306
5.10	What noisome and grievous sore?.....	307
<b>6</b>	<b>SECTION 6 ARE YOU SERVING THE BEAST AUTHORITY? .....</b>	<b>308</b>
<b>7</b>	<b>SECTION 7: REFERENCE.....</b>	<b>314</b>
7.1	Your Government’s definition of the word “Must” .....	314
7.2	Your Government’s definition of the word “Person”.....	315
7.3	You waived your right to a trial by jury.....	318
7.4	Government authority no longer comes from "We the people" .....	320
7.5	Politics = Beast Power.....	322
7.6	Other Marks: Birth and Marriage Certificates and ID cards .....	326
7.7	Other traps: Power of Attorney, interest, federal districts. ....	332
7.8	Why have a government?.....	334
7.9	The Purpose of Civil Government.....	336
7.10	Separating Church from State .....	340
7.11	Your Chain of Command: Proof that you have been overthrown. ....	344
7.12	Some additional thoughts. ....	354
7.13	Resource List.....	355
<b>8</b>	<b>Index .....</b>	<b>357</b>

## TABLE OF AUTHORITIES

### Constitutional Provisions

14th amendment .....	177, 179, 180, 237, 245, 321, 326, 327
14th Amendment .....	177, 183, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 321, 326, 332
14th Amendment section 1 .....	177
Alexander Hamilton, Federalist #28 .....	77
Article 1 section 10 .....	214
Article 1 section 3 .....	177
Article 1, sect 2 .....	170
Article 1, section 10 .....	73, 329
Article 1, Section 10 .....	212
Article 1, section 2 .....	177
Article 2, section 1 .....	177
Article 3, section 2 .....	177
Article 4 section 2 .....	177
Article 4, section 2 .....	179
Article IV of the Articles of Confederation .....	161
Articles of Confederation, Article IV .....	176
Constitution Article I, section 10 .....	99
Declaration of Independence .....	86, 244
Fifth Amendment .....	48, 66, 74, 163, 243, 245, 318
First Amendment .....	322, 340, 354
Fourteenth Amendment .....	331
Sixteenth Amendment .....	88
Thirteenth Amendment .....	230
U.S. Constitution .....	40, 46, 91, 112, 150, 153, 168, 177, 230, 259, 322
U.S. Declaration of Independence .....	334

### Statutes

12 Stat 432, chapter 119, section 86 .....	170
12 U.S.C. §95(b) .....	260
12 U.S.C. §95b .....	113
18 U.S.C. §§241, or 242 .....	207
18 U.S.C. §1961(4) .....	208
18 U.S.C. §1961(5) .....	207
18 U.S.C. §1962(d) .....	223
20 Statute 30, chapter 37 .....	56
22 U.S.C. §263a .....	345
22 U.S.C. §286 .....	264
26 U.S. Code 3401(d) .....	221
26 U.S.C. § 6109 .....	224
26 U.S.C. §3402(a) .....	223
26 U.S.C. §3402(f)(1) .....	223
26 U.S.C. §3402(f)(2)(A) .....	223
26 U.S.C. §3402(p) .....	225
26 U.S.C. §6109(a)(2) .....	224
26 U.S.C. §6109(a)(3) .....	222
26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(26) .....	221
29 U.S. Code section 1802 .....	219, 312
42 U.S.C. §161-175 .....	331
42 U.S.C. §1981 .....	220
42 U.S.C. §225 .....	331
42 U.S.C. §408(a)(8) .....	207
42 U.S.C. §433(a) .....	158

8 U.S.C. §1324a ..... 220

8 U.S.C. §1481(a)..... 262

Buck Act (4 U.S.C. §§104 to 113) ..... 326

Emergency Banking Act, March 9, 1933, 48 Stat. 1, Public Law 89-719..... 101

Federal Reserve Act (12 U.S.C. §411) ..... 240

Federal Reserve Act, 38 Stat. 251, Section 14(a)..... 229

Internal Revenue Code 7701(a)(20) ..... 221

Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(a)(3)..... 217

Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(d) ..... 182

Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(e)..... 166

IRS Publication 1586 “Backup Withholding On Missing and Incorrect TINs” ..... 225

Judicial Improvements Act, Public Law 100-702 (102 STAT 4672) Section 297(a)..... 351

Paperwork Reduction Act (Public Law 96-511) (44 U.S.C. §3506(c)(1)(B)(iii)(IV) ..... 206

Privacy Act (Title 5, U.S. Code, section 552a) in subsection (e)(3)..... 161

Privacy Act of 1974 section 7(b)..... 206

Public Law 101-216 ..... 118

Public Law 104-208, Part B, Title IV, p. 650..... 263

Public Salary Tax Act of 1939 [76th Congress, 1st Session, Chap 59, pages 574-575 ..... 168

Seasonal Agricultural Workers Protection Act (Title 8 Code of Federal Regulations 274a.2 ..... 312

Sheppard-Towner Maternity Act of 1921, 42 Stat 224 ..... 331

Social Security Act. 98, 99, 149, 150, 152, 153, 157, 161, 166, 167, 180, 182, 185, 191, 192, 196, 214, 216, 224, 231, 232, 242, 244, 250

Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B) ..... 99

Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)..... 183

Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II) ..... 224

Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)..... 160

Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II)..... 98, 249

Title 12 United States Code, section 95(b)..... 149, 155

Title 18, sections 241 & 242 ..... 215

Title 22 of the U.S. Code..... 263

Title 22 U.S. Code, section 212..... 263

Title 26 U.S. Code, section 3401(c) ..... 221

Title 26 U.S. Code, section 6109(a)(3)..... 222

Title 26 U.S. Code, section 7701(a)(26)..... 230

Title 28 U.S. Code, section 297(b)..... 351

Title 29 U.S.C. §1802..... 220

Title 31 U.S. Code chapter 3 ..... 261, 345

Title 5 U.S.C. §552a section (e)(3)(A) ..... 206

Trading with the Enemy Act (40 Stat L. 411, subdivision b of section 5) ..... 260

U.S. Code Title 20 Chapter 111 Subpart B 422.103(b)(2) ..... 268

U.S. Code Title 31, sections 5322-5324..... 140

Uniform Commerical Code (U.C.C.) §9-302 ..... 215

**Regulations**

22 CFR §6-212 ..... 188, 231

26 CFR §301.6109-1(c)..... 226

26 CFR §301.6724-1(e)..... 225

26 CFR §31.3402(f)(2)-1 ..... 225

26 CFR §422.6109-1(h) ..... 162

26 CFR section 1.1-1 ..... 190

26 Code of Federal Regulations §301.6109-1 ..... 222

31 CFR Part 51.2 ..... 326

8 CFR §274(a)(4) ..... 225

8 CFR §274a.2(a) ..... 220

8 CFR §274a2(b)(4) ..... 220

Title 20, Code of Federal Regulations, section 422.103..... 161

Title 20, Code of Federal Regulations, section 422.103(b)(2) ..... 329  
 Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 1.1441-5 ..... 149, 227  
 Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 301.6109-1(c)..... 225  
 Title 31, Code of Federal Regulations, chapter 3 ..... 148  
 Title 8, Code of Federal Regulations, section 337..... 100, 176, 188

**Rules**

Federal Evidence Rule 603..... 85  
 Federal Rule of Civil Procedure (F.R.C.P.) 27..... 224

**Cases**

81 Fed 358..... 150  
 American Banana Co. v. U.S. Fruit Co, 213 U.S. 347 (1909)..... 326  
 Aptheker v. Secretary of State, 378 U.S. 500 (1964) ..... 82  
 Argersinger v. Hamlin, 407 U.S. 25 ..... 351  
 Baldwin v. Franks 7 S.Ct. 656, 662; 120 U.S. 678, 690..... 178  
 Ballou v. Kemp, 95 F.2d. 556 ..... 314  
 Baltgalvis v. Newport News Shipbuilding Inc, 1132 F.Supp. 2d 414 ..... 226  
 Bowen v. Roy 106 S.Ct. 2147, 476 U.S. 693 ..... 159  
 Boyd v. U.S., 116 U.S. 616 (1886)..... 55  
 Boyd v. United States, 116 U.S. 616 at page 632..... 66  
 Boyd, 116 U.S. 616 ..... 136  
 Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. 742 ..... 171  
 Brinkley v. Brinkley, 56 N.Y. 192 ..... 314  
 Briscoe v. Lahue, 460 U.S. 325..... 233  
 Brokaw v. Highway Comrs., 130 Ill. 482, 22 N.E. 596, 6 L.R.A. 161 ..... 162  
 Brushaber v. Union Pacific RR Co. 240 U.S. 1 (36 S.Ct. 242 & 243) (1916)..... 170  
 Bryant v. O’Connor, 671 F.Supp. 1279..... 233  
 Butcher’s Union v. Crescent City, 111 U.S. 746..... 89, 207, 215  
 Butcher’s Union Co. v. Crescent City Co., 111 U.S. 746..... 209  
 Cairo and Fulton RR Co. v. Hecht, 95 U.S. 170 ..... 314  
 Calder v. Bull, 3 Dallas 386 ..... 179  
 Callahan v. Woods, 479 F.Supp. 621 (reversed by 658 F.2d. 679) ..... 159  
 Caterpillar Tractor Company v. U.S., 589 F.2d. 1040..... 208, 314  
 Chambers v. Klein, 419 F.Supp. 569..... 159  
 Chisholm v. Georgia, 2 U.S. 419..... 71, 351  
 Church of Scientology v. U.S. Department of Justice, 612 F.2d. 417, 425 (1979) ..... 317  
 Cohens v. Virginia 19 U.S. 264 at 418..... 155  
 Colautti v. Franklin, 439 U.S. at 392-393, n.10 ..... 181  
 Colgate v. Harvey, 296 U.S. 404, 429..... 179  
 Conner v. U.S., 303 F.Supp. 1187 (1969) on page 1191..... 169  
 Coppage v. Kansas, 236 U.S. 1 ..... 209  
 Crandall v. Nevada 73 U.S. 35 ..... 86  
 Cromelin v. U.S., 177 F.2d. 275..... 259  
 Crosse v. Board of Supervisors of Elections, 221 A.2d. 431 ..... 189  
 Cumming v. State of Missouri, 71 U.S. 277 (1866), 71 U.S. 277 (Wall.)..... 55  
 Dallas v. Mitchell, 245 S.W. 944 ..... 86  
 Dandridge v. Williams, 397 U.S. 471 ..... 90  
 Davidson v. New Orleans..... 177  
 Doe v. Sharp, 491 F.Supp. 346..... 159  
 Doyle v. Wilson, 529 F.Supp. 1343 ..... 234  
 Dred Scott v. Sandford, (1857) 19 How. 393, 60 U.S. 576 ..... 174  
 Dyett v. Turner, 439 P.2d. 266 ..... 177  
 Economy Heating Co. v. U.S., 470 F.2d. 585 (1972)..... 89, 209

Edwards v. California, 314 U.S. 160.....	137, 185, 187
Edwards v. California, 314 U.S. 160 at 172.....	96, 191
Edwards v. California, 314 U.S. 160 at page 183.....	326
Edwards v. Keith, 231 Fed. 1.....	89, 169
Eisner v. Macomber, 40 S.Ct. 192 (1920), 252 U.S. 189 (1919).....	170
Elk v. Wilkins in 1884 (112 U.S. 94).....	136, 177
Erie RR v. Tompkins, 304 U.S. 64.....	164
Evans v. Gore, 253 U.S. 245.....	88
Evans v. Gore, 40 S.Ct. 555(1920).....	170
Ex Parte Milligan, 71 U.S. 2.....	135, 187, 189, 233, 242, 350
Fairbanks v. U.S., 181 U.S. 283.....	320
Federal Crop Insurance Corp. v. Merrill, 332 U.S. 380 (1947).....	208, 314
Fields v. U.S., 27 App.D.C. 433.....	314
First Unit. Church v. Los Angeles, 357 U.S. 545 (1958).....	54
Flemming v. Nestor, 363 U.S. 603.....	149
Flemming v. Nestor, 80 S.Ct. 1367.....	193
Flint v. Stone Tracy Co, 220 U.S. 107.....	170
Foley Brothers v. Filardo, 336 U.S. 281.....	189, 326
Fort Howard Paper v. Fox River Dist., 26 N.W.2nd. 661.....	314
Fox v. Standard Oil Co. of N.J., 294 U.S. 87, 95-96 (1935).....	181
Garner v. U.S., 424 U.S. 648.....	245
George Williams College v. Village of Williams Bay, 7 N.W.2nd 891.....	314
German Alliance Insurance Co. v. Kansas, 233 U.S. 389.....	232
German Alliance Insurance Co. v. Kansas, 233 U.S. 389 at page 432.....	333
Gerth v. U.S., 132 F.Supp. 894 (1955).....	89
Girouard v. U.S., 328 U.S. 61 (1946).....	54
Goldberg v. Weinberger, 546 F.2d. 477.....	208
Gordon v. Idaho, 778 F.2d. 1397.....	46
Gow v. Consolidated Copper, 165 Atl. 136.....	314
Green v. Philbrook 576 F 440, (reversing 427 F.Supp. 834).....	159
Greidinger v. Davis, 988 F.2d. 1344.....	324
Hague v. CIO, 307 U.S. 496, 520.....	178, 245
Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43, 74.....	244
Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43, at page 74.....	209, 244
Helvering v. Davis, 301 U.S. 619.....	152
Hurtado v. California, 110 U.S. 516.....	89
In re: Merriam's Estate, 36 N.Y. 505, 141 N.Y. 479, Affirmed in U.S. v. Perkins, 163 U.S. 625.....	347
Jack Cole v. Commissioner MacFarland, 337 SW2d 453 (1960).....	88
Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421.....	336
Keller v. Potomac, 261 U.S. 428.....	350
Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383.....	174, 187, 191, 235, 329
Laird v. Tatum, 408 U.S. 1, page 28.....	354
Lansing v. Smith, 4 Wend. 9, 20 (1829).....	175
Laureldale Cemetery Assoc. v. Matthews, 345 A 239, and 47 A.2d 277 (1946).....	89
Leahy v. District of Columbia, 833 F.2d. 1046.....	67, 165
Lewis v. Federal Reserve, 680 F.2d. 1240.....	347
Logan v. US, 12 S.Ct. 617, 626.....	178, 234
Long v. Ramussen, 281 F 236, 238 (1922).....	89, 209
Luria v. U.S., 231 U.S. 9.....	315
Luther v. Borden, 48 U.S. 1 at page 52.....	353
Luther v. Borden, 48 U.S. 1, 12 L.Ed. 581.....	186, 316
Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, 309 U.S. 83 (1940).....	207, 217, 227
Magnano Co. v. Hamilton 292 U.S. 40.....	89
Martinez v. Winner, 771 F.2d. 424.....	233
Maynard v. Hill, 125 U.S. 190.....	315
Maynard v. Hill, 8 S.Ct. 723, 125 U.S. 190.....	329
McElrath v. Califano 615 F.2d. 434.....	159
Meeker v. U.S., 350 U.S. 199.....	331

Meese v. Keene, 481 U.S. 465, 484-485 (1987) .....	181
Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390 .....	126, 171
Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, 399.....	85, 87, 176
Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, at page 399 .....	209, 325
Meyer v. Putnam, 526 P.2d. 139 .....	324
Michigan State Police v. Sitz, 496 U.S. 469 (1990).....	82
Miller v. U.S., 230 F. 489.....	90
Minor v. Happersett, 88 U.S. 162 (1875).....	173
Miranda v. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436, at page 459, in footnote 27 .....	48, 66
Miranda v. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436,491 .....	171
Mitchum v. Foster, 407 U.S. 225, 242 .....	233
Murdock v. Penn., 319 U.S. 105 .....	244
Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105.....	206, 330
Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105 (1943) .....	90, 171
Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105 at page 140.....	240
Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105, at 113 (1943).....	89
Muskrat v. U.S., 219 U.S. 346 .....	350
Nickell v. Rosenfield (1927), 255 P. 760 .....	163
NY Central RR Co. v. Chisholm (1925) 268 U.S. 29 .....	326
Patterson v. Aiken, 628 F.Supp. 1068.....	233
Peck v Lowe 247 U.S. 165 (1918) .....	170
Penhallow v. Doane, 3 U.S. 55.....	229
Penhallow v. Doane, 3 U.S. 55 at page 94 .....	71, 100
Penn Mutual Indemnity Co. v. Commissioner (32 Tax Court page 681) .....	89
People v. Knapp, 206 N.Y. 373, 381, 99 N.E. 841, 844.....	71
People v. Shirley, 92 A.L.R.2d. 413.....	161
Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 .....	317, 333
Pierce v. Society of Sisters, 268 U.S. 510 .....	126
Plyler v. Doe, 457 U.S. 202.....	126
Powe v. U.S., 109 F.2d. 147, 149 (1940) .....	178, 189
Quaring v. Peterson, 728 F.2d. 1121 .....	67
Railroad Retirement Board v. Alton Railroad Co., 295 U.S. 330 .....	156, 230
Redfield v. Fisher, 292 P 813, pg 819 (1930).....	89
Regal Drug Co v. Wardell, 260 U.S. 386.....	89, 209
Roberts v. Roberts (1947), 81 C.A.2d. 871 .....	184
Rock Island County v. United States, 4 Wall. (US) 435, 18 LEd,419.....	162
Roe v. Wade (93 S.Ct. 705).....	321
Rundle v. Delaware & Raritan Canal 55 U.S. 80 at page 98.....	71
Rundle v. Delaware 55 U.S. 80 at page 101.....	137
Rundle v. The Delaware And Raritan Canal Company, 55 U.S. 80.....	71
Rykers v. Alford, 832 F.2d. 895.....	233
Schwing v. United States, 165 F.2d. 518.....	214
Seaworth v. Pearson, 203 F.3d. 1056 .....	225
Shaffer v. Carter, 252 U.S. 37, at pages 78-79 .....	178
Shapiro v. Thompson, 394 U.S. 618 .....	90
Sherar v. Cullen, 481 F.2d. 946 (1973) .....	90
Sims v. Ahrens, 271 S.W. 720 (1925).....	351
Slaughter-House Cases, 83 U.S. 36 (1873) .....	175, 187, 190, 237
Snider v. Newellm, 44 S.E. 354 .....	328
Sparf & Hansen v. U.S., 156 U.S. 51 at page 119 (1895) .....	318
Spooner v. McConnell, 22 F. 939, 943.....	315
Spreckels Sugar Ref. Co. v. Mclain, 24 S.Ct. 382 (1904) .....	89, 209, 224
Spring Valley Water Works v. Barber, 33 P. 735 .....	88
Springfield v. Kenny, 104 N.E.2d. 65 .....	239
Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co., 240 U.S. 103.....	168
Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co., 240 U.S. 103 (1915) .....	243
State Tax Commission of Utah v. Aldrich, 316 U.S. 174, 187.....	71
State v. Manuel, 20 N.C. 122 .....	178

Stenberg v. Carhart, 530 U.S. 914 (2000) .....	181
Steward Machine Co. v. Davis, 301 U.S. 548 .....	152
Sutton v. Providence, U.S. Court of Appeals, Ninth Circuit, Case Number 99-55050 .....	166
Tashiro v. Jordan, 256 P. 545 .....	189, 245
The People v. Herkimer, 4 Cowen (NY) 345, 348 (1825) .....	175
Torcaso v. Maryland, 367 U.S. 488.....	57
Torcaso v. Watkins, 367 U.S. 488 (1961) .....	54
Trezevant v. Tampa, 741 F.2d. 336.....	210
Twining v. New Jersey, 211 U.S. 78, in 1908 .....	178
U.S. v Dougherty, 473 F.2d. 1113, 1139.....	318
U.S. v. Anthony, 24 Fed. 829 (1873) .....	178
U.S. v. Batchelder, 442 U.S. 114.....	162
U.S. v. Cooper, 312 U.S. 600,604, 61 S.Ct. 742 (1941).....	316
U.S. v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542 .....	135, 178, 179, 190, 250
U.S. v. Fox, 94 U.S. 315.....	316
U.S. v. General Motors Corporation, D.C. Ill, 2 F.R.D. 528, 530.....	317
U.S. v. Guest, 383 U.S. 745 .....	236
U.S. v. Johnson, 76 F.Supp. 538 .....	351
U.S. v. Kozminski, 487 U.S. 931 .....	229, 233
U.S. v. Kuhn, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp. 407, 414 .....	156, 238
U.S. v. Lee (455 U.S. 252) .....	37, 148, 156, 185, 206, 307
U.S. v. Moylan 417 F.2d. 1002 at page 1006 .....	319
U.S. v. Rhodes, 27 Federal Cases 785, 794.....	178
U.S. v. Rosenthal, 121 Fed. 862.....	233, 350
U.S. v. Spear (1949) 338 U.S. 217 .....	326
U.S. v. Stewart, 234 F.Supp. 94 (1964).....	208, 354
U.S. v. Sullivan, 274 U.S. 259 .....	245
U.S. v. Tallmadge, 829 F.2d. 767.....	208, 314
U.S. v. Troescher, No. 95-55609. D.C. No. CV93-5736SVW .....	245
U.S. v. United Mine Workers of America, 330 U.S. 258 , 67 S.Ct. 677 (1947).....	316
U.S. v. Wheeler, 254 U.S. 281, 293 .....	236
Ullmann v. United States, 350 U.S. 422 (1956).....	54
Urtetiqui v. D'Arcy, 34 U.S. 692 .....	179
US Supreme Court in Julliard v. Greenman: 110 U.S. 421 .....	316
West Virginia State Board of Education v. Barnette, 319 U.S. 624 .....	55
Western Union Telegraph Co. v. Lenroot, 323 U.S. 490, 502 (1945).....	181
Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox, 298 U.S. 193 .....	239
Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox, 298 U.S. 193 (56 S.Ct. 773).....	326
Wilby v. Mississippi, 47 S. 465.....	88
Wilson v. Omaha Indian Tribe 442 U.S. 653, 667 (1979).....	316
Wisconsin v. Yoder, 406 U.S. 205 .....	126
Wolman v. U.S., 501 F.Supp. 310 and 542 F.Supp. 84.....	332
Wynehamer v. NY, 13 N.Y. 378, 481 .....	100
Yeager v. Hackensack, 615 F.Supp.1087.....	331
Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356, page 370 .....	316

### Other Authorities

"The Anti-Shyster" magazine 214-418-8993 .....	356
"The Social Security Swindle: How anyone can drop out" by Irwin Schiff. Freedom Books, Hamden, CT. ISBN 0-930374-05-3.....	356
"Braveheart" William Wallace.....	48, 74
"Dual Citizenship: The Christian's Responsibility in Secular Government" by Patrick Matrisciana. Published by Jeremiah Books.....	356
"Legal Status of OASI Benefits", November 27, 1953 .....	152
1 Bl. Comm. 134 .....	86, 188, 236

11 Am Jur, Constitutional Law, section 329, page 1135..... 87

2A N. Singer, Sutherland on Statutes and Statutory Construction §47.07, p. 152, and n. 10 (5th ed. 1992) ..... 181

34 AmJur, Mandamus, section 72 ..... 162

75 Congressional Record 12595 – 12603..... 347

A New Mind! ..... 299

Alexander Hamilton ..... 235, 341

American Law and Procedure, Vol 13, page 137, 162, (1910) ..... 315

Amish ..... 74

Apotheos of George Washington ..... 47, 80

Art in the United States Capitol, U.S. Government Printing Office, House Document Number 94-660 ..... 122, 138

Bancroft's Transcripts, Hartley's Negotiations, II, 53, 57, NYPL On August 21, 1783 ..... 254

Ben Franklin..... 134, 254

Benjamin Franklin..... 59, 254

Biography of Flavius Josephus paragraph 23 footnote..... 85

Black's Law Dictionary Seventh edition..... 264

Black's Law Dictionary, First Edition (published in 1891 long after the 13th Amendment) ..... 235

Blackstone's Commentary on the Law ..... 36

Briscoe v. Lahue, No. 81-1404..... 352

British-American Diplomacy Treaty of Paris - Hunter Miller's Notes ..... 254

Busser v. Snyder, 37 ALR 1515 ..... 96, 155

Carroll Quigley's 1964 book Tragedy and Hope, p. 950 ..... 257

Communist Manifesto in 1848 ..... 195

Congressional Record – House, March 17, 1993 Volume 33, on page H1303 ..... 101

Constitutional Law Relative to Credit, Currency and Banking (1843), section 16 ..... 73

Daniel Garcia..... 235

Daniel Webster ..... 341

David Terry CHIEF justice of the California Supreme Court ..... 72

Department of Homeland Security Employer Bulletin 102..... 219, 312

DMM 122.32 ..... 332

Domestic Mail regulation DMM 951.142 ..... 328

E W Bullinger..... 141

Edward Jenks The Book of English Law 118-119, P.B. Fairest editor, 6th edition 1967 ..... 71

Elliot's Debates On The Adoption Of The Constitution quotes (Vol 3, page 579)..... 318

Emperor Justinian..... 298

Executive Order 10422..... 345

Form 2678 ..... 164

Gospel Ministry Publications, P.O. Box 9411, Boise Idaho 83707..... 57

Guardians of the Grail by J.R. Church (ISBN 0-941241-02-5, Prophecy Publications) ..... 264

Head of the Harvard Law School, Alan Dershowitz ..... 233

HOLY ALLIANCE of May 15, 1213 A.D..... 252

I-9 form ..... 235

I-9 Form Employer's Bulletin 102 ..... 219

Internal Revenue Manual 3(27)(68)4.3 ..... 221

IRS Form 3949A ..... 207

IRS Pub 1586 ..... 222

Jesuit Francisco Ribera..... 289

John Adams ..... 254, 341

John Adams, 1815 ..... 322

John Lilburn ..... 48, 74

John Locke's First Treatise of Government ..... 76

John Locke's Second Treatise of Government Chapter 15 ..... 243

John Locke's Second Treatise of Government, paragraph 196 ..... 311

John Locke's Second Treatise of Government, published in 1690 ..... 83

King George ..... 237

King George III ..... 59, 76, 254, 272, 344

Law Enforcement Manual III page LEM 3(27)(68)0-42..... 221

Locke's Second Treatise paragraphs 135, 149, 171, 209 ..... 77

Luther's Works Vol 2 page 281 ..... 269



Luther’s Works Vol 2, page 281 ..... 270, 305  
 Martin Luther ..... 338  
 Plato, The Republic, book 8, section 565 ..... 95  
 Pope Alexander VI..... 252  
 Pope John Paul II..... 117  
 Presbyterian covenanters of 1638 to 1688..... 75  
 President Adams ..... 259  
 President Cleveland's June 21, 1886 veto of military pensions ..... 154  
 President Franklin Pierce in 1854..... 154  
 President Grover Cleveland..... 154  
 President James Madison ..... 154  
 President Jefferson, concluding his first inaugural address, March 4, 1801..... 89  
 President Lincoln 8/26/1863 ..... 180  
 Prince Charles ..... 118  
 Professor John Wu of Auburn University ..... 138  
 Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Roscoe Pound, Second Edition, 1925, p 543 ..... 169  
 Republic v. Democracy, by Gregory Williams, PO Box 10, Summer Lake, Oregon..... 325  
 Revenue Ruling 85-61, 1985-1 CB355 ..... 166  
 Senate Document 103-6 ..... 91  
 Senate Document No. 43, 73rd Congress 1st Session, quoting Brown v. Welch..... 100  
 Senate Report No. 93-549 (page 187 and 594) ..... 347  
 SOCIAL SECURITY, Government and Commercial Use of the Social Security Number Is Widespread” Report  
     GAO/HEHS-99-28 ..... 165  
 SS-8 ..... 205  
 SSA Form 521 ..... 205  
 SSA Publication No. 05-10002 ..... 165  
 Supreme Court Justice Samuel Miller ..... 240  
 The Coming Battle by Martin W. Walbert, published in 1899..... 240  
 The Communist Manifesto..... 129  
 The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire ..... 336  
 The Elements of Jurisprudence pages 350-351 by Thomas E. Holland 13th edition 1924 ..... 71  
 The History of American Constitutional or Common Law, ISBN 1-57282-010-1, The Message Company, Santa Fe, New  
     Mexico, 1-505-474-0998 ..... 325  
 The Miracle on Main Street by F. Tupper Saussy ISBN: 0-911805-00-1 ..... 332  
 Thomas Jefferson ..... 341  
 Thomas Jefferson’s inscription on his ring..... 80  
 Treaty of Paris ..... 237  
 U.S. Legislative History of Public Law 103-465, House Report No. 103-826(1) page 196 ..... 263  
 U.S. v. Carl Beery, Case A87-43CR Vol. III transcript ..... 317  
 UN Convention on the Rights of the Child ..... 348  
 University of Michigan’s collection called The Making of America ..... 325  
 US Supreme Court Justice Joseph Story ..... 342  
 W-4 Form ..... 167, 206  
 W-4 form “Employee’s Withholding Certificate” ..... 221  
 War, Central Planning, and Corporations by Eugene Schroder ..... 260  
 Webster’s 1913 Unabridged Dictionary ..... 110  
 West’s Constitutional law, key 84, 90, 91 ..... 52  
 William Blackstone ..... 81

**Scriptures**

1 Corinthians 14:22 (KJV) ..... 102  
 1 Corinthians 14:33 ..... 289  
 1 Corinthians 15:52 ..... 280, 293  
 1 Corinthians 6:10 ..... 116  
 1 Corinthians 6:12 ..... 81, 309, 313

1 Corinthians 6:19-20 KJV.....	305
1 Corinthians 6:2-3.....	116
1 Corinthians. 14:22.....	134
1 Corinthians. 3:16 and 6:19.....	305
1 John 4:1.....	306
1 John 5:13.....	63
1 Kings 12:4.....	143
1 Kings 4:27.....	142
1 Peter 2:4-5.....	305
1 Peter 3:18.....	113
1 Peter 4:17.....	116
1 Peter 4:18.....	200
1 Sam 12:17b.....	110
1 Sam 15:29.....	297
1 Sam 17:4-7.....	145
1 Samuel 8:5-17.....	97, 144
1 Thessalonians 1:10.....	293
1 Thessalonians 4:15-16.....	286
1 Thessalonians 4:16-17.....	292
1 Thessalonians 4:17.....	280, 286
1 Thessalonians 5:3.....	280, 282
1 Thessalonians 5:4.....	133
1st Peter 2:9.....	179
1st Thessalonians 4:14&15.....	291
1st Thessalonians 4:16-18.....	272, 281
1st Chronicles 21:26.....	129
1st Cor 4:5.....	352
1st Cor 6:7.....	180
1st Corinthians 15:52.....	272, 281
1st Corinthians 3:16-17,6:19.....	302
1st Corinthians 4:11 (NIV).....	194
1st Corinthians 4:3 (NIV).....	319
1st Corinthians 6:10.....	116
1st Corinthians 6:12.....	83
1st Corinthians 6:5-7.....	352
1st Corinthians 6:7.....	106
1st Corinthians 6:7: (NIV).....	352
1st Corinthians 6:9.....	329
1st Corinthians 7:21 (NIV).....	202
1st Corinthians 8:9.....	77
1st John 2.....	203
1st John 2:3-5, & 3:22-24 & 5:2-3.....	204, 297
1st John 3:8.....	42
1st John 4:2-6 (KJV).....	342
1st John 4:3.....	270, 289
1st Kings 10:14.....	142
1st Peter 2.....	344
1st Peter 2:13-16 (KJV).....	309
1st Peter 2:13-4.....	310
1st Peter 2:18.....	244, 250
1st Peter 2:19-20.....	246
1st Peter 3:22.....	338
1st Peter 4:12-16.....	246
1st Peter 4:18.....	116
1st Sam 12:12.....	324
1st Samuel 12: 17.....	76
1st Samuel 12:14.....	204, 297
1st Samuel 15:24.....	95, 322

1st Samuel 15:29 .....	333
1st Samuel 17 .....	287
1st Samuel 8:18 (NIV) .....	266
1st Samuel 8:18 (NKJV) .....	144
1st Samuel 8:5-19.....	324
1st Samuel 8:7 .....	83
1st Thess 5:9.....	272
1st Thessalonians 2:9 (NIV).....	194
1st Thessalonians 4:11-12 .....	194, 242
1st Thessalonians 4:12 (NIV).....	197
1st Thessalonians 4:16.....	286
1st Thessalonians 4:17.....	296
1st Thessalonians 5:20-21 .....	102
1st Thessalonians 5:9 .....	281
1st Tim 6:13 .....	352
1st Timothy 1:9 .....	78
1st Timothy 4:1 .....	42
1st Timothy 5:20 .....	224
1st Timothy 5:8 .....	152
2 Chronicles 8:8 .....	142
2 Corinthians 1:3-11 .....	246
2 Corinthians 6:16 .....	305
2 Peter 2:1 .....	306
2 Peter 2:3 .....	101
2 Peter 2:3 (KJV).....	328
2 Thessalonians 2:11 .....	32
2 Thessalonians 2 .....	286
2 Thessalonians 2:1-4.....	305
2 Thessalonians 2:3 .....	292
2 Thessalonians 2:9.....	134, 287, 303
2nd Chronicles 7:1 .....	129
2nd Chronicles 9:13 .....	142
2nd Cor 4:4.....	202
2nd Cor 6:17.....	180
2nd Corinthians 11:14 .....	246
2nd Corinthians 11:23 .....	310
2nd Corinthians 11:32.....	310
2nd Corinthians 11:9 (NIV) .....	194
2nd Corinthians 4:4&6.....	109, 129
2nd Corinthians 6:16 .....	302
2nd Corinthians 7:2 (NIV) .....	194
2nd Corinthians 9:8.....	196
2nd Kings 1:10&12.....	129
2nd Peter 2:19 (NIV).....	352
2nd Peter 2:2 .....	42, 195
2nd Peter 2:3 (KJV).....	62, 265
2nd Sam 21:9.....	321
2nd Samuel 1:18.....	216
2nd Samuel 23:3 (King James Version).....	352
2nd Thessalonians 2 .....	271
2nd Thessalonians 2:11 .....	74, 198, 289
2nd Thessalonians 2:8 .....	303
2nd Thessalonians 2:9-10.....	151
2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14.....	37, 97, 150, 160, 167, 183, 193, 244
2ND Thessalonians 3:6-14 .....	154
2nd Thessalonians chapter 2.....	115, 141
2nd Tim 2:19 .....	180
2nd Timothy 2:15 .....	33

2nd Timothy 2:3-15.....	246
2nd Timothy 3:1.....	354
2nd Timothy 3:12&13 (KJV).....	333
Acts 1:11.....	292
Acts 12:19.....	113
Acts 13:6.....	306
Acts 14:22.....	194, 201, 338
Acts 14:22 (NIV).....	194
Acts 14:3.....	135
Acts 17:11.....	203, 297
Acts 17:29.....	70, 121
Acts 17:7 (NIV).....	337
Acts 18:6.....	91
Acts 19:16.....	280
Acts 2:1-3.....	128
Acts 2:18-20.....	131
Acts 2:20.....	277
Acts 2:21.....	63, 201
Acts 2:33.....	338
Acts 2:43, 4:30, 5:12.....	135
Acts 22:27,29.....	323
Acts 22:29.....	100, 176, 351
Acts 22:6.....	109, 129
Acts 23:10.....	292
Acts 26:10.....	113, 180
Acts 26:13.....	109, 129
Acts 4:12.....	65
Acts 4:25.....	42
Acts 5:29.....	76, 77, 83, 244, 308, 310
Acts 5:29 KJV.....	45
Acts 7:19.....	321, 331
Acts 7:55 & 56.....	338
Acts 8:39.....	292
Acts 16:27.....	280
Baldwin v. Franks 7 S.Ct. 656, 662; 120 U.S. 678, 690.....	326
Book of Jasher.....	216
Colossians 1:13-14.....	151, 202
Colossians 2:20 (KJV).....	176
Colossians 2:8 (KJV).....	116
Colossians 2:8 (NIV).....	94, 241
Colossians 3:1.....	338
Colossians 3:22.....	244, 250
Colossians 3:4.....	292
Corinthians 15:50.....	292
Corinthians 7:23.....	330
Dan 12:7.....	56
Dan 2:20-22.....	337
Dan 4:32.....	337
Dan 7:12.....	59, 247
Daniel 11.....	288, 304
Daniel 11:31.....	282, 304
Daniel 11:32.....	133
Daniel 11:33.....	107, 202
Daniel 11:36 (KJV).....	305
Daniel 11:38.....	282
Daniel 11:39.....	282
Daniel 12.....	272
Daniel 12:1.....	282

Daniel 12:10.....	293
Daniel 12:11.....	282, 304
Daniel 12:2.....	279
Daniel 12:4, 9 &13.....	301
Daniel 12:7.....	43, 124
Daniel 2:35,44,45.....	282
Daniel 2:40.....	59, 105, 298
Daniel 6:24.....	312
Daniel 7.....	59
Daniel 7:12.....	59, 105, 117
Daniel 7:12&23.....	105
Daniel 7:19.....	59, 117
Daniel 7:21.....	60
Daniel 7:23.....	35, 59, 104, 112, 114, 117, 286
Daniel 7:25.....	298
Daniel 7:3.....	117
Daniel 7:4.....	260
Daniel 8:13.....	300
Daniel 9:24.....	297, 300
Daniel 9:25.....	300
Daniel 9:26.....	300
Daniel 9:27.....	269, 300
Daniel 9:27 (NIV).....	305
Deut 23:19-20.....	332
Deuteronomy 11:18.....	100, 176
Deuteronomy 6:8.....	100, 176
Deuteronomy 11:18.....	131
Deuteronomy 1:17 (KJV).....	339
Deuteronomy 11.....	62, 125
Deuteronomy 11:16-23 (KJV).....	125
Deuteronomy 23:2.....	116, 329
Deuteronomy 29:29 (KJV).....	102
Deuteronomy 32:40.....	43
Deuteronomy 4:2.....	83, 334
Deuteronomy 4:30, 31 (KJV).....	129
Deuteronomy 4:33 (NKJV).....	129
Deuteronomy 4:34 (NKJV).....	129
Deuteronomy 6:6-9.....	62
Deuteronomy 6:6-9 (KJV).....	125
Deuteronomy 8:19-20.....	274
Deuteronomy 9:10.....	84, 204, 242, 297
Ecclesiastes 12:13.....	354
Elijah.....	130
Eph 2:19.....	180
Ephesians 1:13-14 (KJV).....	271
Ephesians 2:1&2 (NKJV).....	136
Ephesians 2:16.....	113
Ephesians 2:19.....	227, 338
Ephesians 2:19-22.....	305
Ephesians 4:14-15 (KJV).....	176
Ephesians 4:28 (NIV).....	194
Ephesians 6:12.....	153
Ephesians 6:17.....	107, 131, 303
Ephesians 6:5.....	244, 250
ernment? S.....	58, 76, 77, 81, 83, 95, 180, 308, 310, 311, 316, 344
Esau.....	48, 75, 96, 99, 160, 164, 179, 196, 246, 251, 328
Ex 22:25.....	332
Ex 31:18.....	204, 242, 297

Exodus 12.....	125, 131, 281, 292
Exodus 13:15-16 .....	62
Exodus 13:15-16 (KJV).....	125
Exodus 13:8-9 .....	62
Exodus 13:8-9 (KJV) .....	125
Exodus 14:24.....	133
Exodus 18:20-23 (NIV).....	339
Exodus 20:15.....	242
Exodus 20:4.....	70
Exodus 22:6 ff. ....	43
Exodus 23:24-33 .....	246
Exodus 23:32.....	39
Exodus 23:7.....	310
Exodus 28:36-38 .....	126
Exodus 3:2-6, 13:21-22, 19:18, 40:38.....	128
Exodus 31:18.....	84
Exodus 32:24.....	112
Exodus 6:8.....	43
Exodus 9:23.....	129
Eze 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15.....	320
Ezek 17:18.....	56
Ezek 24:21 .....	300
Ezek 36:7.....	56
Ezek 7:24.....	300
Ezekiel 14: 4.....	198
Ezekiel 14:12-23 .....	339
Ezekiel 14:13.....	257
Ezekiel 14:21-22 (KJV).....	307
Ezekiel 14:4.....	32, 74
Ezekiel 14:7.....	307
Ezekiel 14:7-22 .....	307
Ezekiel 17:22.....	282
Ezekiel 18:13.....	214, 332
Ezekiel 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15.....	132, 151, 266
Ezekiel 28:14.....	94
Ezekiel 28:15.....	94
Ezekiel 28:16.....	94
Ezekiel 28:17.....	94
Ezekiel 28:18.....	94
Ezekiel 3:18-21 .....	224
Ezekiel 33:29.....	300
Ezekiel 36:26-27 .....	305
Ezekiel 4:6.....	106, 270, 277, 289, 297
Ezekiel 6&7.....	266
Ezekiel 7:3-25 (NIV).....	266
Ezekiel 9:4.....	126
Ezekiel 9:4-6 .....	281
Ezra 2:13 .....	144
First Commandment.....	47, 80, 150, 324
First Corinthians 6:9.....	329
Gal 6:17.....	142
Galatians 1:10.....	330
Galatians 5:1 (NIV).....	85, 331
Galatians 5:12.....	224
Galatians 6:17.....	120
Gen 9:6.....	337
Genesis 1:28 .....	136
Genesis 14:22 .....	43, 56, 124

Genesis 15:17 .....	128
Genesis 19:24 .....	129
Genesis 25:33 .....	48, 75, 99, 164
Genesis 3:19 .....	39
Genesis 4:10 .....	321
Genesis 47:20-24 .....	101
Genesis 47:24 .....	138
Habakkuk 1 .....	266
Heb 11:16 .....	180
Heb 13:8 .....	297
Heb 6:17-18 .....	297
Hebrews 1:3 .....	109, 129
Hebrews 10:12 .....	338
Hebrews 11:14 & 16 .....	338
Hebrews 12 .....	246
Hebrews 12:16 .....	179
Hebrews 12:28-29 .....	128
Hebrews 13:10 .....	77, 83
Hebrews 13:17 (KJV) .....	309
Hebrews 13:8 .....	333
Hebrews 2:3 .....	280
Hebrews 4:12 .....	107, 131, 303
Hebrews 4:16 (KJV) .....	203
Hebrews 6:13,16 .....	92
Hebrews 6:16 .....	43, 56, 57, 66, 74, 107, 112, 196, 198, 209, 244, 353
Hebrews 6:17-18 .....	333
Hosea 4:6 .....	354
I Sam 12:17 .....	324
I Sam 12:17b .....	339
I Samuel 12:17 .....	95
Isa 33:22 .....	234
Isa 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3 .....	320
Isaiah 10:1 .....	354
Isaiah 13:19 .....	295
Isaiah 13:9 .....	295
Isaiah 14:14 .....	80
Isaiah 14:17 .....	42
Isaiah 2:2 .....	282
Isaiah 26:20-21 .....	281
Isaiah 28:(NIV) .....	267
Isaiah 33:22 .....	322, 323, 344
Isaiah 40:21 .....	102
Isaiah 50:1 (KJV) .....	162
Isaiah 53:7 .....	352
Isaiah 58 .....	266
Isaiah 58:1 .....	354
Isaiah 59:12-15 (NKJV) .....	266
Isaiah 59:15 .....	310
Isaiah 66:4 .....	32
Isaiah 8:16 .....	62
Isaiah 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3 .....	132, 151, 266
James 1:25,27 .....	197
James 2:25 .....	308
James 4:12 .....	151, 234, 322, 323, 344
James 5:12 .....	32, 44, 56, 57, 70, 107, 113, 196, 198, 209, 244, 312
Jer 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10 .....	320
Jeremiah 15:4 .....	266
Jeremiah 17:3 & 31:23 & 51:24-25 .....	282

Jeremiah 22:3 .....	337
Jeremiah 30:7 .....	282
Jeremiah 31:31 .....	300
Jeremiah 31:31-34 .....	305
Jeremiah 34:17 (KJV) .....	267
Jeremiah 44:22 .....	300
Jeremiah 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10.....	132, 151, 266
Jeremiah 7:6 .....	321
Job 1:16 .....	129
Joel 1:6 .....	132
Joel 2:30-32 .....	277
John 1:42 .....	330
John 10 .....	344
John 10:39 .....	313
John 13:8 .....	124
John 14:15 & 15:10.....	204, 297
John 14:29 .....	102
John 14:3 .....	291, 292
John 15:19-20.....	324
John 15:20 .....	241, 244, 329
John 16:33 .....	272, 275, 354
John 17:11-15.....	324
John 18:36 .....	39, 338
John 19:11 .....	337
John 2:19 .....	305
John 4:22 .....	281
John 8:40-44.....	116
John 8:44 .....	352
John. 14:29, 16:4 .....	102
Josh 24:15.....	94, 324
Joshua 10:13.....	216
Joshua 24:15.....	80
Jude 23 .....	292
Judges 10:14 (KJV).....	198
King David .....	202
Lamentations 5:8 (KJV) .....	317
Lev 26:31 .....	300
Leviticus 18.....	321
Leviticus 23:24.....	281
Leviticus 24:22 (NIV) .....	339
Leviticus 5:23 .....	43
Leviticus. 1:2.....	143
Luke 1:15 KJV .....	330
Luke 10:27 .....	58
Luke 10:7 .....	212
Luke 11:16,29.....	134
Luke 11:20-23 .....	42
Luke 11:23 .....	196, 338
Luke 11:29-30 .....	134
Luke 11:35 .....	289
Luke 11:46 .....	225, 354
Luke 11:52 .....	84, 224, 352
Luke 11:52 (KJV).....	84
Luke 12:49 .....	129, 130
Luke 12:5 .....	32, 200
Luke 12:58 .....	310, 313, 352
Luke 13:23-24 (KJV) .....	201
Luke 16:13 .....	197, 244



Luke 16:16 .....	337
Luke 17:26 (NKJV).....	294
Luke 17:26-27 .....	294
Luke 17:27 .....	294, 295
Luke 17:28 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:29 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:29-30 (KJV) .....	279
Luke 17:30 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:31 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:32 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:33 .....	34
Luke 17:33 (NKJV).....	295
Luke 17:34 (NKJV).....	296
Luke 17:35 (NKJV).....	296
Luke 17:36 (NKJV).....	296
Luke 17:37 .....	295, 296
Luke 18:26 .....	201
Luke 19:26 (NIV).....	194
Luke 19:41 .....	275
Luke 2:9 .....	109, 129
Luke 21.....	275
Luke 21: 28 .....	279
Luke 21:11-12 .....	275
Luke 21:12 .....	65, 287
Luke 21:12-15 .....	275, 287
Luke 21:16 .....	113, 275, 287, 347
Luke 21:17-19 .....	275
Luke 21:20-23 .....	276
Luke 21:24 .....	277
Luke 21:25-26 .....	277
Luke 21:26 .....	278
Luke 21:27 .....	278, 292
Luke 21:28 .....	291
Luke 21:29-31 .....	280
Luke 21:31 .....	84
Luke 21:36 .....	131, 275, 287, 356
Luke 21:8 .....	275
Luke 21:9,10 .....	275
Luke 22.....	338
Luke 22:25 .....	38, 40, 41, 45, 106, 150, 153, 154, 167, 174, 183, 193, 198, 217, 239, 312, 334, 338
Luke 22:26 (NIV).....	150
Luke 22:29 .....	338
Luke 22:46 .....	287
Luke 23:32 .....	113
Luke 3:14 .....	85
Luke 3:16 .....	128
Luke 4:7 .....	36
Luke 6:26 .....	306
Luke 6:30 .....	313, 352
Luke 6:37 .....	352
Luke 6:46 .....	32, 80, 200, 202
Luke 9:50 .....	338
Mal 3:6.....	297
Malachi 1:3.....	48, 75
Malachi 3:6.....	333
Malachi 4:5.....	277
Malachi 4:5 (KJV).....	130
Mark 1:15 .....	84, 337

Mark 10:26.....	201
Mark 10:42.....	106, 193, 239, 312
Mark 11:24.....	162
Mark 12:16.....	110
Mark 12:30.....	58
Mark 13.....	275, 288
Mark 13:10.....	276
Mark 13:12.....	113, 275, 287
Mark 13:13.....	34, 147, 200, 202, 272, 275
Mark 13:14.....	273, 276, 301, 304
Mark 13:18.....	330
Mark 13:19.....	282
Mark 13:22.....	33, 134, 306
Mark 13:24,25.....	277
Mark 13:24-27.....	289, 293
Mark 13:26.....	278
Mark 13:27.....	280, 291
Mark 13:32.....	281
Mark 13:6.....	275
Mark 13:7,8.....	275
Mark 13:8.....	275
Mark 13:9, 13.....	65, 287
Mark 13:9,11.....	275, 287
Mark 14:61.....	352
Mark 14:62.....	292
Mark 16:17.....	42
Mark 16:20.....	135
Mark 3:29.....	151
Mark 7:11-13.....	143
Mark 7:11-13.....	106, 142
Mark 7:13 (NKJV).....	116
Mark 7:7.....	116
Mark 7:9.....	298
Mark 7:9 (KJV).....	116
Mark 7:9-13.....	152
Mark 9:40.....	338
Matt 10:21.....	113
Matt 10:22.....	34, 200, 202, 272
Matt 10:24.....	241, 244, 329
Matt 10:34.....	107
Matt 11:12 (NIV).....	337
Matt 12:30.....	196, 338
Matt 12:31.....	151
Matt 12:39.....	134
Matt 16:4.....	134
Matt 17:20.....	282
Matt 19:25.....	201
Matt 20:25.....	106, 193, 239, 312
Matt 23:13.....	338, 352
Matt 24:13.....	34, 200, 202, 272
Matt 24:21.....	276
Matt 24:27.....	281
Matt 24:29-31.....	272, 279
Matt 24:34.....	279
Matt 24:39.....	279
Matt 24:43.....	282
Matt 28:20.....	272, 338
Matt 28:4.....	113

Matt 4:17 and 10:7 .....	337
Matt 4:9 .....	36
Matt 5:25 .....	180, 352
Matt 6:10 .....	338
Matt 6:24 .....	197, 244
Matt 7:1-2 .....	352
Matt 7:13-14 .....	202
Matthew 10:28 .....	200
Matthew 11:12 .....	292
Matthew 12:28-30 .....	42
Matthew 12:41 .....	200
Matthew 13:30 .....	201
Matthew 13:7 .....	201
Matthew 15:9 .....	116
Matthew 16:19 .....	91, 338
Matthew 16:27 .....	291
Matthew 17:25 .....	217, 227
Matthew 18:18 .....	91, 95
Matthew 19:17 .....	200, 204, 297
Matthew 19:25,27 (KJV) .....	201
Matthew 22:14 (KJV) .....	201
Matthew 22:37 .....	58
Matthew 23 .....	32, 42, 76, 83, 204, 224, 289, 292
Matthew 23:15 .....	32, 42, 76, 83, 204, 289, 292
Matthew 23:33 .....	224
Matthew 24 .....	275, 288
Matthew 24:10 .....	275
Matthew 24:11 .....	306
Matthew 24:11 or 24:24 .....	287
Matthew 24:11,12 .....	275
Matthew 24:13 .....	275
Matthew 24:14 .....	276
Matthew 24:15 .....	273, 276, 282, 304, 305
Matthew 24:20 .....	131, 203, 273
Matthew 24:21 .....	282
Matthew 24:23-27 .....	277
Matthew 24:24 .....	33, 151, 306
Matthew 24:27 (NKJV) .....	294
Matthew 24:28 (NKJV) .....	296
Matthew 24:29 .....	277
Matthew 24:29-31 .....	289, 293
Matthew 24:30 .....	278, 292
Matthew 24:31 .....	280, 291
Matthew 24:37 (NKJV) .....	294
Matthew 24:38 (NKJV) .....	294
Matthew 24:39 .....	295
Matthew 24:39 (NKJV) .....	294
Matthew 24:39(KJV) .....	294
Matthew 24:40 .....	295
Matthew 24:40 (NKJV) .....	296
Matthew 24:41 (NKJV) .....	296
Matthew 24:42 (KJV) .....	281
Matthew 24:42 (NKJV) .....	296
Matthew 24:43 (NKJV) .....	296
Matthew 24:44 .....	281, 296
Matthew 24:5 .....	275
Matthew 24:50 .....	281
Matthew 24:6,7 .....	275

Matthew 24:7,8.....	275
Matthew 24:9.....	65, 275, 287
Matthew 25:1-12 .....	288
Matthew 25:13.....	275, 281
Matthew 25:29-30 (KJV) .....	194
Matthew 25:30.....	281
Matthew 26:52.....	107
Matthew 27:6.....	143
Matthew 28:4.....	287
Matthew 3:11.....	128
Matthew 5:19.....	308
Matthew 5:25.....	310, 313
Matthew 5:33-34 .....	56
Matthew 5:34.....	32, 40, 44, 66, 70, 80, 198, 209, 312
Matthew 5:37.....	45, 99
Matthew 5:39.....	239
Matthew 6:25-34 .....	196
Matthew 7:14.....	200
Matthew 7:15.....	306
Matthew 7:21 (NIV).....	201
Matthew 7:22-23 (KJV) .....	201
Matthew 8:12 (KJV).....	201
Matthew. 15:5.....	143
Micah 5:6 .....	289
Nehemiah 7:18 .....	144
Nehemiah 9:12 & 19 .....	133
Num 23:19.....	297, 324
Numbers 14:14 .....	133
Numbers 14:30.....	43
Numbers 14:34.....	106, 270, 277, 289, 297
Numbers 15:16 (NIV) .....	339
Numbers 16:35 .....	130
Numbers 18:17 .....	129
Numbers 23:19 .....	333
Numbers 26:10 .....	130
Numbers 35:33 .....	321
Obadiah 1:15 .....	339
Phil 3:20 .....	180
Philippians 2:12.....	32
Philippians 2:12.....	200, 201
Philippians 3:20 (NIV) .....	179, 337
Philippians 4:19.....	162, 196
Prov 11:15 .....	324
Prov 17:18).....	324
Prov. 6:1, 11:15, 17:18 .....	264
Proverbs 1:10-19 .....	152
Proverbs 11:15.....	157, 193
Proverbs 12:24.....	171
Proverbs 13:4 (NIV).....	194
Proverbs 17:18.....	101, 157, 193
Proverbs 18:13.....	33
Proverbs 20:4 (KJV).....	194
Proverbs 21:25 (KJV).....	194
Proverbs 21:6.....	159
Proverbs 22:26.....	101, 157
Proverbs 22:7.....	99, 100, 135, 169, 235, 332
Proverbs 23:1-3 .....	97
Proverbs 23:6.....	97

Proverbs 25:2.....	292
Proverbs 29:24.....	43
Proverbs 6:1-11 .....	157
Proverbs 7:1-3 (KJV) .....	126
Proverbs 7:2-3 .....	100, 176
Psalms 119:152.....	204, 297, 337
Psalms 22:28.....	339
Psalms 40:17, 118:8-9.....	196
Psalms 47:9.....	337
Psalms 74.....	266
Psalms 127:3 .....	321
Psalms 141:4 .....	97
Psalms 69:22 (KJV) .....	97
Rev 11:15, 18 .....	293
Rev 11:15,18 .....	279
Rev 11:18 .....	282
Rev 13:10 .....	149
Rev 13:11 .....	135
Rev 13:12 .....	131
Rev 13:17 .....	63, 114, 291
Rev 15:8 .....	132
Rev 17:15 .....	104
Rev 17:18 .....	42
Rev 18:10 .....	280
Rev 18:19 .....	280
Rev 3:10 .....	280
Rev 6:10 .....	132
Rev 6:17 .....	293
Rev 7:14 .....	281
Rev 8:3-4.....	132
Rev 9:16 .....	132, 288
Rev 9:4 .....	281
Rev. 13:16 .....	203
Rev. 14:9&11 .....	203
Revelation 14:11 .....	200
Revelation 1:18 .....	272
Revelation 10:7 .....	272
Revelation 11:15,18 .....	272
Revelation 12.....	105
Revelation 12:12 .....	36, 116
Revelation 12:14 .....	297
Revelation 12:17 .....	106, 115, 293
Revelation 12:4 .....	263
Revelation 12:9 .....	33, 106
Revelation 1359, 63, 68, 70, 71, 86, 87, 88, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 109, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 117, 118, 120, 123, 126, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 139, 141, 142, 144, 150, 151, 158, 197, 214, 247, 260, 263, 268, 269, 270, 273, 286, 287, 289, 290, 297, 303, 311, 313	
Revelation 13:10 and 14:12.....	112, 139
Revelation 13:11 .....	59, 68, 93, 306
Revelation 13:13 .....	109, 306
Revelation 13:14 .....	109, 151
Revelation 13:15 .....	90
Revelation 13:15 NKJV .....	68
Revelation 13:16,17 (KJV).....	139
Revelation 13:17 .....	63, 86, 140, 151
Revelation 13:17 (NIV).....	63
Revelation 13:18 .....	291
Revelation 13:18 (NIV).....	141

Revelation 13:7 .....	60
Revelation 13:9 .....	151
Revelation 14:10 .....	35, 196, 264
Revelation 14:11 .....	64, 116, 200
Revelation 14:12 .....	70, 113, 116, 198, 200, 203, 273, 289
Revelation 14:1-4 .....	281
Revelation 14:3 .....	202
Revelation 14:9 .....	70, 113, 198, 200, 203
Revelation 14:9-11 .....	70, 198, 200
Revelation 15:2 .....	35, 112, 113, 202
Revelation 16:13 .....	303, 306
Revelation 16:14 .....	271
Revelation 16:16 .....	132
Revelation 17:1 .....	117
Revelation 17:10 .....	272
Revelation 17:11 .....	272, 298
Revelation 17:12 .....	59, 104, 109, 118, 271, 286
Revelation 17:17 & 19:19 .....	35
Revelation 17:8-11 .....	271
Revelation 18:13 .....	158
Revelation 18:23 .....	273
Revelation 19.....	271
Revelation 19:11-13 .....	130
Revelation 19:20 .....	109, 151, 269, 287, 306
Revelation 2:26 .....	354
Revelation 20:10 .....	271, 287, 306
Revelation 20:3-4 .....	151
Revelation 20:4 .....	281, 286
Revelation 20:4 (KJV) .....	286
Revelation 20:4&5 (KJV) .....	292
Revelation 20:5 (KJV) .....	286
Revelation 21:23 .....	109, 129
Revelation 21:8 .....	34
Revelation 22:14 .....	77, 83
Revelation 3:10 and 12:14.....	281
Revelation 3:3 .....	282
Revelation 5:10 .....	338
Revelation 6 .....	277, 287
Revelation 6 and 7.....	281
Revelation 6:13 .....	287
Revelation 6:8 .....	288
Revelation 6:9 .....	286
Revelation 7 .....	64, 120, 125, 289
Revelation 7:2-3 (KJV) .....	126
Revelation 9:4 .....	281
Revelation chapter 12.....	105
Revelation chapter 13 Verses 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17 .....	128
Revelation Chapter 17 .....	272
Romans 1:16.....	281
Romans 1:18-32 .....	340
Romans 1:25.....	312
Romans 10:13.....	63, 201
Romans 10:9.....	201
Romans 11:9,10.....	97
Romans 12:2.....	180
Romans 13.....	95, 338, 344
Romans 13:1.....	82
Romans 13:1-3 .....	81

---

Romans 13:3-4 .....	168
Romans 13:7.....	99
Romans 14:10.....	352
Romans 14:4,10.....	352
Romans 2:1.....	352
Romans 2:7-8 .....	201
Romans 6:16.....	43, 45, 244, 251, 315
Romans 6:22.....	330
Romans 8:34.....	338
Romans 9:13.....	38, 48, 75
Romans 9:27.....	201
Saul.....	68, 334
Second Timothy 3:13 .....	151
Strong's H2254 .....	100
Thessalonians 4:16 .....	279
Titus 1:2 .....	333
Titus 2:9 .....	183, 244, 250
Titus 3:1 .....	309
Titus 3:1 (KJV).....	309
Titus1:2 .....	297
Zechariah 5:3.....	198
Zephaniah 1:18.....	130

## WARNINGS

### Warning:

The Messiah warned us in Matthew 23:15 that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twice-fold damned. It is up to you to discern for yourself whether or not you are being deceived. It is your duty to avoid deception. Satan's disciples lie.

### Warning:

The LORD himself will send you strong delusion in proportion to the multitude of graven idols that you worship. 2 Thessalonians 2:11, Ezekiel 14:4 and Isaiah 66:4.

### Warning:

Our unchanging Heavenly Father is not going to change just because your church told you that a future antichrist will issue the mark of the beast.

### Warning:

Our unchanging Heavenly Father is not going to change just because your church told you that you should swear oaths to government, contrary to His Son's divine command in Matthew 5:34 **swear not at all**. Those who reject the Son will remain in God's wrath. John 3:36. James repeated Christ's warning and added "least ye fall into condemnation" James 5:12

### Warning:

Christians obey. IF the Messiah of the Bible is your lord then do the things which he says. If you do not the things which he says (Luke 6:46), then he is not your lord. Even the obedient saints were told to work out their salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12).

### Warning:

The Messiah warned you twice in Luke 12:5 to fear Him who has the power to cast you into hell. He told you to be faithful even unto death and you shall be given the crown of life. Revelation 2:10

### Warning:

The divine right of kings to rule was completely refuted long ago. Do not return to this vomit just because your church suggested that a counterfeit government be worshiped. A counterfeit government is not a genuine government. Those who have overthrown real government are NOT real government.

### Warning:

The Lord gave you a free will. He will not protect you from the abominations that you welcome into your society.



## FOREWORD

It is my Christian duty to warn those who have an ear to hear. Do not be lulled into waiting for a one-man world leader to issue an implant in your right hand. The final moments of world history are unfolding before us.

A Social Security Card has all the attributes of the mark. Extraordinary claims require extraordinary proof, so I will present ample proof for you to consider. I'm confident that these verifiable proofs will withstand scrutiny. If you don't want to believe the evidence, then prove it wrong. Don't simply deny. A denial disproves nothing. Your Bible instructs you to prove all things and hold fast to that which is good, (just after it tells you to despise not prophesyings). Don't dismiss my message until you've read my chapter *Answers to Skeptics*. Proverbs 18:13 "He that answereth a matter before he heareth it, it is folly and shame unto him."

Is it so difficult to believe that our greed, sloth, covetousness and avarice trapped us into a beast's snare, from which most will not escape? After all:

- The Lord has always used brutal pagans to bring into captivity his disobedient people: Nimrod, Pharaoh, Caesar, etc.
- You were warned to not have other gods before you. And your savior warned you "**take heed that no man deceive you**", "**take heed ... for they shall deliver you up to councils to be beaten**", "**take heed that the light within you be not darkness**", "**Take heed and beware of covetousness...**"
- Even the law of the land in America has the maxim "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt*.
- Socialism is not compatible with Christianity. Socialism must deny personal rights. Socialism will always run out of other people's money.
- Usury is still illegal. Thou shalt not lend upon usury. But you agreed to be the collateral for the national debt. Now unpayable.
- Earned (worked for) Pensions were unthinkable in 1886 because they "urge honest men to become dishonest" according to President Cleveland. But now we demand unearned benefits from the federal treasury. (and NO, we did not "pay into" Social Security. It is not insurance. There is no "trust fund")
- in all deceivableness of unrighteousness ... because they received not the love of the truth, ... **Those who are to perish shall receive strong delusion**, that they should believe lies, **that they might be damned** which believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. **BECAUSE THEY HAD PLEASURE IN UNRIGHTEOUSNESS**. Yes, our own greed, sloth, covetousness and avarice trapped us into a beast's snare.

This essay assumes the following:

- Satan is deceptive. Satan deceives the whole world Revelation 12:9.
- A counterfeit is a close imitation of something legitimate. Satan offers a counterfeit authority for you to obey. And indeed, Satan's counterfeit authority is a very close imitation to legitimate authority. To deceive, if possible, even the very elect (Matthew 24:24 and Mark 13:22).
- Satanic front groups have established a secular World Government, a Novus Ordo Seclorum. (The term "secular" means "without God" or without authority). As you will soon find out, this World Government is now masquerading as your government. (after your real government was overthrown.)
- Our Creator gave you a free will. You are allowed to sell your soul to the Devil. It's your choice. Obedience to counterfeit authority is mutiny against lawful authority.
- The Mark of the Beast is your final exam. "Study to show thyself approved unto God." (KJV 2nd Timothy 2:15) If you don't want to flunk, repent.

Disclaimer: I have not confirmed some of the cited references, especially those of early history. Please don't use anything until you are satisfied that the references do indeed confirm what I am passing along to you. I will correct any errors. Another disclaimer: If you want legal advice, consult your lawyer.

I don't claim to have any divine interpretation of scriptures. I merely rely upon history to show that prophecy finally has come true.

This is not a manual on how to survive without a mark. Those who refuse the mark will find it difficult, if not impossible in many cases, to sell their labor, buy housing or conduct business. But, you already knew this. You just didn't expect it so soon. You might end up jobless, homeless and without the means to survive without your Creator's direct intervention. Don't risk death avoiding the mark until you are well prepared for the consequences of your stand.

While He was speaking of the endtimes, The Messiah Himself said "Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it;" Luke 17:33. And, the cowardly shall have their place in the Lake of Fire. Revelation 21:8. This is the second death. Narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

For those of you who decide to take a stand, may the Holy Spirit comfort you in your persecution. He that endures to the end shall be saved (Matthew 10:22, Matthew 24:13, Mark 13:13).

Steven Dudley Miller, editor, [steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com](mailto:steve@mark-of-the-beast-study.com)

# 1 SECTION 1: INTRODUCTION

There is verifiable evidence that these Bible predictions have already become true: A second beast that came up out of the earth, while exercising the authority of the scarlet first beast who raised up out of the sea, upon whose heads is the name of blasphemy, has deceived you into worshiping (with a perjury oath signature) a substitute Lord to get a graven Mark, issued by a final world government (your Novus Ordo Seclorum), symbolically in your right hand and forehead, that must be used as a banking authorization number.

This seems so straightforward to me, that I don't dare dismiss the evidence. Could the other elements of this prophecy also be true? Let's take a closer look.

Throughout Bible prophecy, angels tell us that beasts symbolize kingdoms (governments), not kings. (Daniel 7:23, and in Revelation 17:17 & 19:19).

In Revelation 13, a second beast (the beast introduced in Revelation 13:11, not the first beast that is worshiped) issues the dreaded mark of the beast in verse 16. There is NO occurrence of the word *antichrist* anywhere in the book of Revelation.

Revelation 13:16 and 17 are one sentence. Verse 16 says the beast's intention is to causeth all to receive a mark. The King James Version of the Bible uses verbs with -eth endings, in this case causeth – to show continuous ongoing action. The beast's intent is to continue causing all to get a mark. Do you live in a time when

- Politicians write laws that expect everyone to have ID?
- Where State Driver Licenses and IDs must conform to all 18 benchmarks of the Real ID Act, including international biometric standards?
- Where persons are numbered, rather than just the birth documents ?
- Where a foreign treaty requires SSN registration at birth?

As the last item in the second beast's agenda, Revelation 13:16-17 foretells a scheme to trick mankind out of our unalienable right to contract -- our right to buy or sell. Somehow our contract for a mark will subrogate (replace) our free-will right to contract (buy and sell) with a beast granted right to choose for us. HINT: No state can impair a real right to contract. If you have a right to bankruptcy, then you do not have a right to contract.

Verse 17 reveals that the second beast's ulterior motive for issuing the mark is so that no man might buy or sell without one or more of three things: a mark OR a name OR a number of the beast.

Revelation 13:17 (King James Version):

*"And that no man **might** buy or sell, save he that had the mark, **or** the name of the beast, **or** the number of his name."*

There are significant rewards for those who avoid the Mark-Name-Number beast (government) system. Those who resist the mark AND NUMBER will be given "the Harps of God" according to Revelation 15:2. And avoid the wrath per Revelation 16:2. "And they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years" according to Revelation 20:4.

And again in Revelation 15:2 we notice that resisting the mark of the beast requires victory over an image and a number:

*"And I saw something like a sea of glass mingled with fire, and those who have the victory over the beast, over his image and over his mark and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having harps of God."*

There are also significant punishments associated with accepting this Mark. Those who receive the mark will "be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb" according to Revelation 14:10.

Why then, would anyone risk participating in this final Mark-Name-Number system? There is only one reason revealed: To qualify for buying and selling. NO OTHER REASON IS GIVEN. Not force, not threats, not religion, not war. We

***Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7***

*Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship*

<http://famguardian.org/>

know that deception is involved. And we can speculate from verse 15 that the mark is a possibly a continuing ongoing process to abolish those who refuse to worship the first beast. After all, Satan knows that Christians will soon judge angels (1 Corinthians 6:2-3), and he knows that he is running out of time (Revelation 12:12). Satan's legalists are in a final battle to disqualify all future judges. All he needs is for you to bow down to him (Matthew 4:9, Luke 4:7), just once, with an oath.

Did you submit to counterfeit authority? Can a signature be considered as worship?

Since the risk is so great, it would be prudent to carefully study anything remotely resembling this mark or name or number. Especially anything authorizing you to buy or to sell.

Since the risk is so great, a prudent person will not blindly accept speculation that the mark is a future event. Shouldn't a number that already authorizes most of your buying and selling be suspicious?

Are you living at a time in history when your unalienable right to contract (buy or sell) has been replaced by a beast - granted right to buy or sell which is granted to those who can show (give, Greek *didomi*) credentials or authority or a number?

In privacy lobbyist Aaron Bolinger's introduction to his model legislation to protect Religious Liberty:

*"What our leaders need to understand about overbearing demands for documents, etc. is that based on certain legitimate interpretations of sacred writings, there is a perceived threat that such "marks" or "numbers" coming from world "kingdoms" (beast = kingdom in bible prophecy) can deprive a person of their eternal salvation if they personally accept ("receive") these numbers or other state approved documents."*

In the history of your once-great nation, everyone was endowed by their Creator with an unalienable natural right to sell his or her own labor. But today, Millions of people need a work authorization number to sell their labor. This same number is also their banking authorization number to buy or sell in normal commerce. This same authorization number is required to obtain an ID card to buy many of the necessities of life.

For example, courts consider shelter to be a necessity of life. Do you still have a natural unalienable right to contract for your own housing at whatever price you can pay, or do you now need an authorization number (or credential obtained by a number) to buy this necessity of life?

Why do you need government medicinal authorization (a prescription from a government agent -- their licensed doctor) in order to buy what was once a considered an absolute inalienable right, a right to fight disease and pain -- A right equal to any other self-defense against bodily assaults? Or does your State now impair your right to take care of yourself? Everyone's right to contract with others to preserve his/her own health is an unalienable right, a "*natural liberty which is not required by the laws of society to be sacrificed to public convenience*". (According to Blackstone's Commentary on the Law. By the way, the Supreme Court considers Blackstone's Commentary as the received law-of-the-land as it existed when the original states wrote their constitutions.) Also according to this received law-of-the-land, the right to self medicate is as sacred as any other right to self-defense. Everyone is "*entitled by the same natural right to security from the corporal insults.*"

Three times in the Bible, angels tell us that prophetic beasts symbolize governments (it used the word "kingdoms"). Are government credentials now mandatory for what was once our natural unalienable right to travel, marry, raise children, cash a check, or even inherit property from our own family?

Could prophecy be unfolding before us? Is it too unbelievable to suggest that history has already advanced to the point where only people with Social Security Numbers (or equivalent numbers outside the U.S.) can have a government-granted -- instead of natural -- right to earn wages, to buy housing, medication, education and many necessities of life?

Your natural rights are no longer considered sacred. They are now considered worthless. Yet,

- your rights were once the foundation upon which governments were created. The [Declaration of Independence](#) states “that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, ... That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men...”
- At one time in the history of your once-great nation, our right to contract was so holy that “we the people” were able to contract together for – they used the religious term “ordain” – a Constitution and then delegate to our civil servants our Holy authority to execute criminals. Holy.
- Although your original government was instituted among men to secure your liberty, the new counterfeit “government” is denying your liberty.
- As we shall see, the right to contract is endowed by our Creator, and is indeed the foundation that authorizes government to exist.

But today, treaties with a final world government now deny unnumbered people their liberty. Ever since the inquisition there has been a long-term goal to excommunicate protestors. And now unnumbered “protestors” are indeed excommunicated from their Holy right to contract (buy or sell) for necessities of life.

We are living in a time where nearly everyone in the world has been assigned a number. Every nation that has a national debt is required by their multinational creditors to track taxpayers’ income. 173 of these nations participate in an international social security program. **Treaties with multinational authorities already require the U.S. government to issue social security numbers.** These numbers are now requested for most commercial transactions. Very few people are able to survive with just their God-given rights. Everyone else conducts banking, sells their labor, buys housing and other necessities-of-life with their Beast-granted rights. Your God-given right to contract – once considered as a protected *liberty* – protected from government interference – has been significantly restricted. Yes indeed, you **might** not buy or sell without a mark or number of a beast.

#### BIBLE BELIEVERS CANNOT QUALIFY FOR A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER

The Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), requires applicants for Social Security Numbers to be an “*applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*”

ONLY those who qualify for welfare can get a number. This is forbidden in the Christian Bible by 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14. Christians cannot associate with freeloaders. Not to mention falsifying federal documents and perjury and worship of socialism. And covetousness. And false swearing, fraud, deception and apostasy.

According to the Supreme Court, Social Security is not a trust fund nor insurance. There is not even a promise to pay benefits.

The Roosevelt socialists that passed the Social Security Act were well aware that federal welfare to individuals was unconstitutional (see my chapter on [Welfare part 2](#)) They were also well aware of a narrow construction of the definition of the word *indigent* that would make Social Security constitutional (later confirmed in a Supreme Court decision in 1941, *Edwards v. California*) by using an assumption that everyone would understand just who is eligible to receive benefits under any program funded by federal funds:

*Edwards v. California: “...only persons who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them.”*

This is the only Constitutional way to qualify for welfare. But you must give up your rights when you give up your responsibility to take care of yourself. Since rights only come with responsibilities, you give up all your rights and are forevermore a ward of the system. Congratulations. You now qualify, under limited circumstances, to convert Treasury funds to private use -- “*financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*”.

This welfare-for-forwards function will waive your rights. The right to worship is “*susceptible to restriction only to prevent grave and immediate danger to interests which the state may lawfully protect*”. (*Carroll v. Princess Anne* 393 U.S. 175, *Thomas v. Collins* 323 U.S. 516, *West Virginia v. Barnette* 319 U.S. 624, in re *Brown* 9 Cal.3d 612)

By getting a Social Security Number, you waive your religious rights to this “overriding governmental interest” according to the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Lee* ([455 U.S. 252](#)). (in other religious liberty cases The Supreme Court also called it

"overriding state interest" in *Wisconsin v. Yoder* 406 US 205, and "compelling state interest" in *Sherbert v. Verner* 374 US 398)

If you accepted welfare (or even a Social Security Number) under any other circumstance other than grave and immediate danger of death, then you were fraudulently induced to participate in unlawful means to raid the Treasury.

The government cannot know who is absolutely destitute and without resources for **necessities of life** and who have no relatives or friends or church able and willing to support them. They have to wait for someone to apply. The application for social security is that application to become a ward of the government "*under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*"

Now the bad news. Rights only come with responsibilities. Wards cannot manage their own affairs. As such a person, you have no right to contract. Once you apply to be a ward of government, you waive your right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable. The living allowance that you are allowed to keep (take home pay) is taxable as a gift tax. Your status as a ward remains a permanent *status*.

The term "Disability" has a long definition in the law dictionary, but chief among the different definitions is "*Term is generally used to indicate an incapacity for the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights...*"

#### HOW WERE YOU INCAPACITATED FROM FULL ENJOYMENT OF ORDINARY LEGAL RIGHTS?

Courts must recognize the disability of those who receive benefits. There are fundamental maxims of law that are upheld in courts:

- "He who derives a benefit from a thing, ought to feel the disadvantages attending it.
- "Whose is the advantage, his also should be the disadvantage.
- "No one can unjustly enrich himself at the expense of others" (this creates a constructive contract that courts enforce)
- "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt*.
- According to the Supreme Court in [Ashwander v. TVA](#) anyone who "avails himself of a benefit" cannot then question the Constitutionality of the law that he benefited from. The Supreme Court WILL NOT consider the case.
- The Buck Act extends federal jurisdiction to anyone receiving a federal benefit. (Other than the original 13 States: The citizens of federal territories created their States to shed this federal jurisdiction that you now return. You deny the legitimacy of your State's original purpose. You are now subject to your federal masters, no matter how abhorrent they become. You reduced yourself to the slavery rejected by your forefathers. You ungrateful freedman; by your lust for covetousness your ingratitude enslaved all of us.)
- Once someone is taking care of you, you must conform to the will of your master-provider-lord. As William Blackstone so eloquently stated in the introduction to his [Commentaries on the Law](#), benefits "*oblige the inferior to take the will of him on who he depends...*". This, of course, denies the free-will that was given to all mankind. This denies that we are all created equal. This irresponsibility, unless you are truly destitute, spits in God's face.
- You must now provide corvee labor for your feudal lord.
- A Social Security Card remains property of the Social Security Administration. Read the back of the card. You are responsible for more than just the card. You are subject to whatever strict requirements they set, no matter how abhorrent.
- SS cards are only available to those who cannot take care of themselves. You were given free-will. If you want to reject your creator you can be a dog who begs for scraps from your new master's table, but once you avail yourself of his benefits, this will of course "*oblige the inferior to take the will of him on who he depends...*". If you do not obey your master, he has a duty to control you, and to put a choke chain on an ungrateful dog, to reduce you to slavery. Obey your lord/master/provider's chain of command. There are only two chains of command. One is obeyed out of love, one is obeyed out of fear. *Choose you this day whom ye will serve.*

Or, in Biblical Terms,

- Jesus said in Luke 22:25-26 "... they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors, but ye shall not be so..."
- God hated Esau according to Romans 9:13 and Malachi 1:3 because he sold his birthright for a bowl of stew. Did you sell your birthright for a mere promise of a future bowl of stew?
- Proverbs 25:26 A righteous man who bows to the wicked is like a muddy spring or a polluted well.

- Romans 11:9,10 :

*And David says: "Let their table become a snare and a trap, A stumbling block and a recompense to them. Let their eyes be darkened, so that they do not see, and bow down their back always."*

## BENEFACTORS

Can you honestly say that you love Jesus if you seek benefactors to forcibly take taxes from your neighbors for your own personal welfare? To want benefits IS to covet your neighbor's goods. Those who are addicted to benefits are willing to enslave everyone else to get their socialism.

Can you claim to be Christian if you pray to those who call themselves benefactors? *"Thou shalt make no covenant (contract) with them, nor with their gods (judges)."* Exodus 23:32.

Can you claim to be Christian if you vote to impose your will on others? Partaking of a manmade (graven) system of forced welfare contributions. Contrary to the free-will-offerings system of charity that our Father wills for us -- a system intended to bring us closer to Him. Substituting false lordship for true Lordship. Worshiping other gods.

Can you pray for benefits from them?

I think it was best answered by Abe Lincoln in his second inaugural address.

In Genesis 3:19 the unchanging God of the Bible requires you to earn your bread from the sweat of your face. This principle was still true when Abraham Lincoln gave his second Inaugural address, March 4, 1865:

*"It may seem strange that any men should dare to ask a just God's assistance in wringing their bread from the sweat of other men's faces..."*

He was speaking of slavery. Welfare is just as immoral as slavery. Welfare and slavery are the same thing. It is using laws to force others to provide for you. If you expect others to provide for you, then you are as corrupt as a slave owner. Those bullies who want to force their will on others (by slavery or by vote) have always ganged up together and used fascism to dominate others.

Those who beg the government for aid are willing to be slaves to get it. The Almighty wants you to live by faith that He is the master/lord/provider.

*Jesus answered, "My kingdom is not of this world (government): if my kingdom were of this world (government), then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence."* John 18:36

*"Ye shall not rule one over another".* Leviticus 25:46.

The only people who qualify for a SSN are those who are absolutely destitute, without resources for necessities of life, and with no one to rely upon except their new master. This was common back in the Great Depression, at least for pagans. But Christians had a more difficult time to qualify for a SSN.

In addition to being absolutely destitute, without family to support you, you have to find a church that refuses to take care of you, which is easy now that so many churches have abandoned the faith. Then you have to violate at least six of The Ten Commandments, and swear an oath on a permanent irrevocable contract and confess that Caesar is your lord-master-provider.

It is your choice: Keep the commandments OR buy and sell (Revelation 14:12)

Inability to obtain necessities of life is a prerequisite to obtaining government benefits (according to a Supreme Court decision in 1941, *Edwards v. California* that accepted a narrow definition of the word *indigent*). Yet this is now twisted around so that a Bible believer cannot qualify for commerce in today's world. In order to get an ID card so that you can have a job, housing, bank account, or buy airline travel, medicine, education or many necessities of life, **you must first**

***Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7***

*Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship*

<http://famguardian.org/>

**violate at least six of the Commandments.** Those who love the Lord enough to obey him cannot qualify for an ID card. By the time you finish reading this book, you will know the answers to the following questions:

- Did you swear a perjury oath (contrary to Matthew 5:34 and the second commandment) to an artificial entity (graven image) in order to get a SS number?
- Did you falsify (false witness) an application form that is available only to those who apply for socialist welfare benefits (covetousness)?
- Social Security is not insurance according to the Supreme Court. Are these socialist benefits obtained by theft from your fellow man (by the tax collector that you hired to steal for you, and contrary to the eighth Commandment, and Luke 22:25 lordship of socialist benefactors) ?
- Did you accept an ID card with an all-capitalized name (in dishonor of thy father and mother)?
- Is this also using the Almighty Creator's authority (name) in vain?
- Do you worship other providers-lords-protectors-masters before the one true Lord?
- Do you symbolically bow down to worship them contrary to the second commandment? How about acknowledging the name (authority) of false saviors, worshiping (taking oaths to or saluting) false gods, and serving graven images?

Here is the legal Question: Can a right to contract be denied until an individual first contracts for a Federal benefit number contrary to the Christian faith? Answer: You have a right to contract until proven otherwise. The application is not for a contract, it is a confession that you are unable to take care of yourself. Once you cannot take care of yourself, you no longer have a right to contract. You are no longer under the law, you are now under grace. Only by the grace of your new lord can they assist you, but it is not an enforceable contract. As their ward, you have no right to contract, not even for wages.

Yes indeed, No man might buy or sell without a mark. UNDOCUMENTED BUYING AND SELLING IS ALREADY A CRIME.

Without an ID mark engraved by a government, an undocumented protestor's commerce is limited to the crimes of tax evasion and money laundering. As we shall see, even the Trading With The Enemy Act prohibits your undocumented transactions. The Uniform Commercial Code, section 3-110 requires ID of anyone cashing a check. The recent Anti-Terrorism law expanded the money laundering regulations. Details will be provided in my chapter on Answers to Skeptics. If you use an ID mark to participate in commerce, then what logic do you use to prove that you avoided the dreaded mark, name or number of the Beast?

Is our absolute right to sell our labor now restricted by employers who demand a beast work authorization number? Are you guilty until proven innocent of the crime of "undocumented worker" – a crime that was once a right? Traditionally no one could be forced to accuse himself, but now you must choose between beast- authorized selling and your duty to Obey the Ten Commandments.

Trading with the enemy is a felony. As we shall soon see, we were all declared enemies of the U.S. Government, declared by the ongoing emergency ever since 1933.

The word "Federal" does not appear in the U.S. Constitution. The "Federal" government manages the assets of our foreign masters. You are an asset of your foreign masters.



## 2 SECTION 2: FUNDAMENTALS

The purpose of the next chapters is to suggest that the Mark of the Beast predicted by Revelation 13:16-17 is a government promoted system (that includes mark, name and number) that is symbolically in the right hand and forehead and not necessarily a physical mark in the skin of the right hand and forehead. After all, the book of Revelation contains many symbolic, not physical, references.

The Mark is an international system. And indeed, Social Security is an international program of socialism. See [www.issa.int](http://www.issa.int).

Further proof that the U.S. Social Security system is part of a larger international system is available on the internet:

- <http://www.ssa.gov/policy/docs/prodesc/ssptw/>
- <http://info.worldbank.org/etools/docs/library/79646/Dc%202003/courses/dc2003/readings/taborlinks.pdf>
- <http://www.disabilityalliance.org/b11.pdf>

These Section 1 chapters are introductory. Details will be presented in later chapters.

It is a fact of life that rights only come with responsibilities. Christ told his disciples in Luke 22:25 that benefactors will exercise authority over gentiles.

Always remember that your benefactors get to control you. Those who pay the bills make the rules.

Millions of people have a work authorization number so they can sell their labor. This is also an authorization number required for banking (to buy and sell in normal commerce). Yet most of these people invent excuses to say that the mark of the beast is not here yet.

Most of them think their Social Security Number is just a silly number. They refuse to believe that the mark of the beast can exist yet. Rather than trying to search out the scriptures to find out what it says and doesn't say, they just cannot believe that they have been deceived into denouncing scripture.

There are millions of excuses

- Some claim that oaths to governments (kingdoms) do not worship graven images. Some even claim that oaths to governments are required of Christians.

Some refuse to think that their government would lie to them. They just don't realize that their government was overthrown, and that foreign authority issues SSNs. See the website <http://notfooledbygovernment.com/essays/kings-earth-take-tribute/>

- 
- Some adamantly insist that all Christians would know enough to refuse the mark, and since there is no panic, they don't have to worry yet
- Some vehemently insist that the mark is in the future. Or after the Roman Empire is revived. Or that the antichrist can only rise from Europe.
- Some refuse to believe that Satan is deceptive enough to substitute a counterfeit government while we were watching.
- Some insist that a cashless society must first exist, or that the mark must be a physical mark in the skin.
- I've even been told that it is perfectly acceptable to contract with Satan, because he has no authority in heaven and since Christians have the assurance of salvation we will all be raptured to heaven before the mark is given.
- And many insist that we must always obey government, up to and including a Hitler, because we have no right to resist authority as long as our worship of God is allowed. Therefore we must take the mark.

Many numbered people are waiting for a one-man atheist world leader, claiming to be God and ruling from a rebuilt temple in Jerusalem for 3½ years after a broken 7 year treaty.

If you are waiting for these false signs and false Christs, you will miss all of the signs that Christ commands you to look for. For **if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.**

## 2.1 Is Satan deceptive, If possible to deceive the very elect?

Is there any possibility, even remote, that Satan and his demons have been at work for two millennia

- setting up false religions masquerading as Christian? After all, there are over 700 belief systems based on the Bible.
- counterfeiting governments so oaths of allegiance are to his chain of command?
- overthrowing governments (perhaps through secret organizations, or perhaps through bankruptcy receiverships to multinational organizations who loaned the National debts, or perhaps through “peace” treaties to end wars)?
- Setting up a Novus Ordo Seclorum – a Secular New World Order – to run governments, even prior to the existence of the U.S. government.
- deceiving the whole world to get you to submit yourself to his chain of command?

Is there any possibility, even remote, that Satan controls the world’s countries (Kings of the Earth). Matthew 4:9, Luke 4:6, Isaiah 14:17, etc. Do World leaders suffer Demon possession?

- Do people envision vain things, and the Kings of the earth stand up against the Lord (Acts 4:25)?
- Does a great whore reigneth over the kings of the earth? (Revelation 17:18)
- Do miracle working spirits possess the kings of the earth, to gather them together against the almighty? (Revelation 16:14)

In the last days, people will abandon the faith and be seduced by doctrines of demons (1<sup>st</sup> Timothy 4:1). Yet driving out demons is commanded by Christ. When Christ spoke of driving out demons, Christ said that **he who is not with me is against me**. Matthew 12:28-30 and Luke 11:20-23. There is no middle ground. 1<sup>st</sup> John 3:8 "..."*For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.*"

Believers have a primary duty to drive out demons (Mark 16:17). But we have been subdued to the point where we refuse to perform one of our primary duties. It is our own fault that demons have gained political power over us. Political forces of evil must be reversed to remove the curse upon the land.

A brief note about curses: the word *curses* is not referring to foul language. Foul language is not swearing, nor cursing. Swearing refers to oaths. Taking the name in vain is not swearing nor cursing, either. Taking the name in vain is what the translators did with all their removal and substitutions of the Lord’s name.

Curses are not invented by Satan. Every curse in the Holy Bible is put there by the Almighty God. Curses are his punishment upon disobedient nations.

Satan is the father of legalists. Satan’s legalists want you to believe, contrary to the first and second commandments that you can worship other gods without consequence. These false teachers have brought the truth into disrepute so they can follow their own ways. [2nd Peter 2:2](#).

Christ told us that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twicfold damned. Matthew 23:15.

How can you know if you are twicfold damned?

## 2.2 What is an oath?

- Every dictionary or encyclopedia will tell you that an oath is always a religious ceremony.
- A perjury oath signature is a religious ceremony.
- Oaths are required for people (created equal people) who voluntarily want to become government officers. With an oath they thereby subordinate themselves to the civilian public (created equal people) they serve. They become second class subordinates. Once you swear oaths to them, you become a third class of servant to the servants.
- when there is no Satanic influence in your chain of command, oaths are not a problem.
- You are a slave to whom you obey. (Romans 6:16). ... by whom one has been subdued, by him also does he become a slave. 2 Peter 2:19.
- Oaths are always taken to a superior. Hebrews 6:16. Did you want to live in a country where you could hold the truth to be self-evident that all men are created equal? Or did you want to worship judges?
- As we shall see, oaths are binding on the soul, and what is bound on earth is bound in heaven.

We know from the Mennonite Encyclopedia article on oaths: [www.gameo.org/encyclopedia/contents/O358.html](http://www.gameo.org/encyclopedia/contents/O358.html)

The oath is the strongest possible confirmation of the truth of a statement by calling upon God to witness. The most familiar and most common explanation is that the oath is the calling upon the holy and omniscient God as witness and protector of the truth and as judge and avenger of untruth and lying.

Among the Jews, who had a living faith in a personal God, the oath had a deeper religious meaning than among the pagans. With the Jews the prescribed oath before a tribunal was very rare. It was used only as a sort of oath of purification in case of injury or theft of some entrusted or found property. [Exodus 22:6](#) ff.; [Leviticus 5:23](#); [Proverbs 29:24](#). But it was very frequent in their civil and business life. In the Old Testament the oath was required. The basic passage is designated as [Genesis 21:28-31](#), where Abimelech, the king of the Philistines, demanded of Abraham an oath that he would not deal falsely with him or his descendants but show mercy as Abimelech had shown Abraham. Abraham rendered the oath and as a testimony of the oath gave the king seven lambs. This is the origin of the Hebrew word for swearing, which means to affirm with seven sacrifices. The simplest form of the oath was the elevation of the right hand or both hands. [Genesis 14:22](#); [Deuteronomy 32:40](#); [Daniel 12:7](#). It appears to have been generally customary, so that the expression "to lift the hand" is equivalent to swearing (Hebrew and German of [Exodus 6:8](#); [Numbers 14:30](#)).

"the strongest possible confirmation of the truth"

- why does your government not recognize lesser confirmations than oaths that condemn you (James 5:12)?
- Of course it is the strongest possible confirmation. Where else could you find someone in a land where we are all created equal to swear oaths that they are inferior (an oath is sworn to superiors Hebrews 6:16)?

"... the oath had a deeper religious meaning than among the pagans..."

- Do your courts and IRS forms and driver license applications, etc conform to your deeper religious meanings or do you, by signing them, conform to pagans?

"to lift the hand is equivalent to swearing"

- Will courts recognize any religious meaning other than their brutal pagan forced worship?

### 2.2.1 Salute oaths

- As we can see in the Bible, the simplest form of oath is to raise your hand. (Genesis 14:22, Deuteronomy 32:40, Daniel 12:7). Raising your hand in court is a form of worship. (a salute).
- The U.S. Supreme Court in a flag salute case, [Barnette v. Board of Education](#), has acknowledged that a salute is the assuming of a body position, initiated by the inferior toward the superior.

A salute was never part of American culture until 1933. Prior to that we were all created equal with no superior but the author of our being. The definition of *salute* did not enter into the legal dictionary until 1933. This was only after public schools established the 10<sup>th</sup> plank of the Communist Manifesto, and after the 16<sup>th</sup> amendment established the second plank of the Communist Manifesto, and after the 17<sup>th</sup> Amendment removed state control over the federal government, and after

the Federal Reserve established the fifth plank of the Communist Manifesto, and after your National Anthem changed to one that did not mention God, and after the state bar associations became agencies of the states, and after your gold coins were seized (when you were declared to be an enemy of the government) did a salute become American. Prior to that it was only ceremonial military honor paid to distinguished personages and flags, and at funerals for officers.

### 2.2.2 Swearing oaths

- As we can see from Abraham's example, swearing means to affirm with seven sacrifices. This is a definition that existed prior to government. Swearing is an affirmation regardless of what any judge tells you.
- The Hebrew word *shâba* means to seven oneself - adjure, from the root word used only as a denominative from *shib'âh* the cardinal number seven.
- Matthew 5:34 **swear not at all.**
- And James 5:12 repeats Christ's prohibition against swearing "... *neither by any other oath*", and also adds a reason. James warns us ABOVE ALL to avoid oaths because we could be condemned by taking oaths. Why would you be condemned? Because it violates the first and second commandments.
- Do you think it is heavy-handed for a judge to demand that you condemn yourself before he will listen to you? Should a Christian, or Jew, use the name of the Almighty to bind his soul's allegiance to false gods?
- The Bible prohibits swearing "*neither by any other oath*" (such as affirmation or signature "under penalty of perjury"). Oaths are religious ceremonies to idols and false gods. You HAD a free will, but you now have the superior graven image you submitted to.

### 2.2.3 Worship oaths

In both the Hebrew and the Greek, we see that worship is the assuming of a body position initiated by the inferior toward the superior:

- In the Old Testament, there are two words translated as "worship" of images: Worship is translated from the Hebrew *shâchâh* 193 times in the Bible. According to Strong's Lexicon, #7812, it means  
*"prostrate (espec. Reflex. In homage to royalty or God): - bow (self) down, crouch fall down (flat) humbly beseech, do (make) obeisance, do reverence, make to stoop, worship."*
- And Strong's 5457 *cgid* (used only in the Book of Daniel, chapter 3) a Chaldee word meaning "to prostrate oneself (in homage): -- fall down"
- In the New Testament, the Greek word for "worship" also involved the assuming of a body position.  
*4352 proskuneo (to kiss, like a dog licking his master's hand); to fawn or crouch to, i.e. prostrate oneself in homage (do reverence to, adore): -- worship.*

Again we see that it is a body motion.

- In the Bible, raising a hand is the simplest form of an oath. It is the assuming of a body position.

Note that there are other Hebrew words that are NOT discussed here, that are translated as "worship" of Jehovah God, but never used for worship of images. Worship of graven images was the assuming of a body position initiated by the inferior toward the superior. Today, a salute is the assuming of a body position initiated by the inferior toward the superior. Can you spot any difference?

The Christians who created your Government, knew the Greek definition of *proskuneo* worship involved crouching to lick your master's hand. One of my favorite quotes was attributed to Samuel Adams (who was a signer of the Declaration of Independence, cousin of President John Adams, and an activist at the Boston Tea Party):

*"If ye love wealth greater than liberty, the tranquility of servitude greater than the animating contest for freedom, go home from us in peace. We seek not your counsel, nor your arms. Crouch down and lick the hand that feeds you; May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget that ye were our countrymen."*

There is a lot of symbolism here. In Colonial America crouching down (worship) to foreign government benefactors\* was equated to slavery.

*"lick the hands which feed you" ...*

- by whom one has been subdued, by him also does he become a slave. 2 Peter 2:19.
- And Esau surrendered his birthright to the hands which fed him.
- AGAIN we see that you are a slave to whom you obey. (Romans 6:16).
- and America's contest for freedom required rejecting the tyranny that feeds you. Just as it has been since Babylon, Pharaoh and Caesar.

It is a fact of life that benefactors who pay the bills, make the rules. As William Blackstone so eloquently stated in the introduction to his Commentaries on the Law, benefits "*oblige the inferior to take the will of him on who he depends...*". And, of course, subordinating yourself -- subjecting yourself -- to benefactors denies the lordship of Christ. And denies the free-will given to all mankind by the author of the universe.

\* Government benefactors?

Christ himself gave a similar warning about foreign government benefactors in Luke 22:25-26

*"The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and those who exercise authority over them are called 'benefactors.' But not so among you; on the contrary...."*

## WORSHIP

Both in the Old Testament Hebrew, and the New Testament Greek, the verb Worship refers to the assuming of a body position such as bowing down, crouching or facing.

The U.S. Supreme Court confirmed, in a flag salute case, Board of Education v. Barnette, 319 U.S. 624, that a salute is the assuming of a physical position.

A salute, which is a form of worship, is initiated by the inferior toward the superior. Who do you worship, the Lord, or the state god? To whom do you raise your right hand in court? At the beginning of their worship service, to whom do you worship when the bailiff commands: "All Rise"? William Tell understood enough to refuse to salute judge Gessler. Daniel, in chapter 3, understood enough to refuse to worship the civil authority. Traditionally a judge would carry a Bible into a courtroom, and all would rise in deference to the Bible. Rising for this religious procession is a form of worship, the assuming of a body position initiated by the inferior. These Latin speaking black robed priests no longer carry Bibles when they enter their synagogue. Who's authority do you worship now?

How can anyone swear to tell the whole truth, which is impossible? Christ in Matthew 5:37 said that your yes should be yes, and your no, no, and any testimony more than a yes or no answer is evil.

Do you swear oaths in court or perjury oaths on forms? If so, why call Christ Lord, Lord and do not the things which he says?

How can anyone swear to tell nothing but the truth? We know that every man is a liar, Romans 3:4.

Roman worship:

In Roman times soldiers would worship their superior by bestowing a crown (garland, wreath) of laurel or oak leaves. This is depicted, for example, in the garland bestowed symbolically by the Roman Empire to Columbus in the 1893 sketch in chapter 2.13

You are "to obey God rather than men" (Acts 5:29 KJV). How did your civil servants get the (your) authority to demand your reverence? Worship is defined in the Law Dictionary as "*Any form of religious service showing reverence for Divine Being, or exhortation to obedience to or following of the mandates of such Being...*"

### 2.2.4 Oath history topics

This chapter will introduce you to the brutality of the Catholic Church as they persecuted those who loved their Lord enough to obey Him. The same brutality, from the same source, is perpetuated by mandatory perjury oaths.

It has been my experience that sheep know their master's voice. Christians would know enough not to swear oaths (Matthew 5:34) lest they be damned (James 5:12). Others will follow their own master. Christians will love their LORD enough to obey Him. Others will fear their own lord enough to obey. One system acts out of love, the other out of fear. Both flocks know their master's voice.

Christ warned us that many shall come in his name, saying He is Christ, and shall deceive many. Today we see that there are many 501(c)(3) government corporations today that claim to be a church, which deceive many into false worship. Their flocks know their master's voice. No one can serve two masters. Choose this day whom ye shall serve.

According to the Declaration of Independence "We the people" are created equal. This phrase is acknowledged in William Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law, which will be quoted at length, later. He explained that we are all created equal with no other superior than the LORD almighty.

According to the U.S. Constitution "We the People", as equals, then created – ordained is the religious term they used – a government. The U.S. Constitution requires "oath or affirmation" to bind the subordinate official to his duty. But nowhere does it say the oath is administered by anyone.

In chapter 4.17.1 we will learn that New York State, although it hosted the U.S. Capital at the time, refused to participate in the federal government until everyone\* else was sworn in by questionable superiors. The United States has been under an alternate lordship ever since.

\* *Your representatives represent you.* 1795 U.S. Supreme Court in Penhallow v. Doane, 3 U.S. 55 at page 94: "representatives shall be chosen to act on the part of the whole. But when they do so, they decide for the whole, and not for themselves only."

Oaths are taken to superiors. People who want to become civil servants are made subordinate to society by swearing an oath to us, their former equals. By swearing oaths to obey our rules (the Constitution we wrote) they become subordinate to us.

It is the same in court. By raising your hand, you become subordinate to the civil servant judge, your former subordinate. You place yourself under the servant and become a third level subordinate to the civil servant of "We the People" equals.

As we can see, lifting a hand is equivalent to swearing. If a hand motion is sufficient, how much more significant is a perjury oath signature on a permanently recorded document? HOW COULD A PERJURY OATH NOT BE A FORM OF WORSHIP TO A SUPERIOR? If your superior is not in your Lord's chain-of-command, then it is worship of a substitute lord. We will soon see that you may indeed sell your soul with a signature.

A judge will tell you that affirming does the same thing as swearing.

Beware: it is now possible to be subject yourself perjury penalties without raising your hand to a judge. Gordon v. Idaho, 778 F.2d. 1397 at the top of page 1401

THE FIRST TWO COMMANDMENTS

Exodus 20:3 (KJV)

*Thou shalt have no other gods before me.*

The Hebrew word translated as "gods" is *Elohiym*. Strong's Concordance Lexicon H430 defines *Elohiym* as "*gods in the ordinary sense; but spec. used (in the plur. Thus, esp. with the art.) of the supreme God, occasionally applied by way of deference to magistrates; and sometimes as a superlative:-angels, X exceeding, God (gods) (-dess, -ly), X (very) great, judges, X mighty.*"

As you can see, the First Commandment prohibits honoring magistrates or judges. The painting of Roman gods on the U.S. Capitol Building rotunda ceiling is entitled *Apotheos of George Washington*. It depicts freemason George Washington as a god maker. (Latin *Apotheos* means "god maker"). He created the American judge gods. Romans 13:7 tells you to give honor to whom honor is due. It does NOT tell you to bow down to black robed Latin speaking priests.

Exodus 20:4-5 (KJV)

*Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;*

Assuming a physical position. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them. The Hebrew word here for Bow is *shachah* defined in Strong's Concordance Lexicon H7812 as "to depress, i.e. prostrate (espc. Reflex. In homage to royalty or God): - bow (self) down, crouch, fall down (flat), humbly beseech, do (make) obeisance, do reverence, make to stoop, worship."

### 2.2.4.1 Scriptures

The term swearing comes from scriptures. (although the Encyclopedia Britannica says the origin of [oaths](#) and [swearing](#) is unclear) *Swore* is in Genesis 21:31 as the Hebrew word *shāba* (to seven oneself, i.e. swear as if by repeating a declaration seven times) Strong's H7650. Swearing is a special form of affirming. Swearing is to affirm with seven sacrifices (according to the Mennonite Encyclopedia quoted earlier). Genesis 21:27-31. While Abraham was a nomad (foreign resident alien) in the Philistine's land, King Abimelech demanded that he be treated fairly by Abraham. Abraham voluntarily offered a pledge of seven lambs (pledge, earnest money agreement, bonded, secured escrow to pay any future damage caused by false statement. Proverbs 6:1-2 "...if thou be surety... thou art snared with the words of thy mouth").

Oaths are Binding on the soul: Numbers 30:2, Numbers 30:10, Leviticus 5:4

What is bound on earth is bound in heaven. Matthew 16:19, Matthew 18:18.

A salute is a form of worship (Genesis 14:2, Deuteronomy 32:40, Daniel 12:7). It is the assuming of a bodily position by the subordinate toward the superior. Oaths are always sworn to someone greater than themselves according to Hebrews 6:16. But here in a nation where "We the People" created our government civil service, they (the elected or appointed) must swear an oath-of-office contract to their masters. Not the other way around. After all, Abraham was on Philistine land (strangers can be taxed Matthew 17:25). Our servants are on our land. Here in a nation where we are all created equal (with no other superior than our Creator, according to Blackstone) the servants become subordinate (unequal) when they swear an oath-of-office contract. Not the other way around.

- IF we are all equal why would anyone swear oaths to a subordinate?
- If we are all equal why would anyone worship them with a salute?

The words of Christ in Matthew 5:33-37 (KJV):

*"Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."*

James also forbids swearing, neither ANY OTHER OATH, and adds a reason. He puts as much emphasis as he can by saying ABOVE ALL. James 5:12 (KJV)

*"But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea; and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation."*

Numbers 30:2 (KJV) *If a man vow a vow unto the LORD, or swear an oath to bind his soul with a bond; he shall not break his word, he shall do according to all that proceedeth out of his mouth.*

Matthew 15:18 (KJV) "But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man."

Like Esau, you can, with an oath, sell your birthright for a bowl of stew (Genesis 25:33 – with no physical worship, just an oath). God hated Esau according to Romans 9:13 and Malachi 1:3.

### 2.2.4.2 History

Emperor Decius from 249 to 251AD commanded worship from everyone. Those who wanted to live were allowed to just burn a little incense. However, those who refused to acknowledge this lordship went to their deaths. Today is much the same: we are allowed to affirm, but it does the same thing as swearing.

William Tell refused to salute the hat of judge Gessler and was immediately sentenced to death unless he could demonstrate his marksmanship. We would not have a Switzerland today if Tell had failed to stand firm.

“Braveheart” William Wallace chose execution rather than swear allegiance to King Edward I. Scotland would not be a free country if Wallace had pledged allegiance. Most of today’s self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to pledge allegiance. They think nothing of pledging allegiance while claiming that they live free.

John Lilburn's star chamber trial is mentioned in The Supreme Court's *Miranda v. Arizona* decision. In 1637 during the brutal reign of Charles I, John Lilburn (a Quaker) risked death refusing to take a Star Chamber Oath. In 1966 the U.S. Supreme Court acknowledged that Miranda’s famous right to remain silent comes from a long history of resistance to Star Chamber Oaths. The fifth amendment perpetuates “*The lofty principles to which Lilburn had appealed during his trial...*” We have a fifth amendment because Lilburn risked death refusing an oath, yet most of today’s self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to take oaths. The right to remain silent is a right to avoid oaths. It is the foundation of the Fifth Amendment. According to Encarta, The Levellers main tenant was that refusal to take an oath was an unalienable right beyond the reach of any jurisdiction. Christ said “swear not at all”. The Supreme Court in *Miranda v. Arizona* 384 U.S. 436, at page 459, in footnote 27 acknowledged that the Fifth Amendment evolved from a 13th century law commentary that “the principle that no man is to be declared guilty of his own admission is a divine decree”

Satan’s plan all along is to be like the most high (Isaiah 14:14).

In a flag salute a pledge of allegiance is a voluntary test oath that requires the assuming of a physical position. In 1943, the Supreme Court in *Board of Education v. Barnette* prohibited mandatory pledge of allegiance. They ruled, 319 U.S. 624 at page 644, that “*a failure, because of religious scruples, to assume a particular physical position and to repeat the words of a patriotic formula*” is a legal right, because if the pledge were mandatory, it would be a prohibited test oath, prohibited by the Constitution. The Supreme Court said that “*Such a statutory exaction is a form of test oath, and the test oath has always been abhorrent in the United States.*”

Encyclopedia Britannica Eleventh edition, 1910-1911, also gives possible etymology for *Oath* including that of pledged money paid into a Roman court to be forfeited by the loser.

Oaths are always religious ceremonies, the Constitution Article VI prohibits religious tests for public officers, the Supreme Court says test oaths are abhorrent to Americans.

Warning: oaths are binding on your soul. The smoke of your torment shall rise forever in the presence of the Lamb.

**In iudicio non creditur nisi juratis** /in jədís(h)(i)yow  
nòn krédətər náysay jərəytəs/. In a trial, credence is  
given only to those who are sworn.

Judges will tell you that witnesses must be sworn. The Rules of Procedure and Rules of Evidence require witnesses to be sworn prior to testifying. This is all based on the maxim shown here from Black's Law Dictionary 6<sup>th</sup> edition. But law dictionaries before 1979 attribute the maxim to "Croke's English King's



Bench Report temp. Charles I, 3 Cro."

It appears that King Charles I, who was the only king we had to execute, has reached out from the grave to impose a Catholic requirement that they used during the counter-reformation to execute Protestants.

The New Catholic Encyclopedia 2003 boasts in their article "Oaths - English Post Reformation": "*From the first days of the English Reformation oaths, tests, and formal declarations were used to secure submission to the changes imposed by conformity to the Established Church.*"

It appears that, yes indeed, they have succeeded in their long term plan to snare anyone who would violate the first two commandments, or bind his/her soul contrary to Christ's command to swear not. In 1452, Pope Nicholas the fifth, issued a Papal Bull called the Doctrine of Discovery

*"... to capture, vanquish and subdue the Sarccens, pagans and other enemies of Christ to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."*

Although the Constitution does not require oaths to be administered, the Federal Rules of Civil Procedure requires oaths to be administered to witnesses prior to testifying. Rules 28, 30(b) and (c), and 53.

Federal Rule of Evidence, Rule 603 Oath or Affirmation

*"Before testifying, every witness shall be required to declare that the witness will testify truthfully, by oath or affirmation administered in a form calculated to awaken the witness' conscience and impress the witness' mind with the duty to do so."*

Even though you will be punished for lying, they also require absolute submission. Do you see a problem here?

The Quakers would object to "awaken the conscience" as well as forced liturgy. Amish/Mennonite would object to "administered".

Quaker Robert Barkley documented the Quaker beliefs in his essay "Apology for the True Christian Divinity"

*"THE FOURTEENTH PROPOSITION*

*Concerning the power of the Civil Magistrate, in matters purely religious, and pertaining to the conscience Since God hath assumed to himself the power and dominion of the conscience, who alone can rightly instruct and govern it, therefore it is not lawful for any whatsoever, by virtue of any authority or principality they bear in the government of this world, to force the consciences of others; and therefore all killing [executions], banishing, fining, imprisoning, and other such things, which men are afflicted with, for the alone exercise of their conscience, or difference in worship or opinion, proceedeth from the spirit of Cain the murderer, and is contrary to the Truth; provided always, that no man, under the pretence of conscience, prejudice his neighbour in his life or estate; or do anything destructive to, or inconsistent with human society; in which case the law is for the transgressor, and justice to be administered upon all, without respect of persons."*

*w. Luke 9:55-56; Matt. 7:12,29; Tit. 3:10.*

Uxbridge Quaker Heritage, by Allan McGillivray, 1996:

*"That war was looked upon as contrary to the will of God, and oath-taking was forbidden."*

Since Quakers are opposed to war, and cannot swear oaths to become government officers, they serve a useful purpose in wartime. Their relief society [The American Friends Service Committee](http://www.americanfriends.org/) is often considered so neutral that they are allowed behind enemy lines to provide relief to civilians, similar to the Red Cross.

Anabaptist Beliefs -- the Christian and the State, History of Western Civilization, By Dr. E.L. Skip Knox, 1998:

*"Anabaptists found explicit prohibitions in the Bible against oath-taking (Matthew 5:34, and James 5:12). This alone made them poor citizens, for they could not participate in most juries and could not swear oaths of allegiance. It also meant that they could not serve in public office."*

The Mennonite Confession of Faith (the one published in 1995 by the Herald Press, not earlier versions) has Article 20 entitled Truth and the Avoidance of Oaths. It is available online at [www.mennolink.org/doc/cof/art.20.html](http://www.mennolink.org/doc/cof/art.20.html)

*"We commit ourselves to tell the truth, to give a simple yes or no, and to avoid swearing of oaths.... Throughout history, human governments have asked citizens to swear oaths of allegiance. As Christians, our first allegiance is to God..."*

A compelled oath in court would deny the law of the land. Here is the definition in Black's Law Dictionary 5<sup>th</sup> edition. (The definition changed in the 7<sup>th</sup> edition).

**Law of the land. Due process of law (q.v.).** By the law of the land is most clearly intended the general law which hears before it condemns, which proceeds upon inquiry, and renders judgment only after trial. *Dupuy v. Tedora*, 204 La. 560, 15 So.2d 886, 891. The meaning is that every citizen shall hold his life, liberty, property, and immunities under the protection of general rules which govern society. See **Due process of law.**

least ye be condemned -- James 5:12

Only those who salute the judge (worship a graven image, and a graven god) can testify in court. You cannot receive due process of law if the judge refuses to hear before he condemns, or proceed without inquiry.

The Roman system will not tolerate Christians, therefore:

- Why not rather be wronged? Why not rather suffer yourself to be defrauded?
- "... and of him who taketh away your goods, ask them not again"
- "Agree with thine adversary... lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge"

Oaths are taken to superiors (Hebrews 6:16). The author of your being gave you free will. If you are forced to surrender your will to a judge, (by acknowledging he is superior, confessing that we are not created equal), then: You deny the free will that your creator created.

A compelled oath in court would deny that governments get their just powers from the consent of the governed.

A compelled oath in court would deny the *jura summa imperii* from which government authority exists.

Excerpts from the biography of John Wycliffe (author of the first English Bible translation)

Moreover, that John Wickliffe opposed not only infant baptism, but also oaths sworn to men, is testified to in the forty-second article of his confession, delivered in the council of Constance, and condemned there. It reads thus: "Oaths sworn in civil contracts and commercial transactions are unlawful." Colon. aped Orthun. Grat. A. Mell., 2d book, fol. 496, cot. 1.

This article relative to the swearing of oaths, from the confession of John Wickliffe, is stated by some as follows: "An oath sworn for the purpose of confirming human contracts and proper transactions, is not appropriate." Seb. Franck, Chron., der Roan. Kett., fol. 105, cot. 1, letter J., John. Also P. J. Tzvisck, Chron., p. 720, cot. 1, 2. Tract. Kort herhael van den Loop der Werelt, by F. H. H., p. 99.

Hence, when Wickliffe rejects the swearing of oaths in civil or human contracts, he rejects all swearing of all oaths that have ever been in question; for not the promises which are made to God but the oaths that are sworn to

men, have been from ancient times, and are still, the matter in question.

13. "Men shall not swear in any wise. Hence he said to those who urged him vehemently to swear an oath: `I am afraid every way; if I swear, eternal death is my portion; but if I swear not, I cannot escape your hands; but it is better that I fall into your hands without sin than to sin in the sight of God.'"

Here we certainly clearly see that the doctrine of not swearing in any wise, was an article of his faith; and if it was the case that he was requested to abjure his faith or religion, he refused to abjure it, not only because he would not forsake his faith or religion, but also because he held that one ought not to swear at all, as the 13th article declares: "Men shall not swear in any wise," that is, not at all. Seb. Fr. Chron., 3d part, f al. 105. Tract. van den Loop Werelt, fol. 100. Also P. J. Twisck, Chron., page 764. A.

Tertullian

from 3.74 – 3.77 of the "Ante-Nicene Fathers"; author: Tertullian (AD 145 to 220);

### Chapter XXI.—Of Silent Acquiescence in Heathen Formularies.

But it is a mark of timidity, when some other man binds you in the name of his gods, by the making of an oath, or by some other form of attestation, and you, for fear of discovery,<sup>330</sup> remain quiet. For you equally, by remaining quiet, affirm their majesty, by reason of which *majesty* you will seem to be bound. What matters it, whether you affirm the gods of the nations by calling them gods, or by hearing them so called? Whether you swear by idols, or, when adjured by another, acquiesce? Why should we not recognize the subtleties of Satan, who makes it his aim that, what he cannot effect by *our* mouth, he may effect by the mouth of his servants, introducing idolatry into us through our ears? At all events, whoever the adjurer is, he binds you to himself either in friendly or unfriendly conjunction. If in unfriendly, you are now challenged unto battle, and know that you must fight. If in friendly, with how far greater security will you transfer your engagement unto the Lord, that you may dissolve the obligation of him through whose means the Evil One was seeking to annex you to the honour of idols, that is, to idolatry! All sufferance of that kind is idolatry. You honour those to whom, when imposed as authorities, you have rendered respect. I know that one (whom the Lord pardon!), when it had been said to him in public during a law-suit, "Jupiter be wroth with you," answered, "On the contrary, with *you*." What else would a heathen have done who believed Jupiter to be a god? For even had he not retorted the malediction by Jupiter (or other such like), yet, *by merely* returning a curse, he would have confirmed the divinity of Jove, showing himself irritated by a malediction in Jove's name. For what is there to be indignant at, (if cursed) in the name of one whom you know to be nothing? For if you rave, you immediately affirm his existence, and the profession of your fear will be an act of idolatry. How much more, while you are returning the malediction in the name of Jupiter himself, are you doing honour to Jupiter in the same way as he who provoked you! But a believer ought to laugh in such cases, not to rave; nay, according to the precept,<sup>331</sup> not to return a curse in the name of God even, but dearly to *bless* in the name of God, that you may both demolish idols and preach God, and fulfil discipline.

### Chapter XXIII.—Written Contracts in the Name of Idols. Tacit Consent.

But there is a certain species of that class, doubly sharpened in deed and word, and mischievous on either side, although it flatter you, as if it were free of danger in each; while it does not seem to be a *deed*, because it is not laid hold of as a *word*. In borrowing money from heathens under pledged<sup>334</sup> securities, *Christians* give a guarantee under oath, and deny themselves *to have done so*. Of course, the time of the prosecution, and the place of the judgment seat, and the person of the presiding judge, decide that they knew themselves *to have so done*.<sup>335</sup> Christ prescribes that there is to be no swearing. "I wrote," says the debtor, "but I said nothing. It is the tongue, not the written letter, which kills." Here I call Nature and Conscience as my witnesses: Nature, because even if the *tongue* in dictating remains motionless and quiet, the hand can write nothing which the *soul* has not dictated; albeit even to the tongue itself the soul may have dictated either something conceived by itself, or else something delivered by another. Now, lest it be said, "Another dictated," I here appeal to Conscience whether, what another dictated, the soul entertains,<sup>336</sup> and transmits unto the hand, whether with the concomitance or the inaction of the tongue. Enough, that the Lord has said faults are committed in the mind and the conscience. If concupiscence or malice have ascended into a man's heart, He saith it is held as a deed.<sup>337</sup> You therefore have given a guarantee;

which clearly has "ascended into your heart," which you can neither contend you were ignorant of nor unwilling; for when you gave the guarantee, you knew *that you did it*; when you knew, of course you were willing: you did it as well in act as in thought; nor can you by the lighter charge exclude the heavier,<sup>338</sup> so as to say that it is clearly rendered false, by giving a guarantee for what you do not actually perform. "Yet I have not denied, because I have not sworn." *But you have sworn*, since, even if you had done no such thing, you would still be said to swear, if you have even *consented* to so doing. Silence of voice is an unavailing plea in a case of *writing*; and muteness of sound in a case of *letters*. For Zacharias, when punished with a temporary privation of *voice*, holds colloquy with his *mind*, and, passing by his bootless tongue, with the help of his hands dictates from his heart, and without his mouth pronounces the name of his son.<sup>339</sup> Thus, in his pen there speaks a hand clearer than every sound, in his waxen tablet there is heard a letter more vocal than every mouth.<sup>340</sup> Inquire whether a man have *spoken* who is *understood* to have spoken.<sup>341</sup> Pray we the Lord that no necessity for that kind of contract may ever encompass us; and if it *should* so fall out, may He give our brethren the means of helping us, or give us constancy to break off all *such* necessity, lest those denying letters, the substitutes for our mouth, be brought forward against us in the day of judgment, sealed with the seals, not now of witnesses, but of angels!

### 2.2.4.3 All known methods of compulsion?

See chapter 2.13 for proof that government protects you from all known methods of compulsion.

Rights are "susceptible of restriction only to prevent grave and immediate danger to interests which the state may lawfully protect" (West's Constitutional law, key 84, 90, 91). Is your religion a grave and immediate danger to the existence of those who have overthrown your government?

When the Declaration of Independence was written, the word "Rights" included the right to be free from all known methods of compulsion. Government must protect you from all known methods of compulsion by protecting your rights and preserving them inviolate. These are rights that the government CANNOT touch.

Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law, Book 1 "Rights of Persons" (First Edition, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1769) explains our rights, as they existed in the received law-of-the-land in the colonies when the 13 original states wrote their constitutions.

*"The rights themselves, thus defined by these several statutes, consist in a number of private immunities, which will appear, from what has been premised, to be indeed no other, than either that residuum of natural liberty, which is not required by the laws of society to be sacrificed to public convenience; or else those civil privileges, which society hath engaged to provide, in lieu of the natural liberties so given up by individuals. These, therefore, were formerly, either by inheritance or purchase, the rights of all mankind; but, in most other countries of the world being now more or less debased and destroyed, they at present may be said to remain, in a peculiar and emphatical manner, the rights of the people of England. And these may be reduced to three principal or primary articles; the right of personal security, the right of personal liberty, and the right of private property: because, as there is no other known method of compulsion, or of abridging man's natural free will, but by an infringement or diminution of one or other of these important rights, the preservation of these, inviolate, may justly be said to include the preservation of our civil immunities in their largest and most extensive sense."*

Prior to 1878 no one could be a witness in his own trial "*nemo in propria causa testis esse debet*". This changed when Congress passes "An act to make persons charged with crimes and offenses competent witnesses in the United States and Territorial Courts." March 16, 1878, chapter 37, 20 Statute 30:

*"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That in the trial of all indictments, informations, complaints, and other proceedings against persons charged with the commission of crimes, offenses, and misdemeanors, in the United States courts, Territorial courts, and courts-martial, and courts of inquiry, in any State or Territory, including the District of Columbia, the person so charged shall, at his own request but not otherwise, be a competent witness. And his failure to make such request shall not create any presumption against him."*

This became 18 USC 3481.

Although it did not compel the oath, judges will force oaths by jail time for contempt of court.

What would you say are the chances that Latin speaking black robed priests are forcing conformance to Catholic doctrine? (hint: after the US bankruptcy in 1933, the bar association - who is the child of the Knights Templar central bank of England - became the bankruptcy receivership. They are merely taking care of their collateral -- that's you -- until the debt is paid).

### 2.2.5 Supreme Court Cases On Abhorrent Oaths

#### Torcaso v. Watkins, 367 U.S. 488 (1961)

*When our Constitution was adopted, the desire to put the people "securely beyond the reach" of religious test oaths brought about the inclusion in Article VI of that document of a provision that "no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any Office or public Trust under the United States." Article VI supports the accuracy of our observation in *Girouard v. United States*, 328 U.S. 61, 69, that "[t]he test oath is **abhorrent** to our tradition." Not satisfied, however, with Article VI and other guarantees in the original Constitution, the First Congress proposed and the States very shortly thereafter [367 U.S. 488, 492] adopted our Bill of Rights, including the First Amendment. 6 That Amendment broke new constitutional ground in the protection it sought to afford to freedom of religion, speech, press, petition and assembly. Since prior cases in this Court have thoroughly explored and documented the history behind the First Amendment, the reasons for it, and the scope of the religious freedom it protects, we need not cover that ground again. 7 What was said in our prior cases we think controls our decision here.*

#### First Unit. Church v. Los Angeles, 357 U.S. 545 (1958)

*What I have said in *Speiser v. Randall* and *Prince v. San Francisco*, decided this day, ante, p. 532, is sufficient for these cases as well. But there is a related ground on which the decision in these Unitarian cases should rest. We know from the record one principle of that church:*

*"The principles, moral and religious, of the First Unitarian Church of Los Angeles compel it, its members, officers and minister, as a matter of deepest conscience, belief and conviction, to deny power in the state to compel acceptance by it or any other church of this or any other oath of coerced affirmation as to church doctrine, advocacy or beliefs." [357 U.S. 545, 548]*

*We stated in *Girouard v. United States*, 328 U.S. 61, 69, "The test oath is **abhorrent** to our tradition." See *American Communications Assn. v. Douds*, 339 U.S. 382, 445 (dissenting opinion). The reason for that **abhorrence** is the supremacy of conscience in our constitutional scheme. As we stated in *Board of Education v. Barnette*, 319 U.S. 624, 642, "If there is any fixed star in our constitutional constellation, it is that no official, high or petty, can prescribe what shall be orthodox in politics, nationalism, religion, or other matters of opinion or force citizens to confess by word or act their faith therein."*

*There is no power in our Government to make one bend his religious scruples to the requirements of this tax law.*

#### Ullmann v. United States, 350 U.S. 422 (1956)

*The forfeiture of property on compelled testimony is no more **abhorrent** than the forfeiture of rights of citizenship. Any forfeiture of rights as a result of compelled testimony is at war with the Fifth Amendment.*

*The Court apparently distinguishes the *Boyd* case on the ground that the forfeiture of property was a penalty affixed to a criminal act. The loss of a job and the ineligibility for a passport are also penalties affixed to a criminal act.*

#### Girouard v. U.S., 328 U.S. 61 (1946)

*The struggle for religious liberty has through the centuries been an effort to accommodate the demands of the State to the conscience of the individual. The victory for freedom of thought recorded in our Bill of Rights recognizes that in the domain of conscience there is a moral power higher than the State. Throughout the ages men have suffered death rather than subordinate their allegiance to God to the authority of the State. Freedom of religion guaranteed by the First Amendment is the product of that struggle. As we [328 U.S. 61, 69] recently stated in *United States v. Ballard*, 322 U.S. 78, 86, 64 S.Ct. 882, 886, 'Freedom of thought, which includes freedom of religious belief, is basic in a society of free men.*

*West Virginia State Board of Education v. Barnette*, 319 U.S. 624 , 63 S.Ct. 1178, 147 A.L.R. 674.' The test oath is **abhorrent** to our tradition. Over the years Congress has meticulously respected that tradition and even in time of war has sought to accommodate the military requirements to the religious scruples of the individual. We do not believe that Congress intended to reverse that policy when it came to draft the naturalization oath. Such an abrupt and radical departure from our traditions should not be implied. See *Schneiderman v. United States*, 320 U.S. 118, 132 , 63 S.Ct. 1333, 1340. Cogent evidence would be necessary to convince us that Congress took that course.

*West Virginia State Board of Education v. Barnette*, 319 U.S. 624

*Religious faiths, honestly held, do not free individuals from responsibility to conduct themselves obediently to laws which are either imperatively necessary to protect society as a whole from grave [319 U.S. 624, 644] and pressingly imminent dangers or which, without any general prohibition, merely regulate time, place or manner of religious activity. Decision as to the constitutionality of particular laws which strike at the substance of religious tenets and practices must be made by this Court. The duty is a solemn one, and in meeting it we cannot say that a failure, because of religious scruples, to assume a particular physical position and to repeat the words of a patriotic formula creates a grave danger to the nation. Such a statutory exaction is a form of test oath, and the test oath has always been **abhorrent** in the United States.*

*Words uttered under coercion are proof of loyalty to nothing but self- interest. Love of country must spring from willing hearts and free minds, inspired by a fair administration of wise laws enacted by the people's elected representatives within the bounds of express constitutional prohibitions. These laws must, to be consistent with the First Amendment, permit the widest toleration of conflicting viewpoints consistent with a society of free men.*

*Neither our domestic tranquillity in peace nor our martial effort in war depend on compelling little children to participate in a ceremony which ends in nothing for them but a fear of spiritual condemnation. If, as we think, their fears are groundless, time and reason are the proper antidotes for their errors. The ceremonial, when enforced against conscientious objectors, more likely to defeat than to serve its high purpose, is a handy implement for disguised religious persecution. As such, it is inconsistent with our Constitution's plan and purpose.*

*Boyd v. U.S.*, 116 U.S. 616 (1886)

And any compulsory discovery by extorting the party's oath, or compelling the production of his [116 U.S. 616, 632] private books and papers, to convict him of crime, or to forfeit his property, is contrary to the principles of a free government. It is **abhorrent** to the instincts of an Englishman; it is abhorrent to the instincts of an American. It may suit the purposes of despotic power, but it cannot abide the pure atmosphere of political liberty and personal freedom.

*Cumming v. State of Missouri*, 71 U.S. 277 (1866), 71 U.S. 277 (Wall.)

Page 285: "Test oaths, in general, have been held odious in modern ages, for two reasons: one, because they were inquisitorial; and the other, because they were used as instruments of proscription and cruelty. In both respects they are contrary to the spirit, at least, of our institutions, and are indefensible, except when applied to matters outside of the domain of rights, and when prospective in their operation. Whatever the people may give or withhold at will, they may have a constitutional right to burden with any condition they please. This is at once the origin and extent of the rule. "

Page 287: "The imposition of this oath was, however, intended as a punishment."

### 2.3 A perjury oath is always a religious ceremony.

Including perjury oaths on forms.

Raising your Hand(s) often symbolize an oath. Examples: Genesis 14:22, Ezekiel 17:18, Ezekiel 36:7 and Daniel 12:7. And so it is to this very day; an oath is performed with your right hand raised. An oath is always a religious ritual. Your Bible prohibits taking an oath to a pagan state god.

Except for Quakers who had other objections, oaths might have been acceptable back when the church was the state, but this is now contrary to the Christian religion. Christ tells us to "swear not" Matthew 5:34, also see James 5:12.

At the beginning of his ministry, after Christ fasted in the wilderness for forty days, he was tempted by the devil, Luke 4:6-8. The devil made him an offer: All worldly power of "all the kingdoms in the world" is available if you but worship the devil. (parallel verse in Matthew 4:9 equates bow down – assume a body position to Satan – is worship) Notice that Christ, in his rebuttal, equated worship with a duty to serve.

An oath is a form of worship. An oath creates a duty to serve. Every elected public officer must swear an oath to serve a superior (which was once a Godly superior, before the overthrow of government). Other Examples: once you sign a driver license, voter registration, W-4 form, school registration, etc. you then have a duty to serve a superior. You must then respond to a jury summons, in which you will be forced to provide private data about yourself. You cannot then protest that you have a right to privacy, because you waived your right. You cannot protest that you have a right to earn wages, because you don't. You waived your right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable.

Throughout the history of Christianity, forced registration was persecution. The Anabaptists would rather be burned at the stake than to register their children, knowing that their orphans would be raised by the pagans that killed them. But today's self-called "Christian" will demand a birth certificate and a public education. Can you spot the difference?

Christians are advised not to take oaths in James 5:12 and Matthew 5:33-34, but men take oaths only to superiors (Hebrews 6:16). You are subordinate to whomever you take an oath.

When taking oaths to your superiors, you must invoke the authority of God. You cannot invoke the Lord's name for evil intent, which would include a false oath, or bearing false witness.

Pagans take oaths to someone higher than themselves - their god. Your Bible prohibits taking an oath to their god, or to any pagan state. If your Bible can call Satan a god (2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 4:4) then your government can too. And, by the way, the law that required the words "In God we Trust" to appear on all your money was a law passed in 1955.

It wasn't until March 13, 1878 that oaths were even allowed in federal courts (chapter 37, 20 Statute 30). It was entirely voluntary, and the accused had to actually request to take an oath. Everything is backwards now. Refusing to swear to their false god is contempt of court and is again\* a presumption of guilt. Contempt of court can land you in jail for the rest of your life, without a trial of any kind.

\* There is a long history of oaths to tell the truth.

The Oath or Affirmation by Robert Hallstrom. Gospel Ministry Publications, page 13:

*"... an oath to tell the truth, was established by the Lateran Council of 1215 as part of the system of inquiry and information against heretics. Informers of the inquisition were frequently paid and initiated the proceedings. The action began by demanding from the victim the oath to tell the truth. If the victim hesitated, he was asked whether he regarded the oath in court as a sin. If the victim answered in the affirmative or refused to take the oath, he was deemed a proven heretic (Decretal of Pope Gregory IX, bk. 5, tit. 7, ch. 13, section 7, 1600)"*



In 1698 under Pope Innocent XII, Franciscus Memmius To Tell the Truth Cases of Criminal Law No. 115 and 203: Such oath to tell the truth is the gravest torture, more cruel than bodily torture, in that it tortures the soul by inflicting a fear of dishonoring God's name. Eventually, in 1725 the oath to tell the truth was abolished by the Council of Rome. -- Catholic University of American Canon Law Studies No. 110 (1937).

There was a time in your once-great nation where swearing an oath to God that you were innocent, called an oath of purgation, would put an immediate halt to any criminal proceedings against you. This is based on Hebrews 6:16: "Men swear by someone greater than themselves, and the oath confirms what is said and puts an end to all argument."

An affirmation is the same as an oath, except it omits a reference to God. It is for atheists. See Torcasso v. Maryland, 367 U.S. 488. Christians cannot affirm, nor swear oaths. The government, as in Torcasso, thinks affirmation is for atheists. The Anabaptists and Quakers claim it is for religious people who have allegiance to a source higher than secular authorities. Either way, the refusal to worship a judge is considered by them to be anti-government. But they will allow you to burn just a little incense. See the British Oath Act of 1888 ([source](#), top of last page)

\* "The Oath or Affirmation" by Robert Hallstrom. [Gospel Ministry Publications, P.O. Box 9411, Boise Idaho 83707]

The penalty of perjury oath on your 1040 form is an oath prohibited for Christians, if we are all created equal.

Along the same line as worship, oaths are forbidden by Matthew 5:33-34, and James 5:12.

Yet it is now a felony if you refuse to worship a judge with your oath. Look up your state's crime of

*"Obstruction of justice. A person commits the offense of obstruction of justice if the person intentionally engages in the following conduct: When called as a witness .... shall refuse to testify or be qualified as a witness when duly directed to testify or be qualified as a witness."*

Oaths, being a form of worship, are only offered by the inferior toward the superior, per Hebrews 6:16. A salute, such as raising your right hand when being sworn into a public office, is worship and is only offered by the inferior toward the superior. You won't understand this yet, but your elected servants must take an oath of office to acknowledge their subordinate position. They are not AUTHORITIES, they are subordinates. The government (civil servants) cannot gain control over their masters. They only have jurisdiction over those who submit to them. What part don't you understand? What form did you sign to submit to them?

Although the application for a social security number no longer has a printed perjury oath above the signature, it has the legal presumption, and is equivalent to an oath because there is a punishment associated with false swearing. You are presumed to know this law.

## 2.4 Can you sell your soul with a signature?

Just how subtle must worship be in order to violate the first and second commandments?

Can worship of graven images be as simple as a signature under penalty of perjury? After all, every dictionary and encyclopedia tells us that an oath is a religious ceremony. You bind your soul with an oath (Numbers 30:2, Numbers 30:10, Leviticus 5:4). The simplest form of oath is to raise your hand. (Genesis 14:22, Deuteronomy 32:40, Daniel 12:7). An oath is a form of worship.

A perjury oath signature is a religious ceremony. If raising your hand is sufficient to bind your soul, how much more so is a perjury oath signature on a permanent irrevocable government form? Especially a form declaring (changing) your allegiance to a manmade (graven) lordship? The application for a Social Security Card is a form that exists only for the purpose of section 205(c)(2)(B) of the Social Security Act. It is a confession that you are unable to take care of yourself and request relief under any program funded in whole or in part by federal treasury funds.

Latin word *juro* - oath

Latin word *diction* - spoken

Jurisdiction is created by a spoken oath. If you saw the movie Braveheart you will understand why a painful execution is preferable to a spoken oath of allegiance. Scotland is a free country today because William Wallace understood what allegiance oaths are.

Throughout the history of Christianity, there have been a brave few who refused to worship the state god. They refused to affirm that Caesar was lord. They were fed to the lions. When Emperor Decius issued an edict commanding sacrifice to their gods, those who wanted to live were allowed to burn just a little incense. They were then issued a certificate of compliance. They complied with federal law.

However, those who refused to acknowledge this lordship went to their deaths. They stood. I'm sure these saints were told by many people that, as Christians, they were to obey their Government, and that Government is ordained by higher authority (falsely misconstruing Romans 13:1), and that burning incense was not really worship, and that they would be martyrs without a cause if they persist in their silly beliefs.

You too were asked to burn just a little incense. What was your response? You were asked to sign an oath, under penalty of perjury, to your new lord. Those who did receive a certificate (ID credential) that allows them to buy and sell.

Did you worship, with your oath, a mighty provider instead of the Lord? A Christian cannot serve a substitute lord. This is the first and great commandment. Matthew 22:37, Mark 12:30, and Luke 10:27. Obedience to a substitute Lord is mutiny against the true Lord.

Why would you bet your eternal salvation that you are not in any way forced to worship (with a perjury oath signature) a beast in order to qualify for the privilege of buying and selling?

Just how subtle does worship have to be in order to violate the first and second commandments? Before we examine this question, let's find out what is known about Beasts and marks and images and worship and perjury oaths.

## 2.5 What is a Beast?

This chapter suggests that the beast that issues the mark (the second beast that is introduced in Revelation 13:11) is not an individual. Further proofs are presented in later chapters. Since it is your duty to avoid deception, you must carefully study all possibilities and arrive at your own conclusion.

The word “antichrist” never appears anywhere in the book of Revelation.

Revelation chapter 13 mentions two beasts. The beast introduced in Revelation 13:1 is called “the first beast” in Revelation 13:12. The first beast of Revelation 13 resembles, and is most likely, the fourth "exceedingly dreadful" Beast of Daniel 7. This first beast is not the beast associated with the mark.

For a good study of Daniel 7, read [www.bibleonly.org](http://www.bibleonly.org) commentary on Daniel chapter 7.

The 10 horn beast of Revelation 13:1 has all attributes of the beasts in Daniel 7. In Revelation 13 an endtime confederation of Daniel’s beasts (like unto a leopard-bear-lion with 7 heads and 10 horns) has been assimilated by Daniel’s fourth exceedingly dreadful (Daniel 7:19) iron beast, that was to take away the dominion of other beast powers (Daniel 7:12), consume and trample down the whole earth and break it to pieces (verse 23).

In the Bible Horns symbolize kings and Beasts symbolize kingdoms. According to DIVINE interpretation, by angels, in Daniel 7:24, Daniel 8:20 and in Revelation 17:12, horns symbolize kings. Therefore the first beast’s 10 horns most likely symbolize 10 kings that came out of the beast kingdom, either successive kings or concurrent kings.

Throughout Bible prophecy, angels tell us that beasts symbolize governments (Daniel 7:23, and in Revelation 17:17, 19:19). DIVINE interpretation, from an angel, in Daniel 7:23 equates Daniel’s final beast with a final world kingdom (which suggests a government, empire, or dynasty rather than an individual king), perhaps including successive governments. Not necessarily a king. Not a man, not an antichrist, not a church.

And indeed, throughout history, beasts symbolize kingdoms. Even today: The United States is symbolized by an eagle, England by a lion, and Russia by a bear, Germany by a panther.

In Revelation 13 an endtime confederation of beasts that has been assimilated by Daniel’s fourth exceedingly dreadful iron beast, that took away the dominion of other beast powers. This brutal beast kingdom lets the two horned second beast introduced in Revelation 13:11 issue the dreaded mark of the beast in Revelation 13:16. This 10-horned brutal first beast (Revelation 13:12 calls it “the first beast”) does not issue the mark. The two-horned second beast is the beast that is causing all to receive the “mark of the beast” in Revelation 13:16.

The first beast is often equated with the Roman Empire. This interpretation is consistent with Nebuchadnezzar’s iron legs final world kingdom mentioned in Daniel 2:40. Do you have a mark issued by the authority of a final world power that is a confederation of Daniel’s Beast powers? The answer may surprise you. After the American Revolutionary War, England’s King George III and Benjamin Franklin signed a treaty that authorizes the U.S. to exist. In this treaty, the king explicitly used his title as arch treasurer to both the Roman Empire AND the United States of America. Does this very same arch treasurer issue or authorize Social Security Cards to Americans?

Beasts symbolize kingdoms, horns symbolize kings

There is NO proof that the final beast kingdom is a church, a king, a man, or an antichrist. All we can rely upon are the points of identification in the Bible.

Summary so far:

Beasts symbolize kingdoms (governments). In Revelation 13 an endtime confederation of Daniel’s beasts (like unto a leopard-bear-lion with 7 heads and 10 horns – with the notable exception of whatever nation was symbolized by the missing eagle wings) has been assimilated by Daniel’s fourth exceedingly dreadful (Dan 7:19) iron beast, that was to take away the dominion of other beast powers (Dan 7:12), consume and trample down the whole earth and break it to pieces

(verse 23). In Daniel 7:21 and Revelation 13:7 this beast kingdom has influence over all nations, and overcomes saints. This brutal kingdom lets the two-horned beast kingdom introduced by Revelation 13:11 issue the dreaded mark of the beast in Revelation 13:16.

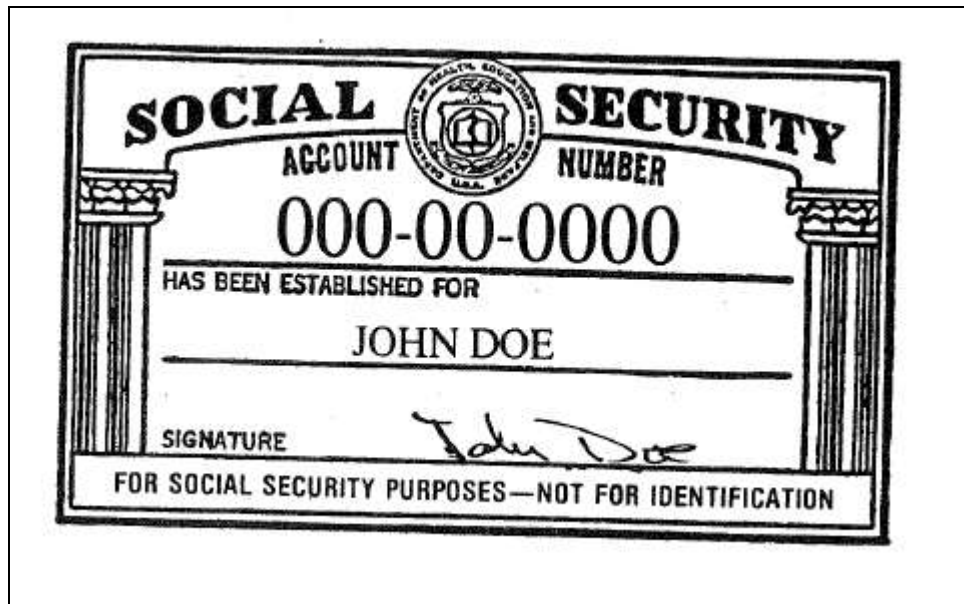
## 2.6 What is a Mark?

The purpose of this chapter is to suggest that the Mark might not be a mark physically in the skin. A later chapter will present details. Since it is your duty to avoid deception, you must carefully study all possibilities and arrive at your own conclusion.

The word *mark* in the book of Revelation is translated from the Greek *charagma* (*Strong's Concordance* G5480) which can mean etching, stamp, badge of servitude or “sculptured figure (statue):- graven, mark.” To avoid jumping to conclusions, a prudent person will not flippantly dismiss any kind of “mark”. Let’s examine the possibilities, then you can use your own judgment to conclude which ones have merit and which ones can be ruled out.

- In the King James Bible the 9 occurrences of the Greek word *charagma* are translated into either of two English words: *mark* and *graven*.
- Many people concentrate on the “etching” definition and insist that the mark involves a breaking of the skin, and since that hasn’t happened, therefore the mark is not here yet. But such an interpretation must ignore the symbolic meaning of the right hand or forehead. Marks have been on foreheads ever since Ezekiel 9:4 yet some people still adamantly vehemently absolutely insist that the mark is a physical etching of the skin and therefore it must be in the future. Etching can also refer to a graven badge such as you see on the forehead of every uniform’s cap. The five other Biblical occurrences of marks that are on both foreheads and hands never refer to physical marks. We will study these marks in another chapter.
- The “stamp” definition could symbolize “government authorization or credential” such as the official rubber stamps that authorize documents today. Do not overlook ID cards as government credential “stamps”. Official documents are stamped with an embossed seal, as are notarized documents, to symbolize government authorization. At entertainment events, it is likely that you’ve accepted a physical stamp on your right hand, as a form of authorization. And even metallic badges are “stamped” out (duplicated) by machines. Later in this essay, I will discuss the patent for the printing process that stamps out Social Security Cards.
- As for the “badge of servitude” definition: In ancient Rome slaves carried a “badge of servitude”, which was often just an imprint (stamped) of the master’s family seal baked in clay. It protected the slave from unwarranted detention as he traveled on errands for his master. Transactions were conducted in the name of the master, and the master would be held liable for the acts of his servants. Even today: you could be detained if you cannot show ID, and merchants might not conduct commerce without proof that you have some master’s authority to exist. In today’s commercial law this is known as a *presentment warranty*. As today’s badge of servitude, the Social Security Card, or ID obtained with it, certainly serves this same purpose.
- This “badge of servitude” can take several forms, all of which display a permission, from a master, to lawfully present oneself in public. The Greek word for authority *exousia*, is from the root word *exon*. This Greek *Exon* is the right to lawfully present oneself in public. According to Encarta, the Roman Empire adapted the Phrygian cap (liberty cap) as a method to identify freed slaves. They were given a liberty cap so that they would not be detained in public. And again: A badge on every uniform’s cap still serves this purpose.
- What about an ID card or authorization number? Do you need a master’s mark, name or number in order to lawfully present yourself in public? Is it a mark of a beast (government) power?
- As for the graven figure possibility, I will mention throughout this essay the many graven monuments, frescos and statues that symbolize Satan’s takeover of the earth. Including the pyramid on the back of every dollar bill.

Note that all of the above Marks are made by masters to protect servants while they are on duty in public.



And indeed, Federal Rules of Evidence Rule 902(7) allows marks such as “inscriptions, signs, tags, or labels... indicating ownership, control, or origin” to be automatically admissible in court. And Evidence Rule 201(c) allows the judge to consider your ownership even if he was not requested to do so. They don’t even have to tell you that you are their property.

Throughout history those who accept welfare are reduced to what we call today “human resources”. 2nd Peter 2:3 (KJV) "And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you..."

It is true that a physical mark was placed, as a mark of the Lord, on a visible part (or parts) of Cain in Genesis 4:15 so that he could present himself in public. Ever since then, Marks placed on foreheads have symbolized the Lord’s protection, starting at Ezekiel 9:4.

References to marks on hand and forehead have been metaphors of the Lord’s protection, even though the marks are non-physical. If you are going to absolutely insist that the mark of the beast must be a mark physically in the skin, then you must first explain away all the Bible’s marks that are non-physical yet in foreheads and hands: Exodus 13:8-9, Exodus 13:15-16, Deuteronomy 6:6-9, Deuteronomy 11:16-23, and Proverbs 7:1-3. We will study these in a later chapter. For now, notice that each of these marks are non-physical yet in the forehead and hand, and they all involve teaching children about Biblical law. Teaching your children about Biblical law is a mark of the Lord’s protection. Whereas, the beast teaches that its laws are protecting you.

Isaiah 8:16 bind up thy testimony, seal the law. The word “bind” is used in three of the five Old Testament references to marks on hands and foreheads.

As you can see, there are many possible forms that the mark could take. Until you have the proof to rule out other types of marks, don’t blindly presume that it must be an implant or tattoo.

## 2.7 What is a Name?

The purpose of this chapter is to introduce you to John the Revelator's terminology suggesting the beast's authority. Keep in mind that the only proper translation is the intent of the original author. Since it is your duty to avoid deception, you must carefully study all possibilities and arrive at your own conclusion.

The New International Version of the Bible has identified the mark of the beast as being either the name of the beast or the number of his name. So the prudent student should seek to learn more about this name.

*Revelation 13:17 (NIV) so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark, **which is the name of the beast or the number of his name.***

The original Greek word in the Bible that is translated as the English word "name" is the Greek "onoma" which, according to Strong's Concordance, is derived from a word that literally or figuratively means "authority, character". Strong's then defines the word as meaning "- called, name" with no further definition

The Greek Lexicon published in the Baker Interlinear New Testament says under the definition of Onoma "the name of a person is a mark of what he himself is, the name expresses the character"

Revelation 13:17's KJV mark of the beast, or the name (onoma) of the beast or the number of his name (onoma) are three references to the beast authority.

Giving away your name diminishes your authority. Don't give away your name. "the name of a person is a mark of what he himself is" Celebrities have the right to control the use of their name and likeness. So do you.

The LORD would not give His name to Moses. He does not give his esteem to another (Isaiah 42:8). Thou shalt not take his name in vain.

Moses asked the Lord Almighty for his name. In Exodus 3:14 the response was "I AM THAT I AM". In the next verse HE added "this is my name forever, and this is my memorial unto [the name by which I am to be remembered by] all generations."

- Isaiah 42:8 "I am יהוה, (YHWH) that is My Name, and My esteem I do not give to another.
- Exodus 20:7 "You do not bring the Name of יהוה your Elohim to naught, for יהוה does not leave the one unpunished who brings His Name to naught.
- Zechariah 14:9 And יהוה shall be Sovereign over all the earth. In that day there shall be one יהוה, and His Name one.
- Act 4:12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.
- Proverbs 18:10 The name of the LORD (KJV has all caps YHWH) is a strong tower: the righteous runneth into it, and is safe.
- Zephaniah 3:9 For then will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the YHWH, to serve him with one consent.

Call upon His name - His ultimate authority, in Truth.

The word "name" means "authority". Examples:

If someone says the phrase "stop in the name of the law" they are saying: "Stop; by the authority of the law." If you sign your name, this signature is your authority and has legal consequences. Agents act in the name (=authority) of their principal. Examples: "whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved" in Acts 2:21 and Romans 10:13 and also 1 John 5:13 use the Greek *onoma* G3686 which means authority. Christ said blessed is he that comes in the name (*onoma*=authority) of the Lord. If you were to read: "Mark of the beast, OR the name of the beast, OR the number of his name" in Rev 13:17, then you would be reading three alternatives invoking the authority (Greek *onoma*) of the beast. More literally translated: The mark of the beast, or the authority of the beast or the number of its authority. Again: Name =

Authority. Taking the Lord's name in vain, means taking the Lord's authority in vain. Vain means devoid of worth. The Lord's name (*onoma*) will be put upon (*epi*) your forehead. Revelation 7:3 and 20:4. As Job said: Blessed be the name of the Lord. The ten-horned first beast that must be worshiped in order to get the mark has the name (*onoma*) of blasphemy on its heads.

Now that you know what "name" means: Is there a chance that you buy and sell with a mark (ID card) of a beast, or the authority of the beast, or the number of (of=created by) its authority?

If we are all created equal, then your authority to exist does not come from government. Not from an identification card, not from a birth certificate. Why then, do police ask for ID? Officials of the government, while on duty, get their authority to exist from government (have an engraved etching on the forehead of their uniform's cap). Police are seeking proof that you are under their same master's authority. If you have accepted the office of PERSON (see my chapter on the government definition of the term "person"), then you are within their government, subject to their law enforcement officer. If their law says so, you may even be required to carry government identification.

Revelation 14:11 Tyndale translation "... and they have no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the **print** of his name."



## 2.8 What is Christ's name

The Christ of the Bible is the Messiah. The anointed one.

*"The word "Christ" comes from the Latin "Kristos" and Greek khree-o, which means "smeared with oil." In Hebrew, the word is "mashach" which is much better translated "Messiah" (where the word "messiah" comes from, "mashiyach," which is the root), should be used, as seen in the 4 gospels when the Spirit spoke "this is my son in whom I am well pleased" (which was the manner in which priesthood is bestowed, at the time of the anointing with oil). He was the "anointed one."*

Christ's prophecy predicts a time when we are to be put in prisons, delivered up authorities to be afflicted, delivered to counsels for persecution, all "*for my name's sake*". Luke 21:12, Matthew 24:9, Mark 13:9, 13.

But there is no other name under heaven whereby we must be saved. Acts 4:12

## 2.9 Is a perjury oath a form of worship?

Oaths are taken to superiors. Hebrews 6:16. Every salute is initiated by the inferior to the superior.

Christ said not to swear at all. Matthew 5:34. Swearing, in the Bible, began with Abraham swearing with seven sacrifices that he would treat king Abimelech justly. Genesis 21:30

You now know enough to determine for yourself whether or not you worship graven images. But first we must confirm that a perjury oath signature is worship.

Keep in mind that every dictionary and encyclopedia tells us that an oath is a religious ceremony. A perjury oath signature is a religious ceremony. Swearing is a religious ceremony. And raising your right hand is a religious ceremony. A salute is a religious ceremony. You bind your soul with an oath (Numbers 30:2, Numbers 30:10, Leviticus 5:4). The simplest form of oath is to raise your hand. (Genesis 14:22, Deuteronomy 32:40, Daniel 12:7). An oath is a form of worship, the secular term is "salute". Raising your hand to a judge is a salute, initiated by the inferior to the superior. Oaths are only taken to superiors. Hebrews 6:16. In a nation where everyone is created equal, no one would ever raise his hand to a judge. William Tell refused to salute Judge Gessler.

Throughout history oaths have been a form of worship. Some require the raising of a hand (the assuming of a body position) and sometimes no physical position is required. As with salute-worship, it is initiated by the inferior to the superior. This has always been so -- see Hebrews 6:16. It is what grants jurisdiction. It is worship of a lord<sup>2</sup>. Voluntary perjury oath signatures on paper are still all that is necessary in a government court today.

Let's take a look at history.

In Roman times gladiators assumed a physical position while pledging allegiance. In medieval times a fealty oath granted absolute *in personam* jurisdiction to your lord<sup>2</sup>. And so it remains to this very day: Lords grant fiefs to vassals in exchange for fealty.

<sup>2</sup>: Worship of a superior (lord) could be contrary to the first commandment and third commandment, depending upon the chain of command.

Oaths are abhorrent

In 1886 the U.S. Supreme Court in *Boyd v. United States*, [116 U.S. 616](#) at page 632 explains that "any compulsory discovery by extorting the party's oath... is **abhorrent** to the instinct of an American."

In 1966 the U.S. Supreme Court acknowledged that Miranda's famous right to remain silent comes from a long history of resistance to Star Chamber Oaths. The right to remain silent is a right to avoid oaths. It is the foundation of the Fifth Amendment. The Levellers main tenant was that refusal to take an oath was an unalienable right beyond the reach of any jurisdiction. Christ said "**swear not at all**" and the Supreme Court in *Miranda v. Arizona* 384 U.S. 436, at page 459, in footnote 27 acknowledged that the Fifth Amendment evolved from a 13<sup>th</sup> century law commentary that "*the principle that no man is to be declared guilty of his own admission is a divine decree*"

A pledge of allegiance is a voluntary test oath that requires the assuming of a physical position. In 1943, the Supreme Court in *Board of Education v. Barnette* prohibited mandatory pledge of allegiance. They ruled, 319 U.S. 624 at page 644, that "*a failure, because of religious scruples, to assume a particular physical position and to repeat the words of a patriotic formula*" is a legal right, because if the pledge were mandatory, it would be a prohibited test oath, prohibited by the Constitution. The Supreme Court said that "*Such a statutory exaction is a form of test oath, and the test oath has always been **abhorrent** in the United States.*"

Forced oaths are abhorrent because an oath must be voluntary.

The Quakers reject all forced liturgy, including oath taking. They say that all liturgies are mindless superstitions, contrary to freewill that God gave us, and abominable idolatry in the sight of God.

In 1984 a federal court in *Quaring v. Peterson*, 728 F.2d. 1121, ruled that state driver licenses must be issued without a photograph if there is a religious objection. This case was a graven image objection to the photograph, not a worship objection to **posing** for a government camera. Posing still requires the assuming of a physical position toward the superior, which is traditional worship. But, unlike welfare or voting, a license should not require a fealty oath. It shouldn't even require a Social Security Number according to Ruth Bader Ginsburg in *Leahy v. District of Columbia*, 833 F.2d. 1046.

YOUR GLOBAL ID IS ALREADY IN YOUR WALLET

Driver license and state ID laws must now conform to 18 international benchmarks,

Including taking a digital face photograph that meets UN face recognition standards, even if the ID is not issued with a photo.

<http://www.ncsl.org/documents/standcomm/sctran/InterimBenchmarks.pdf>

The Homeland Security regulation requiring IDs meet UN biometric standards was published in The Notice of Proposed Rulemaking in Federal Register March, 2007:

*“17 The relevant ICAO standard is ICAO 9303 Part 1 Vol 2, specifically ISO/IEC 19794-5 - Information technology - Biometric data interchange formats - Part 5: Face image data, which is incorporated into ICAO 9303.”*

L1 Identity Systems, Inc. <http://www.l1id.com/> provides equipment and software used to produce State licenses and U.S. Passports that meet all global standards. L1 has been sold to a French company, Safran, that is one-third owned by the French government. Your biometric data and proof of allegiance (as collateral for the national debt) is now partially owned by the European Union. Welcome to your Novus Ordo Seclorum.

THE BATTLE AGAINST INTERNATIONAL ID

<http://www.homelandsecuritynewswire.com/oklahoma-woman-battles-against-real-id>

## 2.10 What is an image?

The purpose of the next three chapters is to prove that manmade (graven) images can include all forms of artificial entities.

There is nothing immoral about graven images themselves. These graven images are not a problem until you are commanded to worship them.

In Revelation 13:14 the two-horned beast kingdom deceptively, perhaps even politely, asks the people of the earth to make an image (Greek *icon*) to honor another beast kingdom, most likely the ten-horned beast kingdom that verse 12 called “the first beast”. Deception is mentioned as the only motive behind this request. Blasphemy is not mentioned as the motive. War is not mentioned. Religion is not mentioned. Only deception. Any deception that fits these prophecies cannot be flippantly dismissed.

An image need not be an inanimate carved idol. After all, mankind was made in the image of God (according to Genesis 1:27 & 9:6), and no one argues that mankind is an inanimate idol.

The word “image” is translated from the Greek word *icon*, which means *profile, representation, resemblance, or depiction*. Today, without even thinking about it, we speak of manmade (graven) images in everyday speech when we refer to artificial abstractions. There are plenty of examples. Corporations are called “artificial entities.” We use the term “representative government” without questioning that it is indeed a manmade representation (icon) that needs a voice that commands people to do things. Constituents' representatives represents (speak for) them. Lawyers represent (speak for) others.

In Revelation 13:15 the two-horned beast gives breath to the beast image. What could this mean?

- Revelation 13:15 NKJV: “He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. “
- Revelation 13:15 Tyndale translation: “he had power to give a spirit unto the image of the beast, and that the image of the beast should speak...”

In today’s legal language an artificial entity is considered to be a person. IT is given LIFE. Look up the word person in your State’s laws. For Example: In the federal tax laws, back at the end of the book in Chapter 79, there are 19 pages of definitions -- “person” is the first definition.

Life is breathed into corporations, governments and indeed any plural group, team, committee, association, cooperative, etc. \*

Revelation 13:15 continues. The two-horned beast breathes life into the beast image **and gives it a voice**. What could this mean?

Just as an attorney must speak for an artificial corporation, just as “Legislature” is a manmade (graven) icon that speaks for society, just as “jury” is a manmade (graven) icon that speaks for society: A public officer must speak for that office, he is the representative (root word *represent*) for his office. Image = icon = artificial manmade abstraction = representation.

Nominating Saul to be King rejected God’s lordship. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7.

Electing Saul as a King (representative) to speak for the nation was evil in the eyes of the Lord. 1 Sam 12:17 even though he was only one level of abstraction from the real, with no intervening artificial anything.

The two horned beast of Revelation 13:11 that is allowed by the first beast kingdom to issue the mark, asks us, in verse 14, to create an image of a beast that is worshipped and has a voice according to verse 15. Could it be a government or a corporation?

\* I want to add a warning about group thinking. Group collectivism in all its forms (socialism, communism, fascism, democracy) cannot recognize that we are endowed with unalienable rights that are to be secured by government. Don't surrender to their jurisdiction. Don't be fooled when socialism is portrayed as compassion. Your right to wages will be determined by how much bureaucrats want to take. Your right to rationed resources will be restricted by regulation. Failure will be rewarded and honest toil will be punished. The Almighty condemned you to earn your bread by the sweat of your face. Their man-made (graven) god did not.

### 2.10.1 Do you Worship graven images?

The purpose of the next four chapters is to define worship so that you will recognize the worship of graven images, contrary to the second commandment.

Summary so far:

- The terminology “Graven image” refers to manmade representation.
- According to the Supreme Court, manmade government is a fiction, an artificial entity, a “*legal imagination*” and a “*mental conception*”
- Oaths, such as a perjury oath, are worship of a graven image.

Before the mark of the beast is issued in Revelation 13:16, there must first be worship of a Beast image<sup>1</sup>, according to the previous two verses.

<sup>1</sup>. Later, in Revelation 14:9-11, after the fall of Babylon, anyone who worships the Beast image and whosoever receiveth the mark shall drink the undiluted wrath of God (which is not necessarily eternal damnation, it could symbolize the everlasting consequence of your enforceable contract, within the sight of the Lamb). Revelation 14:12 then contrasts this consequence of the mark, with saints who “keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.”

The book of Revelation is very symbolic, and not necessarily literal. Yet, many of the people who have already received a banking authorization number that allows them to buy or sell, are waiting for forced worship of a physical inanimate idol before they will admit that the mark could be here. Some people insist that this worship (in verses 4, 8, 12, and 15) refers to church worship only, therefore the Beast will be a church. (ignoring that spiritual forces are at work promoting both counterfeit religious beliefs and counterfeit secular beliefs.)

A rational study of prophecy would not flippantly dismiss logic that agrees with prophecy.

### 2.10.2 Supreme Court Confirms Government Is A Graven Image

No one can create a superior. Attempts to create a superior would be blasphemy and idol worship. When an artificially created superior demands worship, then you know that we are in the End Times.

We live among atheists that demean our worship of an invisible LORD, while they themselves insist that their imaginary graven image is real.

#### 2.10.2.1 What is a graven image ?

The Ten Commandments “graven image” in Exodus 20:4 is the Hebrew *pecel* meaning “carved image”

The **only** New Testament mention of the English word “graven” is in Acts 17:29. It is translated from the Greek *charagma*:

- The King James Version translates this Greek word *charagma* as the English word “graven” – “... *graven by art and man’s device.*”
- The NIV translates this Greek word *charagma* as the English word “image” – “ *an image made by man’s design and skill.*”

The Greek word *charagma* is also the very same word that is translated as “mark” in Revelation 13’s dreaded mark of the beast. It is an image of the beast. [of = belonging to].

Regardless of what country you’re in: Did you swear (contrary to Matthew 5:34 and James 5:12) allegiance to a great provider other than the Lord (contrary to the 1st and 2nd Commandments), to get a banking authorization card (only issued

to socialists who covet benefits and want others to provide their needs) so that you could buy and sell? Would a Christian do that?

We know from the 1793 U.S. Supreme Court case *Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 U.S. 419 at pages 447-448 that States are corporations. The law even calls them artificial entities. That's right! States are manmade (graven) artificial entities.

*447: "inasmuch as a State is made subject to the judicial power of Congress, its sovereignty must not stand in the way of the proper exercise of that power, and, therefore, in all such cases (though in no other) a State can only be considered as a subordinate corporation..., not only each State singly, but even the United States may without impropriety be termed 'corporations.'*

The Supreme Court in *Rundle v. Delaware & Raritan Canal* 55 U.S. 80 at page 98 not only stated that corporations are "artificial, incorporeal, theoretical, and invisible creations," it even called them "**a mere creature of the mind, invisible and intangible**,".

U.S. Supreme Court in *State Tax Commission of Utah v. Aldrich*, 316 U.S. 174, 187:

*"Today's new rule emphasizes the dominance of the corporation, a creature of the legal imagination. [Foot Note 2]..."*

*[Foot Note 2] "A corporation is defined by John Marshall as "An artificial being, invisible, intangible, and existing only in contemplation of law." *Trustees of Dartmouth College v. Woodward*, 4 Wheat. 518, 636. The New York Court of Appeals has said: 'A corporation, however, is a mere conception of the legislative mind, it exists only on paper through the command of the Legislature that its mental conception shall be clothed with power.' *People v. Knapp*, 206 N.Y. 373, 381, 99 N.E. 841, 844"*

It seems to me that this fits right into Revelation 13:15 giving power into the image that the image should speak.

All States are corporations; we still call them "artificial entities". The Supreme Court recognized that corporations have special powers that were not delegated<sup>3</sup> by their creators (constituents). By the means of enforceable contracts, these mere creatures of the mind have been given the authority to bind everyone to the obligations they invent<sup>4</sup>.

<sup>3</sup>. 1852 U.S. Supreme Court decision in *Rundle v. The Delaware And Raritan Canal Company*, 55 U.S. 80, recognized over objections, that corporations have powers that we do not have:

*"[at page 98] a corporation, being not a natural person, but a mere creature of the mind, invisible and intangible, ... [102] cannot commit felony or other crime, neither can it be arrested or committed to prison..."*

<sup>4</sup>. 1795 U.S. Supreme Court in *Penhallow v. Doane*, 3 U.S. 55 at page 94:

*"representatives shall be chosen to act on the part of the whole. But when they do so, they decide for the whole, and not for themselves only."*

While I'm on the topic of powers not delegated to government, I want to point out that the painting on the ceiling of the Capitol rotunda depicts freemason George Washington as a god maker. (Latin *Apotheos* means "god maker") Satan's plan all along is to be like the most high (Isaiah 14:14).

One more proof that governments are graven images are (artificial entities) created by man: The U.S. Supreme Court in *Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 U.S. 419 says they are corporations created by men.

Lawyers refer to corporations as "artificial entities." They are graven images. They are fiction. "Freak" and not compatible with Law. (Edward Jenks *The Book of English Law* 118-119, P.B. Fairest editor, 6<sup>th</sup> edition 1967; and *The Elements of Jurisprudence* pages 350-351 by Thomas E. Holland 13<sup>th</sup> edition 1924).

As you can see, States are manmade (graven) hallucinations that exist only on paper. These hallucinations then voted in a constitutional convention to create the United States. Two levels of abstractions away from anything real. The United

States ceased to exist in 1860 when Congress disbanded without a majority. This was replaced by a corporation named “United States”, of questionable ownership, which, as a third level of abstraction, is the image that you worship.

That’s Right! The U.S. Supreme Court says that States are corporations, and all corporations are a mere creature of the mind, invisible and intangible. And you are obligated to obey them if they represent you.

Let’s compare these artificial entities with God’s idea of earthly government. For the first ten books of the Bible, the family patriarch was the head of each government. Then we elected a King. This was evil in the eyes of the Lord, 1 Samuel 12:17. But even a monarch has real power. Nowadays you are ruled by thoughts written on paper, a mere creature of the mind, invisible and intangible.

Repent. Get real.

Government is an artificial person, an abstraction, and a creature of the mind only. A government can interface only with other artificial persons. The imaginary, not being real, cannot reach out from its image-icon (cartoon). It can only deal with other artificial persons. No government, or it’s laws, agencies, or courts can concern itself with anything other than corporate, artificial persons and the contracts between them.

How do you like that? It is just as imaginary (root word “image”) as is any other graven image.

The non-living cartoon characters cannot come out of their cartoon to claim the living. You have to go to toon-town with a perjury oath and agree to be responsible for your all-capitalized NAME.

We are all created equal with no superior than our Creator. If you don’t understand this yet, here is a hint: civil servants cannot rule their masters (i.e., laws written by civil servants only apply to persons that swear oaths of allegiance to obey the civil servants). Another hint: the corporate artificial person with which government can concern itself is the all capitalized name that you have on your diver license, birth certificate, bank account, marriage license and any court documents. This all capitalized name is not even a proper noun. It is not the name of a person, place or thing. Your father gave you a proper noun, he did not give you an all capitalized designation. Honor your father and mother. It is not you. It is not even the name of a person, place or thing. It is a government corporation. Your corporation was created by an oath to your lord<sup>2</sup>. You cannot even speak for your corporate office; a lawyer must speak for the icon. You are incompetent inside toon-town and must be represented there (inside the hallucination) by a competent lawyer. So that you will be held responsible for your corporation's misconduct. <sup>2</sup> Worship of a superior (lord) could be contrary to the first commandment and third commandment, depending upon the chain of command. Such worship denies the Lordship of Christ.

Another hint: the people of federal territories created their state governments in order to free themselves from federal laws. When the people of Kentucky Territory decided to become a state, they were unsure how free they were. In 1799 Thomas Jefferson, in the [Kentucky Resolves](#), reassured the people of Kentucky that they were free from all federal laws except for the three laws mentioned in the U.S. Constitution.

Aside: I said that civil servants cannot rule their masters. Here are some examples. Back when we had a perfectly constitutional government, Andrew Jackson survived three duels BEFORE we elected him as President. And former Secretary of the Treasury Hamilton settled his dispute with vice-President Aaron Burr the same way. And David Terry CHIEF justice of the California Supreme Court defended himself on the dueling field against US Senator Broderick. Civil servants (judges) do not settle the disputes of their masters. Can you settle your own dispute, or are you forced into their Roman arena without any weapons?

Now you know why an attorney (government officer) must represent (speak for) his “incompetent” client’s corporate icon. You cannot speak as yourself. The beast can deal only with other artificial persons. They cannot deal with the tangible. You are “incompetent” because they cannot see you. (look up the word “*cognizance*” in a dictionary, then look it up in a Law dictionary).

Yet, imaginary governments, which can only deal with corporate, artificial persons execute real people. You are the one that agreed to be surety for (liable for) the acts of your corporate artificial person.



### 2.10.2.2 People are not “persons”

The plural of person is people. Not persons.

There is a maxim of law. *Homo vocabulum est; persona juris civilities.* "Man is a term of nature; person, of the civil law"

The legislated word *person* does indeed refer to natural people, but only to those who have a *status* within the government. The word *Person* also includes corporations, municipalities, universities, labor organizations, partnerships, trustees, legal representatives, and illegitimate children. And sometimes a viable fetus.

American Law and Procedure, Vol 13 (1910):

Page 137 "This word 'person' and its scope and bearing in the law, involving, as it does, legal fictions and also apparently natural beings, it is difficult to understand; but it is absolutely necessary to grasp, at whatever cost, a true and proper understanding to the word in all the phases of its proper use ... A person is here not a physical or individual person, but the status or condition with which he is invested... not an individual or physical person, but the status, condition or character borne by physical persons... The law of persons is the law of status or condition."

Page 162 "A moments reflection enables one to see that man and person cannot be synonymous, for there cannot be an artificial man, though there are artificial persons. Thus the conclusion is easily reached that the law itself often creates an entity or a being which is called a person; the law cannot create an artificial man, but it can and frequently does invest him with artificial attributes; this is his personality... the man-person; and abstract persons, which are fiction and which have no existence except in law; that is to say, those which are purely legal conceptions or creations."

People are not persons.

Church of Scientology v. U.S. Department of Justice (1979) 612 F2d 417 @425:

"the word 'person' in legal terminology is perceived as a general word which normally includes in its scope a variety of entities other than human beings., see e.g. 1, U.S.C. para 1."

All men are created equal. They remain equal until they make themselves unequal by swearing oaths of allegiance to artificial man-made (graven) images. Your *status* with the state makes you subject to the artificial State government.

Spoooner v. McConnell, 22 F. 939, 943: *"The sovereignty of a state does not reside in the persons who fill the different departments of its government, but in the People, from whom the government emanated; and they may change it at their discretion."*

That's right. There are no people in government. People are not persons.

In 1843 Spooner didn't think graven images could have a voice.

Cities are Municipal corporations. Nineteenth century American political theorist Lysander Spooner thought that the constitutional clause (Article 1, section 10) prohibiting any law that impairs the obligation of contracts was an acknowledgement of the natural right of men to make contracts. He wrote in his book *Constitutional Law Relative to Credit, Currency and Banking* (1843), section 16:

*"It is obvious that all these arguments in favor of laws controlling the obligation of contracts are urged almost entirely by men who have been in the habit of regarding the legislative authority as being nearly absolute - and who cannot realize the idea that 'the people' of this nation . . . should ordain it that their natural right to contract with each other, and 'the obligations of contracts' when made, should not be subjects of legislative caprice or discretion."*

The making of a contract, he said, was an "act of real persons," and was of necessity restricted to persons, for there were no others who could do so. Therefore, he declared, in section 20 of his *Banking* book:

*The idea of a joint, incorporeal being, made up of several real persons, is nothing but a fiction. It has no reality in it. It is a fiction adopted merely to get rid of the consequences of facts. An act of legislation*

*cannot transform twenty living, real persons into one joint, incorporeal being. After all the legislative juggling that can be devised, "the company" will still be nothing more, less or other, than the individuals composing the company. The idea of an incorporeal being, capable of carrying on banking operations, is ridiculous.*

Whom do you worship with your banking authorization number?

At least in the Biblical days, there was something tangible to bow down to. Now all they need is a third level of abstraction from a tangible created thing: "*a mere creature of the mind*". God does not tolerate the worship of graven images. Romans 1:25 *they worshiped and served the created things rather than the Creator ...*" verse 32 "*those who do such things are worthy of death*"

### **2.10.2.3 Quiz**

Have you, by your oaths, become an "artificial person" (their words, not mine) sufficient enough to grant jurisdiction in a criminal trial ?

Can you honestly argue that you do not have a name of (of=belonging to) a beast power?

Can you honestly argue that you do not have a mark (Greek *charagma*= image) of (of=belonging to) a beast power?

A right cannot be taxed. Do you have a right to sell your own labor?

### **2.10.2.4 Conclusions**

The Lord himself will give you strong delusion in proportion to the idols that you worship. Ezekiel 14:4 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:11. As society turns further away from the truth, the prohibition against idol worship is deemed silly. The Holy second commandment has become folly to today's society.

Example #1: William Tell refused to salute the hat of judge Gessler, who promptly sentenced him to death unless he could shoot an apple off his son's head. We would not have a Switzerland today if William Tell did not know that a salute was worship. Yet today's self-called Christians rise for judges, and raise their hands for judges, and swear oaths for judges, even though Christ said "*swear not at all*". Most of today's self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to salute a judge. Oaths are taken to superiors according to Hebrews 6:16. If we are all created equal, why take oaths to them?

Example # 2 "Braveheart" William Wallace chose execution rather than swear allegiance to King Edward I. Scotland would not be a free country if Wallace had pledged allegiance. Most of today's self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to pledge allegiance. They think nothing of pledging allegiance while claiming that they live free.

Example # 3 the Anabaptists from the 1520's – from whom we get today's Amish, Mennonites and Baptists – chose painful execution by burning at the stake and the resulting surrender of their orphans to the state, rather than register their children with the authorities (at infant baptism). Most of today's self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to register their children with the state. They line up to hand over the state's children to "*a mere creature of the mind*." The 1972 Supreme Court case of *Wisconsin v. Yoder*, 406 U.S. 205, determined that Amish "*300 years of consistent practice*" in raising their own children into their lifestyle was sufficient to overcome the State's status as a father (*parens patriae*), therefore States' education laws did not apply to them. And yet today's society thinks those silly Christians who refuse to pass their children through the fire to Molech should have their children taken from them.

Example #4: In 1637 John Lilburn risked death refusing to take a Star Chamber Oath. In 1966, the U.S. Supreme Court acknowledged that Miranda's famous Fifth Amendment right to remain silent perpetuates "*The lofty principles to which Lilburn had appealed during his trial...*" We have a fifth amendment because Lilburn risked death refusing an oath, yet most of today's self-called Christians would think it silly for anyone to risk martyrdom by refusing to take oaths. They knowingly sign perjury oaths on their 1040 tax forms, voter registrations, bank accounts, and job applications.

Example # 5: the Presbyterian covenanters of 1638 to 1688 endured great hardship, strife and civil wars to keep their religion. If they had obeyed their government, the monarch would likely still be supreme over America. Yet today's self-called Christians claim that they must obey government even when they are commanded to sin.

You are the guardian of your own morals. I will leave it up to you to conclude that you worship graven images.

Government is a manmade graven abstraction, a mere creature of the mind (their words, not mine).

Like Esau, you can, with an oath, sell your birthright for a bowl of stew (Genesis 25:33 – with no physical worship, just an oath). God hated Esau according to Romans 9:13 and Malachi 1:3. Enjoy the tranquility of servitude as you worship the imaginary hand that feeds you – (*benefactors* was the term that Christ used when he warned us “*not so among you*”) -- as you “*take the will of him on whom you depend*” as Blackstone so eloquently explained.

The judgment day is coming. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them.

Allegiance to graven images is mutiny against the one true God.

## 2.11 Obey Authority part 1: We are all created equal

Apostle Paul lived in a culture where many were pledging allegiance to brutal Roman military authority. In Romans 13:1 he tells us that we should be subject to legitimate authority, and that the ONLY legitimate authority is God-ordained authority.

Romans 13:1.

*“Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God”*

This does not refer to manmade laws. Romans 13:1 is a definition of legitimate power. After all, two verses later Romans 13:3 excludes rulers that are a terror to good works. You cannot have it both ways; if tyrants are excluded by verse 3 then “the higher powers” in verse 1 cannot refer to government authorities. If you believe otherwise, then you will get the government you deserve.

By the way, Romans 13:3 in the Tyndale translation says *“rulers are not to be feared for good works, but for evil”*.

Let the context of the sentence determine what Paul intended. In the Bible, the Hebrew word *Elohiym*, and the Greek word *Theos*, were often translated as "God" or "gods". But these terms were also used to mean any judge or magistrate while exercising their authority. The terms were used to address magistrates and judges in common courts in Rome and Israel.

Long ago Christians rejected the divine right of Kings to rule because there is no such thing. Then, in 1611 the King James government published their version of the Bible that suggested otherwise. Shortly thereafter Pilgrims fled from the King James government and brought forth on another continent a new nation conceived in liberty. We rejected the nonsense that Romans 13:1 refers to obeying civil government authority.

You were warned in Matthew 23:15 that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twice-fold damned. Peter told us to obey God, not man in Acts 5:29. Do not believe lies of religious leaders who tell you to submit to civil government. Now we are faced with self-called Christians who insist that there is somehow a divine command to submit to ungodly authority, regardless of how abhorrent.

The purpose of this chapter is to explain subordination to lawful authority that will be discussed in later chapters. Your God-given rights were the foundation of your once-legitimate government. Government once protected your rights. Without our God-given rights, we could not have created government, or delegated to our civil servants the right to execute murderers, nor could we have executed King Charles I. If we were to obey governments, America would not have refused the laws of King George III. We would not have killed his law enforcement officers. In later chapters we will study how your God-given rights are now considered worthless and have been replaced with government-granted rights, many of which are available only to government credentialed people. Just as with our protestant ancestors, your rights are not considered holy.

Electing a government to Lord over us is evil. Nominating Saul as King rejected God’s lordship. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7. Electing Saul as King was evil in the eyes of God 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 12: 17. You will get what you ask for and God will not answer your prayers to deliver you from the evil you created. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:18.

At the end of the dark ages, the invention of the printing press allowed people to read the Bible for themselves to determine if they wanted to risk death to reject the lies of religious leaders. Martin Luther’s *Secular Authority: To What Extent It Should be Obeyed*, was published in 1523. Samuel Rutherford published *Lex Rex* in 1644. We executed King Charles I in 1649. The divine right of Kings to rule was completely re-refuted in 1690 by John Locke’s *First Treatise of Government*.

- Law is King, *Lex Rex*, refers to divine law, not to tyranny. *“Where-ever law ends, tyranny begins”*
- We are all created *“equal, without any other superior but him who is the author of our being”*. It was recognized in Protestant cultures that all sovereign authority is vested in the people. Supreme power – *jura summi imperii* – resides in the people. They can create their government to protect their God-given rights. They can write whatever law and delegate whatever authority is needed to control the government they create. Or alter their form of Government.

- This principle was valid when Wycliffe wrote the introduction to his English Bible translation. He said that the Bible creates a government of the people, by the people and for the people.
- This principle was still valid when Abraham Lincoln made his First Inaugural Address, March 4, 1861:

*“This country, with its institutions, belongs to the people who inhabit it. Whenever they shall grow weary of the existing government, they can exercise their constitutional right of amending it, or their revolutionary right to dismember or overthrow it.”*

Does that sound like Lincoln expected us to obey government powers because they are somehow ordained of God to be higher powers?

- This principle was our right since the beginning. Alexander Hamilton, Federalist #28:

*“If the representatives of the people betray their constituents, there is then no resource left but in the exertion of that original right of self-defense which is paramount to all positive forms of government, ... if the persons entrusted with supreme power become usurpers, ... The citizens must rush tumultuously to arms, without concert, without system, without resource; except in their courage and despair.”*

Does that sound like Hamilton expected us to blindly obey government powers because they are somehow ordained of God to be higher powers?

The law of nature requires us to supervise our civil servants, and if they fail to enforce the law of nature, we are restored to the nature that we were in prior to creating government, for we are all equal. See Locke’s Second Treatise paragraphs 135, 149, 171, 209.

Did Lincoln’s words go over your head? Perhaps you are so blinded by the god of this age that you don’t understand why a president would speak of overthrowing government. Perhaps you don’t understand that today’s presidents are exercising military martial law authority over us.

Andrew Jackson survived three duals BEFORE we elected him as president. Back then we had a Christian nation. If you don’t understand why a Christian nation would elect someone who was man enough to defend his honor, then you don’t understand the Romans 13 authority that we are to obey.

Another classic argument for Christians to not participate in apostate - evil - government is Leo Tolstoy’s [What I Believe](#) published in Russia in 1884. He watched the communists overthrow his country. Today we are witnessing the same thing.

King Charles I was executed in 1649. Because the Bible does NOT instruct us to blindly obey government powers. We are all created equal.

The original Greek word *exousia* in Romans 13:1 that is translated by the King James translators into the English word “power” comes from the root word *exon*. *Exousia* is the ability, right or privilege to present oneself in public. It can be translated as power, ability, privilege, right, authority, rulers, magistrates, or angels good and bad. Such as a sign of authority of a husband over his wife, i.e. the veil.

- The privilege to present oneself in public. Such as a veil for a married woman in 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 11:10. Are you “*subject unto the higher powers*” for someone’s permission (credential) to present yourself in public? If so then you should give *honor to whom honor* is due. “*For there is no power but of God.*” If not, then you live in a free country.
- It is translated as “right” in Hebrews 13:10 and Revelation 22:14. Do you agree that there is no right but of God, the rights that be are ordained of God?
- It is translated as “liberty” in 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 8:9. Do you agree that there is no liberty but of God, the liberties that be are ordained of God?
- Did the same Peter that is quoted Acts 5:29 “obey God rather than men” suddenly change his mind in 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:13-16

*“Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord’s sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.”*

Notice that it is the "will of God...to silence the ignorance of foolish men".

*He is telling people not to attract attention with their new liberty from graven (manmade) laws. After all, law is not made for the righteous, 1st Timothy 1:9.*

The phrase in the [Declaration of Independence](#) "all men are created equal" is a well accepted legal maxim. This was explained in English law in 1769 by William Blackstone. Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law, Book 1, Part 1, starts out with an explanation of why law exists. Laws are immutable rules of action applied indiscriminately. Such as, for example: the law of gravity or the law of nature. (emphasis added). He then proceeds to derive the law of nature from the divine revealed law of the Bible:

- "Man, considered as a creature, must necessarily be subject to the laws of his creator, for he is entirely a dependent being.
- "it is necessary that he should in all points conform to his maker's will. **This will of his maker is called the law of nature.**
- "so, when he created man, and endued him with freewill to conduct himself in all parts of life, he laid down certain **immutable laws of human nature**, whereby that freewill is in some degree regulated and restrained, and gave him also the faculty of reason to discover the purport of those laws.
- "But as he is also a being of infinite *wisdom*, he has laid down only such laws as were founded in those relations of justice, that existed in the nature of things antecedent to any positive precept. **These are the eternal, immutable laws of good and evil**, to which the creator himself in all his dispensations conforms; and which he has enabled human reason to discover, so far as they are necessary for the conduct of human actions. Such among others are these principles: that we should live honestly, should hurt nobody, and should render to every one his due; to which three general precepts Justinian has reduced the whole doctrine of law.
- "but has graciously reduced the rule of obedience to this one paternal precept, "that man should pursue his own true and substantial happiness." **This is the foundation of what we call ethics, or natural law.** For the several articles into which it is branched in our systems, amount to no more than demonstrating, that this or that action tends to man's real happiness, and therefore very justly concluding that the performance of it is a part of the law of nature; or, on the other hand, that this or that action is destructive of man's real happiness, and therefore that the law of nature forbids it.
- "This law of nature, being coeval with mankind and dictated by God himself, is of course superior in obligation to any other-**It is binding over all the globe in all countries, and at all times; no human laws are of any validity, if contrary to this: and such of them as are valid derive all their force, and all their authority, mediately or immediately, from this original.**
- "The doctrines thus delivered we call the revealed or divine law, and they are to be found only in the holy scriptures. These precepts, when revealed, are found upon comparison to be really a part of the original law of nature, as they tend in all their consequences to man's felicity. But we are not from thence to conclude that the knowledge of these truths was attainable by reason, in it's present corrupted state; since we find that, until they were revealed, they were hid from the wisdom of ages. As then the moral precepts of this law are indeed of the same original with those of the law of nature, so their Intrinsic obligation is of equal strength and perpetuity. Yet undoubtedly the revealed law is of infinitely more authenticity than that moral system, which is framed by ethical writers, and denominated the natural law. Because one is the law of nature, expressly declared so to be by God himself; the other is only what, by the assistance of human reason, we imagine to be that law. If we could be as certain of the latter as we are of the former, both would have an equal authority; but, till then, they can never be put in any competition together.
- "Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws; that is to say, no human laws should be suffered to contradict these.
- "To instance in the case of murder; this is expressly forbidden by the divine, and demonstrably by the natural law; and from these prohibitions arises the true unlawfulness of this crime. Those human laws that annex a punishment to it, do not at all increase its moral guilt, or superadd any fresh obligation *in foro conscientiae* to abstain from it's perpetration. **Nay, if any human law should allow or enjoin us to commit it, we are bound to transgress that human law, or else we must offend both the natural and the divine.**
- "If man were to live in a state of nature, unconnected with other individuals, there would be no occasion for any other laws, than the law of nature, and the law of God. **Neither could any other law possibly exist;** for a law always supposes some superior who is to make it; and in a state of nature **we are all equal, without any other superior but him who is the author of our being.**

Here is the true purpose of government:

BECAUSE WE ARE ALL CREATED EQUAL, THE RIGHT TO PUNISH MURDER AND THE LIKE IS VESTED IN EVERY INDIVIDUAL. Which we then delegated to our civil servants when we created -- ordained was the religious word we used -- our government.

We are created so equal that the received law in all 13 original colonies recognized that we each had the right to execute murderers and the like.

Governments have the right to “*bear the sword of justice by the consent of the whole community...*[even foreigners could be executed] *in case they have offended, not indeed against the municipal laws of the country, but against the divine laws of nature, and become liable thereby to forfeit their lives for their guilt.*”

Here, is a quote from Blackstone’s Commentaries (Book 4 PUBLIC WRONGS, introduction, starting at the bottom of page 7). This was the received law-of-the-land when the original 13 American States wrote their Constitutions (emphasis added):

As to *the power* of human punishment, or the right of the temporal legislator to inflict discretionary penalties for crimes and misdemeanors. It is clear, that **the right of punishing crimes against the law of nature, as murder and the like, is in a state of mere nature vested in every individual:** ... otherwise the laws of nature would be vain and fruitless, if none were empowered to put them in execution; ... it must also be vested in *all* mankind; since all are by nature equal. Whereof the first murderer, Cain, was so sensible, that we find him expressing his apprehensions, that *whoever* should find him would slay him. In a state of society this right is transferred from individuals to the sovereign power; whereby men are prevented from being judges in their own causes, which is one of the evils that civil government was intended to remedy. Whatever power therefore individuals had of punishing offences against the law of nature, that is now vested in the magistrate alone; who **bears the sword of justice by the consent of the whole community.** And to this precedent natural power of individuals must be referred that right, which some have argued to belong to every state, (though, in fact, never exercised by any) of punishing not only their own subjects, but also foreign ambassadors, even with death itself; **in case they have offended, not indeed against the municipal laws of the country, but against the divine laws of nature, and become liable thereby to forfeit their lives for their guilt.**

In part 4 we will study Biblical examples of not obeying government authority. And indeed, throughout history, the main enemy of Christians has been government.

## 2.12 Obey Authority part 2: Obedience to false authority is mutiny

First Commandment – "Thou shalt have no other gods before me."

- It is idolatry to invent gods of your own choosing. The Hebrew word for God in the first Commandment is 'elohiym which can mean magistrates or judges. Thou shalt have no other judges ahead of the one true God.
- The painting of Roman gods on the Capitol Building rotunda ceiling is entitled *Apotheos of George Washington*. It depicts George Washington as a god maker. (Latin *Apotheos* means "god maker"). He created your judge Gods.
- Satan's plan all along is to be like the most high (Isaiah 14:14).

Second Commandment – "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, ... Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them:.."

- Oaths are taken to superiors, Raising of the hand is swearing. Worship, such as a salute, is given to superiors.
- IF we are all equal, then don't take oaths, don't place yourself under graven images
- IF we are all equal why would you deny it and swear oaths to a superior?
- If we are all equal why do you worship them with a salute?
- Christ said not to swear oaths Matthew 5:34. **Why call ye me Lord Lord and do not the things which I say?** Luke 6:46

Third Commandment – "Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain... "

- the word "Name" means authority
- "obey authority" does not mean obey false authority
- Oaths are taken by subordinates to a superior. You take an oath to subject yourself to a superior. Why do your elected officials take their oath of office "so help me God" to be someone's civil servant and then surrender you as wards to the nation's bankruptcy receivership? Answer: because you swore oaths to be subordinate to them. You voluntarily became a fourth level of abstraction away from real authority.

Choose you this day whom ye will serve. Joshua 24:15

There are consequences of choosing whom ye will serve:

Pilgrims brought forth on this continent a nation conceived in liberty. They took their families and risked death at sea to flee from oppressive government so that they could seek religious liberty.

Before the start of the American Revolution, the people who would later bring forth on this continent a new government found out that they had to risk death after they protested when the tax of tea was increased to 17 percent by their government. Their government at that time was the most powerful military force on earth.

Just twenty-one years after Patrick Henry announced his decision "*give me liberty or give me death*" Thomas Jefferson was warning about complacency to the new government. Thomas Jefferson, April 24, 1796: "*Timid men prefer the calm of despotism to the boisterous sea of liberty.*" Have we, too, become complacent to the calm of despotism?

Thomas Jefferson's inscription on his ring:

*Resistance to tyrants is obedience to God.*



### 2.13 Obey Authority part 3: Romans 13 exousia.

Romans 13:1-3 (in the King James Version, which is a government published Bible):

*"Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power?..."*

IF Paul was speaking of civil servants, is he speaking only of legitimate and legal authority? For there is no legitimate authority except of God. The only legal and legitimate authorities that exist are those of God. Wilt thou then be afraid of legitimate authority?

IF Paul was speaking of civil servants, then he excluded those who are a terror to good works, and by verse 9 it is obvious he is speaking only of those who are enforcing God's Ten Commandments. He is leading up to his conclusion, in verse 10, that love of your fellow man is the fulfillment of the law. And we must cast off the works of darkness in verse 12. Hardly a description of brutal pagan Roman secular government.

DID PAUL CHANGE HIS MIND in 1 Corinthians 6:12 when he wrote "*all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.*" ?

NO HE DID NOT.

He did not lie.

The Bible does not lie.

He was entirely consistent. His soul was subject to higher power, which is why he would not be brought under the power of men.

The root word of authority is *author*. As William Blackstone so eloquently stated: "we are all equal, without any other superior but him who is the *author* of our being."

Apostate religious leaders of today still proclaim they have no King but Caesar (John 19:15) and that we are to obey Government unless they prohibit private worship. But Public worship is already prohibited.

A church cannot also be a 501(C)(3) government corporation. You cannot serve two masters.

Bible Symbolism has women symbolizing a church. The true church is symbolized by a virgin, as in 2nd Corinthians 11:2. A fallen church is symbolized by a harlot, as in Judges 2:17. The whore riding the scarlet beast in Revelation 17 is the fallen church. Beasts symbolize governments, as in the final world-dominating beast of Daniel 7:7&19-23.

Is your 501(c)(3) government corporation drunk with the blood of saints?

*"Throughout the ages men have suffered death rather than subordinate their allegiance to God to the authority of the State."* -- The U.S Supreme Court in *Girouard v. U.S.*, 328 U.S. 61 (1946)

How many saints died to keep your church from subordinating their allegiance to the authority of the state?

To what extent will you obey government? Some say we must obey a Hitler, others say we must obey authority up to, but not including, a Hitler.

In Romans 13:1 the word “authority” (or KJV “power”) is translated from the Greek word *exousia*, (root word *exon*). The Greek word means the ability, right or privilege to present oneself in public. In 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 11:10 it is translated as a sign of authority of a husband over his wife in public, i.e. the veil. Also translated as (subjective): liberty, license, privilege, right, powers, commission, (objective): rulers, magistrates, or angels, good and bad.

There are two ways to present oneself in public: by God-given right (without credentials), or, shown below, by an engraved etching, either as credential (presented in your right hand) or as a badge on a uniform’s cap (forehead).

Obedience to false authority is mutiny against God.

Did these two souls at the right have a God-given right to present themselves in public, or do they both have a mark of a beast (ID normally presented in one’s right hand or hat’s forehead) to present themselves in public?

These souls should have submitted to higher authority. Their government should have submitted to higher authority.

1. There is no superior authority but of God. All rights that exist are God-given rights. (including the right to freely choose allegiance to God)
2. Those who oppose God-ordained rights will receive damnation. (In other words: Honor our rights so we don’t end up with everyone needing a mark in public). :
3. Legitimate rulers are not a terror to good works.

*Aptheker v. Secretary of State*, 378 U.S. 500 (1964):

*"Free movement by the citizen is of course as dangerous to a tyrant as free expression of ideas or the right of assembly and it is therefore controlled in most countries in the interests of security. ... That is why the ticketing of people and the use of identification papers are routine matters under totalitarian regimes, yet abhorrent in the United States."*

*Justice Stevens in Michigan State Police v. Sitz*, 496 U.S. 469 (1990):

*"... unannounced investigatory seizures are ... the hallmarks of regimes far different from ours."*

## Obey authority !

So we don't end up like this.  
For we are all equal.



**It cannot be both ways.** You cannot claim that Romans 13:1 refers to all powers, if tyrants are excluded in verse 3.

*Exousia* is translated as “right” in Hebrews 13:10 and Revelation 22:14. Do you agree that there is no right but of God, the rights that exist are ordained of God? *Exousia* is translated as “liberty” in 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 8:9. Do you agree that there is no liberty but of God, the liberties that exist are ordained of God?

Your Bible is a book about deliverance from bondage to pagan governments (Babylon, Egypt, Rome). Christ often spoke of redemption and deliverance. To replace forced-will with the free-will that God gave us. The Kingdom (government) of God is at hand.

Was Paul telling you to obey government authority, when he himself would not (in 1st Corinthians 6:12) be brought under the authority of any? And Peter would obey God, not man (Acts 5:29). Could Paul be saying something entirely different than King James wanted you to believe in his government-published Bible?

OnlineBible.com Lexicon translates *exousia* as “power of choice, liberty of doing as one pleases”. Do you agree that Whosoever therefore resisteth the liberty [opposes the right to freely choose allegiance], resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation?

From the beginning, our Creator gave us freewill – the power to choose allegiance. And for the first ten books of the Bible, we did not need a government. Nominating Saul as King rejected God’s authority, 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7. God prohibits us from legislating beyond His commandments, Deuteronomy 4:2.

Proofs for you to consider:

- Abraham, Moses and Jesus liberated mankind by teaching about a Heavenly government that would free men from bondage to civil governments.
- Even John Wycliffe’s introduction of his English translation in 1382 said that “*This Bible is for the Government of the People, by the People, and for the People.*” He died in prison.
- In Lincoln’s day everyone understood this authority (*exousia* authority of civil servants to present themselves in public) of their “government of the People, by the People and for the People”.
- Back when we were a Christian nation, Lincoln’s told them: “*This country, with its institutions, belongs to the people who inhabit it. Whenever they shall grow weary of the existing government, they can exercise their constitutional right of amending it, or their revolutionary right to dismember or overthrow it.*”
- But today’s churches deliver people back into the same bondage that Moses and Jesus freed us from, by twisting the definition of authority. The Messiah warned us in Matthew 23:15 that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twice-fold damned. It is up to you to study the issues and to discern for yourself whether or not you are being deceived. It is your duty to avoid deception. Satan’s disciples lie.

If we substitute the word "power" that is used in government published Bibles with the Lexicon translation of *exousia* as “power of choice, liberty of doing as one pleases”. Here is a more likely translation of Romans 13:1

*Let every soul be subject unto the higher **liberty** [freewill to choose allegiance]. For there is no **liberty** but of God: the **liberties** that be are ordained are of God. Whosoever therefore opposes the **liberty**, [freewill] resists the ordinance of God, and they that oppose [the freewill our Creator gave us] shall receive to themselves damnation. Rulers are not to be feared for good works but for evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the **liberty** [to choose allegiance to God rather than men]?*

And indeed, liberty to choose allegiance is the received law of the land in America. Received from the Common Law of England. Here are proofs from the writings of John Locke.

Here are excerpts from John Locke’s Second Treatise of Government, published in 1690, which was 79 years after King James Bible tried to convince us otherwise:

95 “Men being, as has been said, by nature all free, equal, and independent, no one can be put out of this estate and subjected to the political power of another without his own consent, which is done by agreeing with other men, to join and unite into a community for their comfortable, safe, and peaceable living, one amongst another, in a secure enjoyment of their properties, and a greater security against any that are not

of it. This any number of men may do, because it injures not the freedom of the rest; they are left, as they were, in the liberty of the state of Nature.”

222 “The reason why men enter into society is the preservation of their property .... it can never be supposed to be the will of the society that the legislative should have a power to destroy that which every one designs to secure by entering into society, and for which the people submitted themselves to legislators of their own making; whenever the legislators endeavour to take away and destroy the property of the people,... they put themselves into a state of war with the people, who are thereupon absolved from any farther obedience, and are left to the common refuge which God hath provided for all men against force and violence. Whensoever, therefore, the legislative shall transgress this fundamental rule of society, and ...grasp ...or put into the hands of any other, an absolute power over the lives, liberties, and estates of the people, by this breach of trust they forfeit the power the people had put into their hands for quite contrary ends, and it devolves to the people [to] provide for their own safety and security, which is the end for which they are in society.... [this] holds true also concerning the supreme executor, who having a double trust put in him... acts also contrary to his trust when he employs the force, treasure, and offices of the society to corrupt ... to cut up the government by the roots, and poison the very fountain of public security... ”

And even children were not subject to government until they wanted to join society:

118 governments “claim no power over the son because of that they had over the father; nor look on children as being their subjects, by their fathers being so... It is plain, then, by the practice of governments themselves, as well as by the law of right reason, that a child is born a subject of no country nor government. He is under his father’s tuition and authority till he come to age of discretion, and then he is a free man, **at liberty what government he will put himself under...** the ties of natural obligations are not bounded by the positive limits of kingdoms and commonwealths”

Blind obedience is will worship (anti freewill, anti-created-equal, anti-Christ), contrary to free will God gave us, and abominable idolatry in the sight of God. (According to Robert Barclay’s Eleventh proposition of the true Christian faith, in 1678.)

Blind obedience is contrary to God’s dominion over your conscience.

Obedience to government is contrary to the first two commandments, which were written in stone by the finger of an unchanging God. (Deuteronomy 9:10, Exodus 31:18)

[The government of God], **The kingdom of God is at hand** Mark 1:15, Luke 21:31. While leading them away from civil government.

Luke 11:52 (KJV)

*“Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.”*

I have underlined the words *entered* and *entering* so that you can compare it with today’s definition of voluntary citizenship, later.

Horace Greeley quote:

*“It is impossible to enslave mentally or socially a Bible-reading people. The principles of the Bible are the groundwork of human freedom.”*

Stop getting your religion from people who want to enslave you.

William Penn quote:

*“If we will not be governed by God, then we will be ruled by tyrants.”*

Start getting your religion from the Bible.

Thomas Jefferson quote:

*"I have sworn upon the altar of God eternal hostility against every form of tyranny over the mind of man."*

Would this include a judge trying to get you to salute him *"in a form calculated to awaken the witness' conscience"* (quoted from Federal Evidence Rule 603) when only God can compel the conscience?

Only Almighty God can compel the conscience.

- This is a precept of the Quaker faith. The Constitution was written in the Quaker State (in Philadelphia) and the authors of your government would be well aware of this.
- Thomas Jefferson said *"That to compel a man to furnish contributions of money for the propagation of opinions which he disbelieves and abhors, is sinful and tyrannical."* -- The Papers of Thomas Jefferson, vol. 2, p. 545
- Luke 3:14 *"do violence to no man..."*
- Matthew 7:1 *"judge not..."*
- Barclay's Fourteenth proposition of the true Christian faith: *" Since God hath assumed to himself the power and dominion of the conscience, who alone can rightly instruct and govern it, therefore it is not lawful for any whatsoever, by virtue of any authority or principality they bear in the government of this world, to force the conscience of others; and therefore all... [punishment] which men are afflicted with for the exercise of their conscience, or difference in worship or opinion, proceedeth from the spirit of Cain the murderer, and is contrary to the Truth... [except for anything destructive] in which case the law is for the transgressor..."*
- The biography of Flavius Josephus paragraph 23 footnote: *"everyone is to be permitted to worship God according to his own conscience, and is not to be compelled in matters of religion"*
- U.S. Supreme Court in Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, 399: The term *"Liberty ... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right ... to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience, ..."*

In part 4 we will examine the many saints that chose the narrow path that leads to life, by not obeying government.

Galatians 5:1 (NIV) *"It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery."*

## 2.14 Are unalienable Rights granted by government?

Is your right to buy and sell God-granted or government-granted?

Do you have a government-granted privilege to sell your labor and contract for necessities of life, or are these sacred? God-given rights are sacred, inalienable, and “natural”, outside the realm of government interference. Altogether different from so-called government–granted “rights” that are revocable privileges.

A government granted “right” to sell labor would be a government revocable privilege. It could also be taxed as a government privilege.

Texas Supreme Court in Dallas v. Mitchell, 245 S.W. 944:

*“The rights of the individual are not derived from governmental agencies, either municipal, state, federal, or even from the Constitution, but they exist inherently in every man, and are merely reaffirmed in the Constitution and restricted only to the extent they have been voluntarily surrendered by the citizenship to the agencies of government.”*

Revelation 13:17 predicts a time when God-given rights to buy or sell will not be considered valid, replaced by a system whereby credentials from a beast power will authorize transactions. It says that “no man might buy or sell” without one of three credentials: a mark, name or number. For an analysis of the original Greek, see my chapter on Answers to Skeptics.

The [Declaration of Independence](#) says “that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights.” Including “Life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men...”

Our right to contract is the foundation of Government. Without a right to contract among men who are created equal, government cannot have been legitimately created. YOUR RIGHT TO CONTRACT IS A GOD-GIVEN RIGHT, if your right to buy or sell is restricted by a government credential or a number, just once (KJV Revelation 13:17 uses the term *might*, such that you *might* not buy or sell without a mark, name or number), then either end-time prophecy has come true, or you have been declared incompetent.

Your right to travel is a God-given right. It has been recognized by the U.S. Supreme Court ever since 1868 when Nevada tried to tax passengers in stage-coaches in Crandall v. Nevada 73 U.S. 35.

The definition of Liberty is also the definition of travel. It is the same right.

*Black’s Law Dictionary* first edition gives us the definition of personal liberty, as it had always existed:

*“Personal liberty consists in the power of locomotion, of changing situation, of removing one’s person to whatever place one’s inclination may direct, without imprisonment or restraint unless by due course of law. 1 Bl. Comm. 134”*

***Personal liberty consists in the power of locomotion, of changing situation, of removing one’s person to whatever place one’s inclination may direct, without imprisonment or restraint unless by due course of law. 1 Bl. Comm. 134.***

This was the definition of personal liberty that existed in the received law-of-the-land. The lawyers then changed their definition in the *Black’s Law Dictionary* 1933 third edition to a definition of liberty that they claim is guaranteed by the thirteenth amendment.

11 Am Jur, Constitutional Law, section 329, page 1135:

*"The right of a citizen to travel upon the public highways and to transport his property thereon, by horse-drawn carriage, wagon, or automobile, is not a mere privilege which may be permitted or prohibited at will, but a common right which he has under his right to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. Under this constitutional guaranty one may, therefore, under normal conditions, travel at his inclination along the public highways or in public places, and while conducting himself in an orderly and decent manner, neither interfering with nor disturbing another's rights, he will be protected, not only in his person, but in his safe conduct."*

That's right. **Police must protect you in your safe conduct as you drive without a license.** Don't claim to live in a free country if you have never seen liberty.

A definition of Liberty by the U.S. Supreme Court in Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, 399: The term

*"Liberty ... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience, the established doctrine is that this liberty may not be interfered with under the guise of protecting public interest, by legislative action which is arbitrary..."*

Notice here "the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life" is a God-given right. And since government is instituted to protect rights, you have a Constitutionally guaranteed, government protected, right to earn wages. It is protected until waived. A right cannot be taxed. A right must be protected. Government was created – "instituted among men" was the phrase used in the Declaration of Independence – to protect rights. Ordained was the religious term they used in the Constitution.

YOUR RIGHT TO TRAVEL IS A GOD-GIVEN RIGHT, if your right to buy travel is restricted by a government credential or a number, just once (KJV Revelation 13:17 uses the term might, such that you might not buy or sell without a mark, name or number), then end-time prophecy has come true.

A RIGHT CANNOT BE TAXED.

There are rights that the government CANNOT touch.

Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law, Book 1 "Rights of Persons" (First Edition, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1769) explains our rights, as they existed in the received law-of-the-land when the 13 original states wrote their constitutions.

*"The rights themselves, thus defined by these several statutes, consist in a number of private immunities, which will appear, from what has been premised, to be indeed no other, than either that residuum of natural liberty, which is not required by the laws of society to be sacrificed to public convenience; or else those civil privileges, which society hath engaged to provide, in lieu of the natural liberties so given up by individuals. These, therefore, were formerly, either by inheritance or purchase, the rights of all mankind; but, in most other countries of the world being now more or less debased and destroyed, they at present may be said to remain, in a peculiar and emphatical manner, the rights of the people of England. And these may be reduced to three principal or primary articles; the right of personal security, the right of personal liberty, and the right of private property: because, as there is no other known method of compulsion, or of abridging man's natural free will, but by an infringement or diminution of one or other of these important rights, the preservation of these, inviolate, may justly be said to include the preservation of our civil immunities in their largest and most extensive sense. "*

God gave us a free will. As you can see, government must protect you from all known methods of compulsion by protecting your rights and preserving them inviolate.

These rights to be free from all known methods of compulsion are recognized as "the rights of all mankind". They are as

sacred as the right to self defense.

Quakers would immediately recognize forced liturgy (they called it "will worship") as a waiver of their right to free will. Which is why they don't swear oaths to waive their rights. The U.S. Constitution was written in the Quaker State, and the authors would have been very aware of this.

DON'T CLAIM TO LIVE IN A FREE COUNTRY IF YOU HAVE NEVER SEEN LIBERTY.

By the way, The U.S. Supreme Court still considers Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law to be the received-law-of-the-land.

Here is an example of rights WHEN AMERICA WAS A FREE COUNTRY. Government exists to protect rights.

Before the original 13 State Constitutions were written, the ONLY prescription drug law was for slaves. Slaves needed their owner's permission to take drugs.

When America became a free country, the Constitution abolished the only drug law that existed, even though the slaves were not yet free. Law textbooks said that Slave rights had been "*wholly annihilated, or reduced to a shadow*" and that the constitution changed this. (quote is from Tucker's Blackstone, 1803, Virginia, Book 1, Part 2, Note H "The state of slavery")

YOUR RIGHT TO SELL YOUR LABOR IS A GOD-GIVEN RIGHT, if your right to sell your labor is restricted by a government credential or a number, just once (KJV Revelation 13:17 uses the term might, such that you might not buy or sell without a mark, name or number), then end-time prophecy has come true.

- Wilby v. Mississippi, 47 S. 465:

*"It certainly was not the intention of the legislature to levy a tax upon honest toil and labor."*

- US Supreme Court in Evans v. Gore, 253 U.S. 245 concerning a tax on salary:

*"After further consideration, we adhere to that view and accordingly hold that the Sixteenth Amendment does not authorize or support the tax in question".*

- Spring Valley Water Works v. Barber, 33 P. 735:

*"A right common in every citizen such as the right to own property or to engage in business of a character not requiring regulation CANNOT, however, be taxed as a special franchise by first prohibiting its exercise and then permitting its enjoyment upon the payment of a certain sum of money."*

- Tennessee Supreme Court in Jack Cole v. Commissioner MacFarland, 337 SW2d 453 (1960):

*"The right to receive income or earnings is a right belonging to every person, and realization and receipt of income is therefore not a privilege that can be taxed." [from:Taxation West Key 933]*

In this 1960 case, the Tennessee Supreme Court also quoted prior decisions that defined the term 'privilege' in contradistinction to right:

*"Legislature ... cannot name something to be a taxable privilege unless it is first a privilege." "Privileges are special rights, belonging to the individual or class, and not to the mass; properly, an exemption from some general burden, obligation or duty; a right peculiar to some individual or body"*



- Edwards v. Keith, 231 Fed. 1:
 

*"One does not derive income by rendering services and charging for them.... IRS cannot enlarge the scope of the statute"*
- U.S. Supreme Court in Butcher's Union v. Crescent City, 111 U.S. 746:
 

*"The property which every man has in his own labor, as it is the original foundation of all other property, so it is the most sacred and inviolable. ... to hinder his employing this strength and dexterity in what manner he thinks proper without injury to his neighbor, is a plain violation of this most sacred property."*
- In the 1959 Tax Court case Penn Mutual Indemnity Co. v. Commissioner (32 Tax Court page 681): "The rule of Eisner v. Macomber has been reaffirmed on so many occasions that citation of the cases to this effect would be unnecessarily burdensome... Moreover, that which is not income in fact manifestly cannot be made such by the legislative expedient of calling it income..."
- Laureldale Cemetery Assoc. v. Matthews, 345 A 239, and 47 A.2d 277 (1946):
 

*"Reasonable compensation for labor or services rendered is not profit."*
- US Supreme Court in [Murdock v. Pennsylvania](#), 319 U.S. 105, at 113 (1943):
 

*"A state may not... impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal constitution."*
- U.S. Supreme Court in [Magnano Co. v. Hamilton](#) 292 U.S. 40
 

*"The power to tax the exercise of a [right] ... is the power to control or suppress its enjoyment."*
- President Jefferson, concluding his first inaugural address, March 4, 1801:
 

*"... a wise and frugal government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another, which shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not take from the mouth of labor the bread it has earned. This is the sum of good government..."*
- [Spreckels Sugar Ref. Co. v. Mclain](#), 24 S.Ct. 382 (1904):
 

*"the citizen is exempt from taxation unless the same is imposed by clear and unequivocal language"*
- Oregon Supreme Court in [Redfield v. Fisher](#), 292 P 813, pg 819 (1930):
 

*"The individual, unlike the corporation, cannot be taxed for the mere privilege of existing. The corporation is an artificial entity which owes its existence and charter powers to the state: but the individuals' right to live and own property are natural rights for the enjoyment of which an excise cannot be imposed."*
- [Long v. Ramussen](#), 281 F 236, 238 (1922):
 

*"The revenue laws are a code or system in regulation of tax assessment and collection. They relate to taxpayers, and not to non-taxpayers. The later are without their scope. No procedure is prescribed for non-taxpayers, and no attempt is made to annul any of their rights and remedies in due course of law. With them Congress does not assume to deal, and they are neither of the subject nor of the object of the revenue law." Reaffirmed in [Gerth v. U.S.](#), 132 F.Supp. 894 (1955) and in [Economy Heating Co. v. U.S.](#), 470 F.2d. 585 (1972)*
- [Regal Drug Co v. Wardell](#), 260 U.S. 386: "Congress may not, under the taxing power, assert a power not delegated to it by the Constitution."
- US Supreme Court in [Hurtado v. California](#), 110 U.S. 516:

*"The state cannot diminish the rights of the people."*

- Sherar v. Cullen, 481 F.2d. 946 (1973)

*"... there can be no sanction or penalty imposed upon one because of his exercise of constitutional rights"*

- Miller v. U.S., 230 F. 489

*"The claim and exercise of a Constitutional right cannot be converted into a crime."*

#### RIGHT TO NECESSITIES OF LIFE

U.S. Supreme Court in Murdock v. Pennsylvania 319 U.S. 105 (1943).

*"The power to tax the exercise of a privilege is the power to suppress its enjoyment. ... Those who can tax the exercise of this practice can make its exercise so costly as to deprive it of the resources necessary for its maintenance. Those who can tax the privilege ... can close the doors to all those who do not have a full purse."*

I find it interesting that Incompetent people and children under 18 do not have a right to contract EXCEPT for necessities of life. Courts must enforce their obligations for necessities of life, but since they are incompetent, courts are prohibited from enforcing their other contracts. BUT Prisoners (and slaves) must be provided necessities of life.

Let's compare the two: Are you a slave (expecting to be provided with future SS necessities of life) or do you have the moral obligation to pay for your own necessities? Obligations that even an incompetent person would have?

- Is your right to buy or rent housing a God-given right to contract for a necessity of life, or do you need a housing authorization number? (and, yes, housing is a necessity of life according to the Supreme Court Shapiro v. Thompson, 394 U.S. 618 and Dandridge v. Williams, 397 U.S. 471, etc.)
- Is there a brutal beast power that 500 years ago issued a directive to deny you the necessities of life, to *"capture, vanquish and subdue... enemies... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."* ?

It seems to me that we are living in a time in history where the image of the beast has already authorized (per Revelation 13:15) the second beast to abolish/eradicate/kill/*apokteino* you if you do not worship (with a perjury oath) the first beast to get a contract authorization number so you can buy or sell.

### **2.14.1 Your right to contract part 1: Your sacred right to contract**

Your right to contract allowed us to ordain a constitution. Because “*we are all equal, without any other superior but him who is the author of our being*” according to Blackstone’s Commentaries Book 1, Part 1, quoted earlier in my chapter on Obeying Authority, part 1.

Your right to contract allowed us to delegate to our civil servants your right to execute murderers. Innocent blood cannot be shed and go unpunished by God. Blood will be on their heads is a phrase used many times in the Old Testament but only in Acts 18:6 in the New.

Your right to contract (for the execution of murderers and all lesser affairs) is as Holy as innocent blood.

As Justinian and Blackstone so eloquently explained the eternal immutable laws – To live honestly and render everyone his due, the whole society must protect the parts. Mutual compacts are subject to the laws of nature.

Upon this right to contract, we founded government. Without our right to contract, government can not be legitimate.

According to our Lord, what you bind on earth is bound in heaven (Matthew 16:19 and Matthew 18:18)

The U.S. Constitution Article 1, section 10 says that no state can impair the obligations of contracts.

### **2.14.2 Your right to contract part 2: your commerce is now regulated**

... regulated by those who should be your servants.

The commerce clause of the Constitution Article 1, section 8 allows the national government to regulate commerce among the several states.

For a long time people thought the words “regulate commerce among the several states” referred ONLY to promoting commerce, not restricting commerce, after all, “one of the objectives of the Philadelphia Convention was the promotion of commerce” according to an analysis of the Constitution published in 1996 by the Congressional Research Service in Senate Document 103-6.

Example: the first agriculture department in Pennsylvania was created to help farmers sell eggs OUTSIDE of Pennsylvania , and to run a state fair, promoting Pennsylvania grown produce. THAT’S IT!

That was the understanding of the Constitution clause “regulating commerce among the several states”

[I recommend Aaron Bollinger’s 1994 book, “Downsizing Government,” available at [www.lulu.com](http://www.lulu.com)]

It took a Constitutional Amendment to prohibit Alcohol. Then they used their police powers to prohibit anything that is immoral. Government regulatory “Mission creep” has spread like a cancer until everything is regulated.

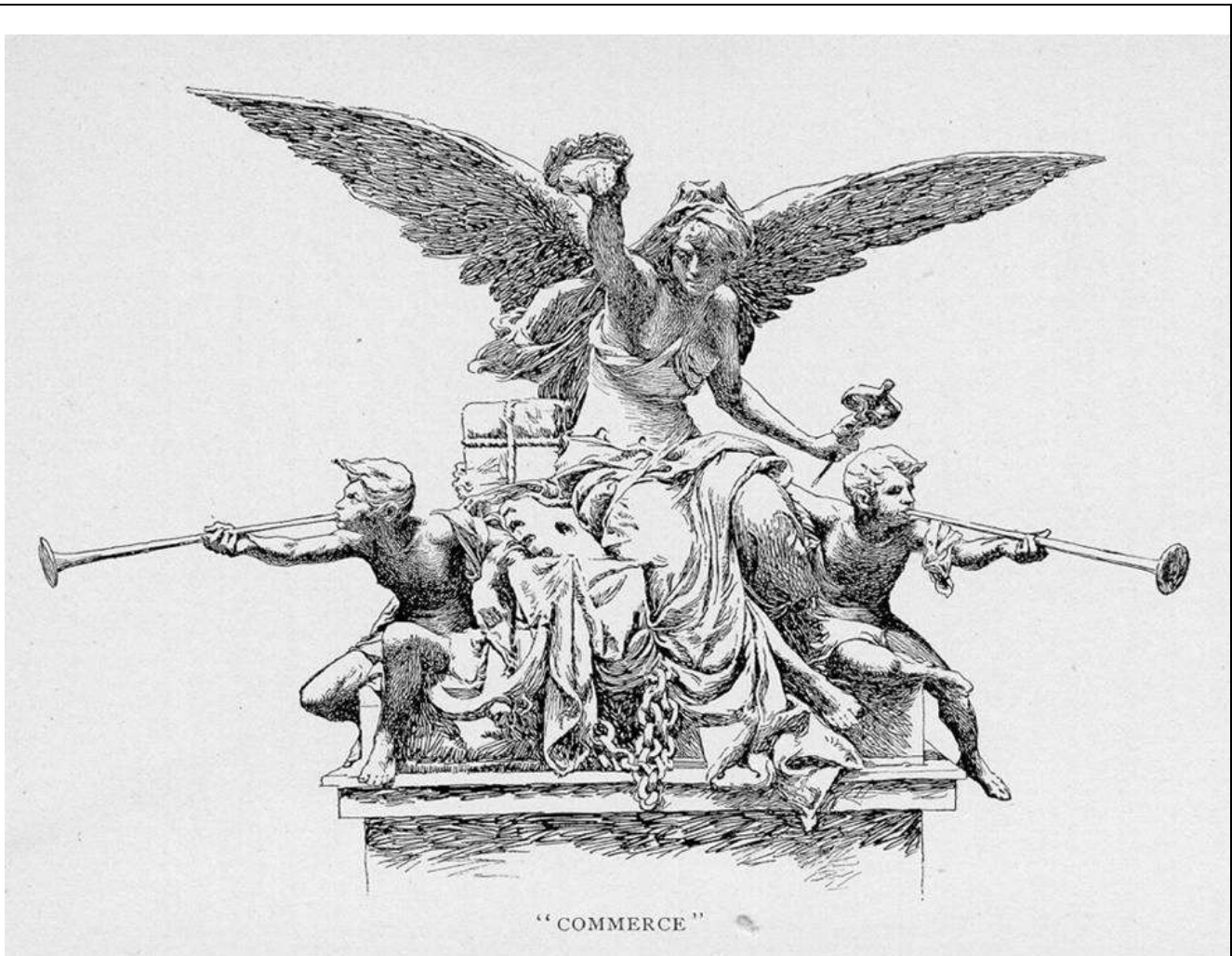
Now that you have been declared to be the enemy of the federal government, you don’t have a right to contract if it involves government in any way, Trading with the enemy is always a felony. Example: Everyone has a right to travel on a roadway. This is even the very definition of liberty. Yet No one has a right to try to profit by stepping onto a road. Not for carriage of goods, not for driving passengers for hire. That’s right. In this new world order, you can grow crops and sell them, but once you sell them you cannot have a right to deliver them over a road. Even if you make automobile fuel that will never leave your state, you cannot sell it for on-road use without paying a federal excise tax.

Which class of Citizen are you? Are you of the same class that are created equal, that are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights, that ordained a Constitution, that brought forth on this continent a new nation conceived in liberty, that blasted through mountain ranges to build railroads from sea to shining sea without a permit from civil servants? Or are you of the class that cannot repair your back porch without begging (and paying) your master for a permit?

One swears oaths to a superior according to Hebrews 6:13,16. What oath did you swear or contract did you sign to subordinate yourself to (civil servants of the State's civil servants) a fourth level of abstraction from real authority?

Cecil B. DeMille's prologue to the Movie The Ten Commandments:

*"Are men the property of the state? Or are they free souls under God? This same battle continues throughout the world."*



This was in an American 1893 tribute to all commerce that Columbus has provided to the Roman Empire.

Consider the symbolism:

- Is she chained to the land as a resident?
- Laurel wreath crowns are only bestowed by Roman military to Roman military (whereas oak leaf wreath crowns are bestowed by civil authority, according to Encarta). Is commerce a military (Admiralty) authority? Is commerce honoring the brutal military "power to give life unto the image of the beast"? Was Christopher Columbus sent by a beast power rising from the sea to militarily "capture, vanquish and subdue... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."? Did he indeed claim all commerce for the Pope?
- Is she (commerce) the beast of Revelation 13:11 that arose from the land to issue the Mark of the Beast in verse 16? After all, a second beast, with two horns, that came up out of the earth, while exercising the authority (maritime treaties, now including GATT) of the first beast who raised up out of the sea, causes those that inhabit the earth to worship (with a perjury oath signature, as well as any other Admiralty jurisdiction salute) the first beast by telling you to get a graven Mark (symbolically in your right hand and forehead), issued by a final world order (your Novus Ordo Seclorum), that you must use as a banking authorization number if you want to participate (buy or sell) in commerce.
- Is commerce now exercising all the power of the first beast?
- Cherubs are winged celestial creatures similar to angels. Where does this commerce cherub get her power and great authority?

Does all commerce belong to Lucifer?

Notice that Lucifer was accused of trafficking merchandise on trade-routes.

Ezekiel 28:14 Thou [art] the anointed cherub <sup>3742</sup> that covereth ; and I have set thee [so]: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

Ezekiel 28:15 Thou [wast] perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created , till iniquity was found in thee.

Ezekiel 28:16 By the multitude of thy merchandise <sup>7404</sup> they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

Ezekiel 28:17 Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty, thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness: I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings, that they may behold thee.

Ezekiel 28:18 Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick <sup>7404</sup>; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee, it shall devour thee, and I will bring thee to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold thee.

#### Freedom of choice - Your right to choose

God established, in the garden of Eden, your right to choose.

Our forefathers brought forth on this continent a new nation conceived in liberty (liberty includes your right to choose).

Men who rejected God's precepts for government overthrew your government and brought forth on this continent a new nation to establish, in their laws, their right to choose for you, to overrule you,

Choose you this day whom ye will serve. (Josh 24:15)

Colossians 2:8 (NIV): "See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world rather than on Christ."

### 2.14.3 Welfare part 1: Lordship

This is an introductory chapter. Details are presented later.

How does a mere person raise to the rank of lord? Is it by demanding worship?

Perhaps you have sworn allegiance to an alternate master/lord/provider. Perhaps contracts remain enforceable in heaven (Matthew 18:18-19). If you owe your share of the national debt when it is enforceable in heaven, will the smoke of your torment (anguish) rise forever, in the presence of the Lamb, and give you no rest, day nor night, whosoever receiveth the mark?

Safety and liberty are opposites. The consequence of creating a graven provider-protector-benefactor (daddy government) to be obeyed has been well known since ancient times. Examples:

- Nimrod was a mighty provider ahead of the Lord. (Genesis 10:9) at the founding of Babylon.
- Family government worked just fine for the first ten Books of the Bible, until it was replaced. The election of Saul was evil in the eyes of the Lord, [I Samuel 12:17](#).
- Democracy gives political power to a gang of sinners. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 15:24:

*“And Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the LORD, and thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice.”*

- In 400 BC Socrates quoted Plato, [The Republic](#), book 8, section 565:

*“The people always have some champion whom they set over them and nurture into greatness... This and no other is the root from which a tyrant springs; when he first appears he is a protector.”*

- Or to put it into American terms: *“Those who would give up essential Liberty, to purchase a little temporary Safety, deserve neither Liberty nor Safety.”* According to Benjamin Franklin, November 11, 1755; Reply to the Governor. This is inscribed on a plaque in the stairwell of the Statue of Liberty.
- Patrick Henry March 28, 1775 urged others to choose between safety or liberty. *“Is life so dear or peace so sweet as to be purchased by the price of chains and slavery?... I know not what course others may take, but as for me give me liberty or give me death”*
- the words “secure” and “security,” when used in the federal Constitution, are only used in the context of protecting the people from their own government!

As an indication of just how far we have strayed, consider that the law-of-the-land received from the original English colonies provided:

*Blackstone’s Commentaries Book 4, page 58: “the temporal courts resent the public affront to religion and morality, on [page 59] which all government must depend for support, ...Christianity is part of the laws of England.”*

Some people claim that Romans 13:1 requires us to obey government, no matter how abhorrent. Yet the divine right of Kings to rule was thoroughly debunked when we came out of the dark ages. Go read Locke and Rutherford. Romans 13 requires us to obey legitimate powers. Verse 3 excludes tyrants. In fact, Tyndale’s translation says *“Rulers are not to be feared for good works, but for evil.”*

The Declaration of Independence correctly stated:

*“... all experience hath shown, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed...”*

When will evils become less sufferable?

The application for a Social Security Number is a welfare application. It is offered only to those applicants who are so destitute that their life depends on benefits "*financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*". It is available only to those who have no other way to survive. If you had a way to survive without it, then you falsified a federal document.

A right cannot be taxed. Do you have a right to earn wages or did you waive your right to sell your labor, thereby making your wages taxable?

Here are some hints:

- A federal privilege is taxable because it is not a right. Is earning wages taxable for those who have a full right to contract?
- Only three federal laws apply to a state citizen. Perhaps you somehow subjected yourself to federal laws.
- Your wages are owned by your master. Your employer is employing federal labor, not your labor. You are allowed to take home a slave's living allowance, but it is taxed as a gift.
- You can no longer defend yourself in court, you now need a competent attorney to represent you.
- No state can impair the obligations of contracts, but must enforce prior contracts. If you are protected by minimum wage laws, OSHA safety regulations, unemployment benefits, pension, worker's compensation, tax withholding, etc, then guess why.
- Tacit procuration is when you see another managing your affairs and do not interfere. It automatically allows anyone to jump in and care for those who cannot care for themselves.
- Constructive contracts occur when someone steps in to manage your affairs. (hint: like educating your children)
- Laws of Equity prohibit anyone from unduly enriching himself at the expense of others. Of course your wages belong to your master.
- Wards of the court are "Infants and persons of unsound mind... under the care of a guardian."
- Esau sold his birthright for a bowl of stew. You sold your birthright for a future bowl of stew. Esau got to eat his bowl of stew. How about you? God hated Esau.
- And [Ashwander v. TVA](#) Supreme Court decision laid down rules about what cases they will NOT consider. They will not consider the constitutionality of any case from someone who has availed himself of benefits.
- The Supreme Court in *Edwards v. California* at [314 U.S. 160](#), at 172, defined the legal term "*indigent person... must be taken to include only persons who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them.*"
- *Busser v. Snyder*, 37 ALR 1515: "*An Old Age Assistance Law is prohibited by a constitutional provision that no appropriation shall be made for charitable or benevolent purposes to any person.*"

And if you twice pay a tax not owed, guess what?

Once a slave, always a slave.

**Ab assuetis non fit injuria /æb' aswíydəs non fid injúriyǝ/. From things to which one is accustomed (or in which there has been long acquiescence) no legal injury or wrong arises. If a person neglects to insist on his right, he is deemed to have abandoned it.**

#### 2.14.4 Biblical warnings against accepting welfare

It has been said that the trouble with socialism is that you soon run out of other people's money. Socialism cannot recognize individual rights. By accepting socialism, or any other form of collectivism, you have denied individual rights and now "owe your fair share." You have denied individual God-given free-will -- regulations will now decide for you. Not only have you denied your own individual free-will, you elected representatives to forcibly deny others their God-given free-will. And the nation's resources must now be rationed. Abraham, Moses and Christ delivered people away from their slavery. But People were not satisfied with their Manna, and wanted to return to the delicacies. Numbers 11:5



Solomon's 12 governors supplied provisions for all who came to the king's table. Nothing was lacking, 1<sup>st</sup> Kings 4:27. Solomon's system of tax, tax, tax was continued after his death and resulted in 10 tribes seceding from the nation. They have never recovered. Later on, in chapter 3.8 I will explain:

*If you want to have a graven government, the LORD Himself warned you in 1 Samuel 8:5-17 that government will tax, tax and tax until you cannot stand it (and back then it was just 10%). You were warned that your elected king would take, take, take until society collectively wants God back into their life, but God will not answer your prayers (God honored your free-will, you got what you wanted, stop complaining). 1st Samuel 8:18 "And you will cry out in that day because of your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the LORD will not hear you in that day."*

Proverbs 23:1-3 When you sit down to eat with a ruler, Consider carefully what is before you; And put a knife to your throat If you are a man given to appetite. Do not desire his delicacies, For they are deceptive food.

Psalms 141:4 Do not incline my heart to any evil thing, To practice wicked works with men who work iniquity; And do not let me eat of their delicacies.

Proverbs 23:6 (KJV) Eat thou not the bread of him that hath an evil eye, neither desire thou his dainty meats:

Psalms 69:22 (KJV) Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap.

And this is repeated by Paul in Romans 11:9,10:

*And David says: "Let their table become a snare and a trap, A stumbling block and a recompense to them. Let their eyes be darkened, so that they do not see, and bow down their back always."*

Christians cannot associate with freeloaders according to 2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14.

And don't miss the Corban discussion, later in chapter 3.8

The Roman Empire provided bread and circuses (welfare and entertainment). It had to keep expanding until it occupied the entire known world. Then it collapsed. Jerusalem was under Roman rule for 666 years. More about this later.

### **2.14.5 Receiving welfare is a form of worship**

The Bible states this precept over and over. And America is now paying the divine consequence of its greed.

- Throughout the history of mankind, men have enslaved others for their own greedy purposes.
- Government cannot give in welfare what it does not take from others in taxes. If you take welfare you are enslaving others. If you want welfare benefits, then you have the same moral code as a slave owner. If you want others to provide for you -- then you are the same as a slave owner extorting compulsory contributions. The brutal inhumane treatment is the same. The legal support system is the same (although hiring a tax collector is one level away from hiring a whipping task-master). The greed is the same.
- When you take without giving you force others to give without taking.
- Any government strong enough to give you what you want is strong enough to take what you have.
- It is theft to hire a tax collector to brutally take what you demand

Rights can only come with responsibilities. Once you confess that you cannot take care of yourself, you are under a disability. Others can take care of you because you have surrendered your rights, and taken on certain duties. The law dictionary definition for disability is lengthy, but it summarizes that

*"The term is generally used to indicate an incapacity for the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights"*

One of your new duties is allegiance.

Unfortunately, you confessed that you needed benefits provided in whole or in part by Federal funds.

*The Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), allows Social Security Account Numbers to be assigned to an "applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds". After 1972, this was amended to include resident aliens.*

If we take away our neighbor's liberties, then our own liberties are reduced. You covet your neighbors' goods by demanding that a tax collector collect funds from your neighbor (using brutal force and seizures if he refuses to surrender funds voluntarily) which reduces your own right to own property. You cannot demand that your neighbor swear allegiance to your "higher authority" without reducing your own right to freedom.

In my chapter [Welfare part 2](#): I will show that welfare for individuals is unconstitutional.

### **2.14.6 What is lordship?**

Before you can understand lordship, citizenship or allegiance you need to understand that there cannot be such things if we are all created equal with no other master but the author of your being.

The following legal terms will be covered in later chapters:

- *tacit procuracy* according to Black's Law Dictionary "takes place when an individual sees another managing his affairs and does not interfere to prevent it."
- "constructive" and implied contracts
- the legal maxim: protection draws subjection
- the definition of allegiance

They are all legal ways to subordinate those who cannot take care of themselves and make them subject to whomever provides benefits. These legal tricks were developed to synchronize with their 500 year old vow by Satanic front groups to "*capture, vanquish and subdue... enemies... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery.*"

Satan has been busy for 2000 years trying to disqualify ALL his future judges:

- According to the Supreme Court, "the citizen cannot complain because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government." (Cruikshank case)
- Roles were reversed. Normally congressmen are agents of their constituents. They were the servants (civil servants), we were the masters. The Mace of the United States was the symbol by which we controlled our servants. Supreme political power (*jura summi imperii*) rests in the class of people who created their government. By accepting welfare, you become subjects of the servants. You now owe allegiance to your master/lord/provider. You become servants of the servants.
- By doing nothing, You granted your former servants a power of attorney and "there is no prescription from procuracy". (There is no remedy available to you. You cannot claim that your principal harmed you. It is a principal's duty to control their agent, representative, employee, child, ward, congressman, etc.).
- You are now considered a ward of "government", incompetent and need an attorney to represent you.
- tacit procuracy is automatically assumed unless you actively interfere to stop them from managing your affairs.
- Even the right to remain silent is not "accorded to the passive resistant". It cannot even be claimed by an attorney. That's right. An attorney cannot go into court and claim that you have a right to remain silent! (Johnson case).
- the Supreme Court will not review any case where someone questions the constitutionality of a benefit after they availed themselves of the benefit. (Ashwander case).
- You volunteered to be inferior to the government that was created to secure the blessings of their masters' posterity.
- the law of the land must "oblige the inferior to take the will of him on whom he depends..." (Blackstone's Commentaries on the Law).
- Maxim of law: "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt.*

### 2.14.7 Can you take care of yourself?

Social Security numbers are only available only to those who need federal funds according to Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B) and to aliens (after 1972). In later chapters, we will examine why this is so. It cannot be otherwise and remain constitutional.

Citizenship rights are not accorded to indigent, poor or vagabonds. We will discuss the poor laws, indigence, vagabonds and citizenship in other chapters.

God hated Esau for selling his birthright (with an oath, Genesis 25:33) for a bowl of stew. At least he got to eat what he contracted for. You sold everything for a promise of a future bowl of stew.

If you cannot take care of yourself, how could you expect the rights of citizenship? You cannot even have a right to contract. John Locke's Second Treatise of Government Chapter 15 asks the question "For what compact can be made with a man that is not master of his own life?"

If you waive your right to earn wages, your wages become taxable.

### 2.14.8 Debtors must lose

The borrower is slave to the lender. Proverbs 22:7

You cannot defraud your neighbor. No judge, on earth or in heaven, is going to allow unrepentant intentional deception. If you expect others to provide benefits for you, then you are earning your bread from the sweat of other men's faces.

This is a maxim of law. You must fulfill your contract obligations, even implied contracts, or you will be forced to pay. Just as you cannot write a bad check and expect to get away with it, you cannot avail yourself of socialist benefits and expect to keep your rights.

There is another maxim: Give honor to whom honor is due. (Romans 13:7)

You cannot dishonor a check without giving a reason. Once you give a reason to dishonor a check, the drawee can then rebut your reason and again present it for payment. You can then rebut the rebuttal, and so on until you finally arrive at the central issue upon which your yes must be yes and your no must be no (Matthew 5:37). Civil lawsuits in Merchant law require a mandatory counterclaim. You cannot deny. A denial disproves nothing.

Under civil law, creditors must win and debtors must lose. Debtors cannot have protection of the law. The United States Articles of Confederation denied all rights of citizenship to paupers. (debtors are not under the law, they are under grace. The law is irrelevant to them.)

In order to have standing in a real court of justice (we don't have these anymore), you must be solvent. (This is in order to bond your claim so that you can be counter-sued. Your net worth is the bond that insures that you do not misuse the justice system).

The law only recognizes solvency, creditors must be solvent. Debtors are not under the law, they are under grace.

Solvency requires lawful money. Gold coins are the only lawful money of the United States (Constitution Article I, section 10). Gold was removed from circulation in 1933, by the occupying Roman army.

You cannot pay a debt with a debt. Federal Reserve Notes are debt. If you cannot pay your debts with gold, you have no protection of the law, you are under their grace. They can remove their grace at any time.

### 2.14.9 Can a slave own anything?

I want to use the word *slave* instead of *ward* so that you will understand that the results are the same. To excuse my use of the word, I ask that you consider the following:

- "The ultimate ownership of all property is in the State: individual so-called 'ownership' is only by virtue of Government, i.e. law amounting to mere user; and use must be in accordance with law and subordinate to the necessities of the State" [Senate Document No. 43, 73<sup>rd</sup> Congress 1<sup>st</sup> Session, quoting *Brown v. Welch*]
- Later on, I will prove that this "use" of government owned property includes an employers use of government owned labor. Your labor is government owned.
- Allegiance is defined by Homeland Security in their Title 8, Code of Federal Regulations, section 337 as a commitment to perform unlimited work

*"... I will perform work of national importance under civilian direction when required by the law; and that I take this obligation freely without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; so help me God"*

- Even Compton's dictionary says that statute labor and debt labor are often indistinguishable from slavery.
- Black's Law Dictionary definition of Allegiance: "Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives."

*"The right of traffic or the transmission of property, as an absolute inalienable right, is one which has never existed since governments were instituted, and never can exist under government." Wynehamer v. NY, 13 N.Y. 378, 481.*

Your lost right to contract.

- Your yes must be yes, and your no, no.
- You must keep your word.
- Governments are instituted among men to secure rights including right of contract. No state may impair the obligations of contracts.
- Bankruptcy (and minimum wage, and unemployment insurance, and social security, etc) are only for government slaves.
- The laws of commerce require that debtors must lose and creditors must win.
- Creditors must be solvent. Debtors cannot be creditors -- everything owed to a debtor is actually owned by their creditors.
- The borrower is servant to the lender. Proverbs 22:7. Debtors are not under the law, they are under grace until the creditor wants his collateral.
- As a debtor, you cannot own anything.
- By the way, The [18 million Lira Revolutionary War debt](#) has not been paid yet, thanks to principalities and freemasons in high places.
- And yes, congress can bind you to their debt. 1795 US Supreme Court in Penhallow v. Doane, 3 U.S. 55 at page 94: "representatives shall be chosen to act on the part of the whole. But when they do so, they decide for the whole, and not for themselves only."
- And if you don't like it, too bad. *Procuracionem adversus nulla est proæscriptio*. There is no prescription for procuracy. If you are represented, then you cannot be damaged by your representative. Your submission is complete submission with the full understanding that you cannot be damaged by your representative.
- You had a duty to control your representatives. You failed. They wormed their way into becoming a democracy. Now the misguided majority decides what rights you get to keep. (And yes, Satan has been busy for two thousand years trying to arrange for you to easily contract into his substitute laws).
- Notice that the word "bind" is used in the Bible to refer to a mark that is both on hands and foreheads. Deuteronomy 6:8, Deuteronomy 11:18, Proverbs 7:2-3. Now notice that the word 'pledge' as in a pledge of allegiance means to bind -- *Strong's* H2254. A pledge of allegiance is an oath to be bound, and is symbolically a mark on your hands and forehead.
- Acts 22:29 a Roman officer cannot bind a Roman citizen. Yet you volunteered.

- You took a binding oath of allegiance. What you bind on earth is bound in heaven. You must suffer the consequences. The smoke of your torment shall rise forever.

The U.S. government went bankrupt in 1933 and all assets were turned over to the foreign creditors. Think what this means. The U.S. government cannot own a courthouse, or a prison, or a handcuff, or even a coin. THEY CANNOT OWN A SLAVE. Everything “federal” that you see around you is administered by the foreign bankruptcy receivership. Congress just makes the rules on how the foreign policies are to be administered.

- Details and consequences of the nation’s bankruptcy were explained by Congressman Traficant in the Congressional Record – House, March 17, 1993 Volume 33, on page H1303:

*“Members of Congress are official trustees presiding over the greatest re-organization of any bankrupt entity in world history, the U.S. Government. ...the United States Federal Government has been dissolved by the Emergency Banking Act, March 9, 1933, 48 Stat. 1, Public Law 89-719; declared by President Roosevelt, being bankrupt and insolvent. H.J.R. 192, 73rd Congress session June 5, 1933 - Joint Resolution To Suspend The Gold Standard and Abrogate The Gold Clause dissolved the Sovereign Authority of the United States and the official capacities of all United States Governmental Offices, Officers, and Departments...”*

- 1973 the Report of the Special Committee on the Termination of the National Emergency, U.S. Senate Report 93-549 confirms that there had been 63 years of ongoing emergency powers: *“Since March the 9<sup>th</sup>, 1933, the United States has been in a state of declared national emergency. Under the powers delegated by these statutes... martial law ... control the lives of all American citizens”*

Your labor is owned by your master. “Employment” is not what you think.

The “Employer” is employing the government owned labor, not labor that you think you own. You do not sell your own labor to any employer, you sell the government owned labor to a buyer who uses (employs) the government labor. The take-home part of your paycheck is merely your living allowance. You are allowed to get a living allowance – masters must provide necessities of life to their slaves. They own the right to all of your labor but they permit you to keep a living allowance. So instead of taking 100% and keeping you in a labor camp, they instead choose to provide a living allowance. Traditionally slaves only had to pay 20% tax into the treasury during times of national emergency (Genesis 47:20-24 If you get less than 80%, then you are worse off than a slave under Pharaoh). The Jehovah God had to directly intervene to deliver his people out of bondage to Pharaoh. What chance do you have of direct intervention if you don’t even know you are enslaved?

A man void of understanding striketh hands, and becometh surety in the presence of his friend. Proverbs 17:18

Be not thou one of them that strike hands, or of them that are sureties for debts. Proverbs 22:26

And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you:.... 2 Peter 2:3

By claiming to be a citizen or by agreeing to their benefits, you consent or “striketh hands” and agree to pay for the national debt. This is done by your own testimony. Because of your failure to pledge to support another jurisdiction, the Kingdom of God, you have agreed by tacit procurement to be the Human Resource.

Now that you can sense the fundamentals, you are prepared to study the question: Have multinational organizations fulfilled their vow dated from 1452 to “capture, vanquish and subdue... enemies... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery.”?

### **3 SECTION 3: ENDTIME PROPHECY**

#### **3.1 Prophecy**

In these chapters I will try to logically and objectively examine a wide variety of interpretations that agree with the prophecy of Revelation chapter 13. We cannot yet prove with certainty what the mark is, but there are solid clues that cannot be dismissed. Many people are stuck on preconceptions that may blind them to the real possibilities. These folks try to JUSTIFY their antibiblical behavior BECAUSE OF the “delusion” they have been put under by the Almighty. To excuse their failure to keep His Commandments, they claim we are “no longer under the law.” (As if the laws of physics and nature somehow changed with the first coming of the Messiah).

- 2<sup>nd</sup> Peter 1:20 tells us that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.
- The word “Revelation” (the Greek word is “*Apocalypse*”) means “revealing.” It is not a hiding.
- Despise not prophesying. Prove all things. 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5:20-21.
- Genesis 40:8 interpretations belong to God.

Also consider that Isaiah 40:21, John. 14:29, 16:4 show that prophecy is routinely only understood AFTER the thing happens. (Which is where we find ourselves now. Leaves are on the fig tree).

Prophecies are in the Bible for someone who has an ear to hear. Yes, there has always been wild speculation about Bible prophecy. There have been many interpretations that cannot be supported by scripture. And there are many interpretations that seemingly agree with scripture that will turn out to be wrong. Only time will tell. If your very salvation is in jeopardy, a prudent person will not dismiss anything that agrees with prophecy.

Christ himself tells us why prophecy is important. It is there so that you might believe. In John 14:29 he gave us the purpose of prophecy: “**And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe.**”

1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 14:22 says prophecy is for those who believe.

1 Corinthians 14:22 (KJV) "... prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe."

Prophecy is Revealed so that we might be encouraged to DO all the words of the law, not so that we might spend endless hours speculating:

*Deuteronomy 29:29 (KJV) "The secret things belong unto the LORD our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever, that we may do all the words of this law."*

Satan cast out.	Reuelation.	Satans rage.
<p>her head a Crowne of twelue starres :                  2 And shee bring with child, cried, traoualing in birth, and pained to be deliuered.                  3 And there appeared another <sup>Or, figure.</sup> wonder in heauen, and behold a great red dragon, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.                  4 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, and did cast them to the earth : And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be deliuered, for to deuoure her child as soone as it was borne.                  5 And shee brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her child was caught vp vnto God, and to his Throne.                  6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where shee hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand, two hundred, and threescore dayes.                  7 And there was warre in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, &amp; the dragon fought and his angels,                  8 And preuailed not, neither was their place found any moze in heauen.                  9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the deuill and Satan, which deceueth the whole world: hee was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.                  10 And I heard a lowd voyce saying in heauen, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the powler of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.                  11 And they ouercame him by the blood of the Lambe, and by the word of their Testimony, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.                  12 Therefore reioyce, yee heauens, and yee that dwell in them: woe to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuill is come downe vnto you, hauing great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.                  13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child.                  14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great Eagle, that shee might flee into the wilderness into her</p>	<p>place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.                  15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman: that he might cause her to bee carried away of the flood.                  16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.                  17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the Commaundements of God, and haue the testimony of Iesus Christ.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><b>C H A P. XIII.</b></p> <p>1 A beast riseth out of the sea with seuen heads and ten hornes, to whom the dragon giueth his power. 11 An other beast cometh vp out of the earth: 14 causeth an image to be made of the former beast, 15 and that men should worship it, 16 and receiue his marke.</p> <p><b>A</b>d I stood vpon the sand of the sea: and saw a beast rise by out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes ten crownes, and vpon his heads, the name of blasphemie. <sup>Or, name.</sup>                  2 And the beast which I saw, was like vnto a Leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a Lion: and the dragon gaue him his powler, and his seat, and great authoritie.                  3 And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. <sup>Or, saue.</sup>                  4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue powler vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, who is like vnto the beast: who is able to make warre with him:                  5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies, and powler was giuen vnto him to continue fortie and two moneths. <sup>Or, to make warre.</sup>                  6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemie against God, to blasphemie his name, and his Tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.                  7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to ouer-</p>	

Revelation 13 in King James Version of 1611

### 3.2 How will we recognize the mark?

Revelation 13 has many points of identification that we may rely upon to recognize the mark. We cannot add or subtract from prophecy. But, we can study and calmly acknowledge the events unfolding around us so that if “**it is come to pass, ye might believe.**”

#### Revelation 13 New King James Version:

{1} Then I stood on the sand of the sea. And I saw a beast rising up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and on his horns ten crowns, and on his heads a blasphemous name.

Comments: Verse 12 calls this beast “the first beast”. This first beast is not the beast associated with the mark. There is a second beast, introduced in verse 11, that intends to cause people to receive (give) a mark in verse 16.

What does the sea symbolize? According to DIVINE interpretation, from an angel, in Revelation 17:15, the sea symbolically refers to people, multitudes, nations and tongues.

What does a beast symbolize? According to DIVINE interpretation, from an angel, in Daniel 7:23 the exceedingly dreadful beast symbolized a final world kingdom, not necessarily a king. Perhaps John the revelator saw a ruling government power rise up from the multitudes.

What do horns symbolize? According to DIVINE interpretation in Daniel 7:24, Daniel 8:20 and in Revelation 17:12 the 10 horns symbolize 10 kings that came out of the beast kingdom, possibly successive kings. possibly concurrent kings.

Some people jump to the conclusion that the beast heads also represent kings, not just kingdoms, because in Revelation 17:9&10 the seven beast heads are the seven hills which just happens to match the numerical count of kings. It has been argued that horns can also symbolize dynasties or perhaps personified governments. Perhaps this 10 horned beast prophecy has been fulfilled. On his head is a blasphemous name (the original King James version has a margin note that this could be plural *names*).

Blasphemy has several interpretations

- When Christ was accused of Blasphemy it was “The act of claiming for oneself the attributes and rights of God.”
- Any contemptuous or profane act utterance or writing concerning God, His name [which, by the way is YHVH, or in Hebrew, “יהוה”], His attributes, or upon religion.
- Any word or deed intended to dishonor God or his work, as a curse or profanity
- Speaking evil of the deity with an impious purpose
- To alienate the minds of others from the love and reverence of God.
- Willful and malicious attempt to lessen men’s reverence of God by denying His existence, or His attributes as an intelligent creator, governor, and judge of men, and to prevent their confidence in Him.
- In old English law, according to Black’s Law Dictionary, “blasphemy is the offense of speaking matter relating to God, Jesus Christ, the Bible, or the Book of Common Prayer, intended to wound the feelings of mankind or to excite contempt and hatred against the church..., or to promote immorality.”

As you can see, we failed to uphold the laws against Blasphemy, and we must now suffer the consequence. Public Schools must now use your money to commit Blasphemy.

Certainly the bestowing of once-unalienable rights was a righteous work of the Almighty Creator. How could it not be blasphemous to worship the secular authority -- the Novus Ordo Seclorum -- that you now worship?

Since the sea, according to Revelation 17:15, refers to multitudes, nations and tongues, some have interpreted this as a beast coming from a densely populated Europe, or that this is a “universal” beast, or simply any ruling power that comes from a multitude. To avoid jumping to conclusions we cannot dismiss any blasphemous democracy (ruling power rising from a multitude), even if we cannot yet identify ten specific horns. Aside: some people speculate that the 10 kings are the 10 European families to whom we owe the national debt – as the ultimate owners (shareholders) of the banks that loaned the money.



{2} Now the beast which I saw was like a leopard, his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion. The dragon gave him his power, his throne, and great authority.

Comment: This is a composite of the most notable features of each beast mentioned in Daniel 7. DIVINE interpretation, by an angel, of Daniel 7:12&23 says that the ten horned beast will take away the dominion of, and devour the leopard, bear, lion kingdoms. Here in Revelation 13 this beast has assimilated all the nations of Daniel 7 into a confederacy of beast powers. Some people claim that this is the Roman Empire because divine interpretation of Nebuchadnezzar's image of a fourth iron kingdom (Daniel 2:40) fits chronologically with the Roman Empire. And indeed, history has shown that the Roman Empire took away the dominion of, and devoured other beast kingdoms. A prudent person should not dismiss any kingdom rising up out of a multitude that claims its authority from the Roman Empire.

The second sentence of verse 2 states that the dragon gave him his power, throne and authority. Therefore the dragon cannot be the beast. Perhaps there is a connection to the red dragon of Revelation 12:3, which also has 7 heads and 10 horns, and (12:17) will hunt down the remaining Christian remnant who keep the Commandments of God, and seems to have influenced Herod to attempt murder of the Christ child (12:4). Shouldn't a democracy (ruling power rising from a multitude) that speaks blasphemy, and is now targeting Christians, be suspicious? Especially if it is patterned after Roman Civil Law?

The red dragon of Revelation chapter 12 has the same number of heads and horns, but only has 7 crowns, whereas this first beast of Revelation chapter 13 has 10 crowns. Since the dragon gave the beast "his power, his throne and great authority" we might speculate that a delegation of authority (coronation) moved all 7 crowns from dragon heads to beast horns. Perhaps the beast already had three crowns of its own, or conversely, three kings have counterfeit crowns. Or perhaps 3 crowns were assimilated after Revelation 12. Or perhaps this is two completely different beasts altogether (one with 7 AND one with 10 crowns). All we really know is that horns symbolize kings of the beast kingdom, possibly successive kings, and that DIVINE interpretation, by an angel, in Revelation 17:9 says these "seven heads are seven hills on which the woman sits." Perhaps this has already become history. (Hint: Rome has 7 hills).

{3} And I saw one of his heads as if it had been mortally wounded, and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world marveled and followed the beast.

**Point of identification:** look for worship (per verse 12) of a confederation of beast powers that was once thought of as dead but did live. There have been many speculations about this. ANYTHING in history that agrees with scripture cannot be ruled out. Some claim that the seventh head was wounded to death when the barbarians overran the Roman Empire in AD 476. All of the known world marveled. All of the known world followed. Some have claimed that the capture of the Pope by Napoleon's General Berthier in 1798 was the mortal wound. As for me, the decline and fall of the Roman Empire is sufficient, and I marvel that the treaty that authorizes the United States to exist, which is the *Treaty of Paris* with King George III, explicitly mentions that "*the Arch Treasurer and Prince Elector of the Holy Roman Empire*" gives the United States the authority to exist. [[Treaty of Paris 1763](#) & [The Definitive Treaty of Peace 1783](#) 8 U.S. Statutes at Large 80]

**Point of identification:** Last sentence of verse 3, and in verse 7, we see that this first beast has world wide influence. Not necessarily a worldwide government.

Verse 3 does NOT say a sword wounded this beast. And we cannot conclude with absolute certainty that this is the beast of verse 14. However, if this is the beast of Revelation 14, and if sword refers to the word of God, as in Ephesians 6:17 and Hebrews 4:12 and Matthew 10:34, then we should be looking for a military power resembling a confederation of Daniel's beast powers, supported by the multitudes, that was wounded by the word of God. Hints: according to some traditions Pilate was executed for executing Christ, and the Protestant reformation certainly wounded the Holy Roman Empire.

{4} So they worshiped the dragon who gave authority to the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, "Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?"

Comment: Again we see that this beast is not the dragon. Perhaps the dragon is the red dragon that is mentioned in Revelation 12. I want to suggest that this is the same type of today's government powers that wait to devour

Christian children at birth as is indicated by Revelation 12:17. The dragon is an associate, according to Revelation 12:9, of a serpent devil, and Satan.

Who can make war with the Beast? Is this “war” a military war power? Or, alternatively, perhaps this “war” is a challenge by beast worshipers to surrender peacefully to Roman powers. Is it a hint that the Beast powers are so overwhelming such that no one dare attack the Beast? Or is it warning about a lifetime contract of indentured servitude that no one can legally challenge (my paraphrase: “who is like the beast” means “who has the equal status to legally challenge the beast”)?

Is military martial law involved? Let’s briefly examine military war powers. Daniel 7 used the term “exceedingly dreadful” in verse 19, and “shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces” verse 23. And take away the dominion of the other beasts per verse 12. Both Daniel 7:21 and Revelation 13:7 say the beast will make war with the saints, and Revelation 13:10 speaks of killing with a sword while saints remain patient. The Catholic Church has never had significant military power\*, but Roman Emperors certainly have.

\* There were Catholic military religious orders such as the Knights Templar, the Knights of Saint John of Jerusalem, and the Teutonic Knights. All three were founded in Palestine during the Crusades.

**Point of identification:** look for worship of a confederation of forceful (perhaps military) beast powers that was once thought of as dead but did live. A salute is a form of worship, and a salute would also fit into the military flavor of this prophecy.

Verse 12 calls this beast “the first beast.” The brutal first beast rose from the sea. The Law of the Sea includes Admiralty, Commercial Law and Equity. Each of these equate force with justice. Each came into existence by people demanding that government do something to enforce fairness.\* (whereas Christians would rather be wronged – 1st Corinthians 6:7) They all require centralized authority to forcibly administer justice. But, you cannot love your neighbor if you force him to obey Herod, Caesar, Pharaoh or Hitler. To regulate your neighbors’ rights is to covet and play god. Until you resist exercising authority over your neighbors, you cannot be free. Christ, at the Last Supper, told us that we are not to rule over others (Matt 20:25, Mark 10:42, Luke 22:25). In Luke 22:25 Christ even warns us not to become benefactors in order to rule over others. Man does not have the inherent right to exercise authority over other men. Your [Declaration of Independence](#) says that all men are created equal – but you rejected the precept.

\* political demands rising up from the sea of multitudes

Any socialist system that forces your neighbor to pay for what you want is covetous – contrary to the 10<sup>th</sup> Commandment, and anti Christ. In Christ’s time, the Corban welfare system (the Roman system of forced contributions called *qurban*, not the earlier system of voluntary contributions) made the word of God of no effect according to Christ himself in Mark 7:11-13.

Quakers will not worship anyone. Forced liturgy was will-worship and contrary to the free will that God grants us (anti freewill, anti-created-equal, anti-Christ) Penitentiaries were an invention of the Quakers in Pennsylvania. Penitentiaries were invented so that the convict would not be forced to conform to the will of society (no forced worship of authority, no worship of beast powers, even from convicts).

{5} And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months.

The first beast, which is not the beast that causeth all to receive a mark, continues in power for 42 months. Months could be literal months. But there is another possibility. Yearlong days are used in Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6. In the next chapter, I will show that the historical Protestant position is that the 42 months has already occurred.

The original King James has a margin note that this could be translated “to make war forty-two months”.

{6} Then he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, His tabernacle, and those who dwell in heaven.

**Point of identification:** look for worship of an authority of beast powers, once thought of as dead but did live, that exercises worldwide military influence (or at least police powers), speaking against God.

{7} It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them. And authority was given him over every tribe, tongue, and nation.

**Point of identification:** look for worship (caused by the second beast in verse 12) of an authority of beast powers once thought of as dead but did live (resembling Daniel 7's final brutal iron beast after it took away dominion of the other beasts), that has military power, worldwide influence, speaks against God, rises up from the multitudes and overcomes saints. I don't think you need to look far.

It specifically says "make war with the saints", yet many people are deceived into believing that a previous rapture brought the church up to heaven. The church is where the saints are according to 1 Corinthians 14:33.

{8} All who dwell on the earth will worship him, whose names have not been written in the Book of Life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

Rickerberry translation of Revelation 13:8 "and shall do homage to **it** all who dwell on the earth..."

Comment: Bible believers will not worship (Greek *proskuneo* = prostrate oneself in homage to) the first Beast. Notice that the verb "worship" refers to a body motion, later I will show that the U.S. Supreme Court has acknowledged that a salute is worship. It is the assuming of a body position, initiated by the inferior toward the superior. Oaths are always taken to a superior. Hebrews 6:16. And James 5:12 warns us that we could be condemned by taking oaths. Even today, a courtroom perjury oath is given with the right hand raised. Do you worship/salute a beast power when you sign a perjury oath on a government form? Raising your right hand is a salute to a superior, and a confession that we are not created equal. It is a mark on your right hand

The Declaration of Independence says we are all created equal. If we are all created equal, why would anyone take an oath to a judge or on a government form?

Just as an oath of allegiance is worship of a superior, so also is availing oneself of socialist benefits.

Last half of verse 8: Christians will not worship the ten-horned confederation of beast powers.

{9} If anyone has an ear, let him hear.

Comment: Verses 9 and 10 changed the subject. These two verses address you, the reader. If anyone has an ear, let him hear. The Revelation 13 message will be difficult to understand by those who do not want to understand. If you want to hear, then you cannot reject anything that agrees with prophecy. As I explained earlier, the Lord himself will send you strong delusion in proportion to the multitude of idols that you worship.

{10} He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Comment: The NIV translation says "If anyone is to go into captivity, into captivity he will go." The original King James added a margin note that this referred to Matthew 26:52. Sword might refer to the military. Sword can also refer to the word of God as in Matthew 10:34, Ephesians 6:17, Hebrews 4:12. Saints (that's you) will patiently endure this captivity. If sword is military, saints will endure the sword. If sword is spiritual, saints will kill and be killed spiritually. It says "faith of the saints" reaffirming again that the saints are on earth, not previously raptured to heaven.

This is a confirmation of Daniel 11:33 prophecy: "fall by the sword or be burned or captured or plundered." Perhaps John the Revelator assumed his readers would understand his reference to Daniel 11:33, and he didn't think he needed to add the last three possibilities. Are you in captivity, captured or plundered?

The Lambe slaine. Chap.xiiiij. A new song.

ouercome them : And powber was giuen him ouer all kinreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwel vpon the earth, shall wo:ship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare :

\*Math. 26. 52.

10 Hee that leadeth into captiuitie, shall goe into captiuitie : \* Hee that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming by out of the earth, and hee had two hornes like a lambe, and hee spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the powber of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein, to wo:ship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And hee doeth great wonders, so that hee maketh fire come downe from heauen on the earth in the sight of men,

†Gr. breath.

14 And deceueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of those miracles which he had powber to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an Image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did liue.

15 And he had powber to giue life vnto the Image of the beast, that the Image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not wo:ship the Image of the beast, should be killed.

†G. 11 giue.

16 And he causeth all, both smal and great rich and poore, free and bond, to receiue a marke in their right hand, or in their forehead :

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath vnderstanding, count the number of the beast : for it is the number of a man, and his number is, six hundred threescore and sixe.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The Lambe standing on mount Sion with his company. 6 an Angel preacheth the Gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harvest of the worlde, and putting in of the

sickle. 20 The vintage and winepresse of the wrath of God.

And I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred and forty and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheade.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the voice of many waters, and as the voyce of a great thunder : and I heard the voyce of harpers, harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundred and fourtie and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women : for they are virgines : These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoener hee goeth : These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lambe.

†Gr. were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile : for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another Angel flie in the midst of heauen, hauing the euerglasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voyce, Feare God, and giue glory to him, for the houre of his iudgement is come : \* and wo:shippe him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

\*Ps. 146. 5  
2Sa. 14. 15.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, \* Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great cite, because she made all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

\*Esa. 21. 9.  
Iere. 51. 8.  
chap. 18. 2.

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loud voyce, If any man wo:ship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, which is purged out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and hee shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lambe :

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth

{11} Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon.

Comment: This second beast will cause all to receive a mark in verse 16. “Out of the earth” is contrasted with the first beast’s “rising up out of the sea” in verse 1. Horns symbolize kings according to DIVINE interpretation, by angels, in Daniel 7:24 and in Revelation 17:12. [note that some have argued that horns represent dynasties or kingdoms or personified governments]. As was my comment for verse 4, it is possible that the dragon can symbolize the control of the Roman Empire, as well as symbolize Satan. Speaking like a dragon is not necessarily speaking blasphemy. Speaking like a dragon can mean speaking deception.

IS there a sufficient beast authority rising out of the land from such possibilities as Columbus declaring America for the Pope, or perhaps King John giving the land of England to Pope Innocent III as a fiefdom, (which is perpetuated today through the American Bar Association, as a branch of the British Bar Association)? Do you know of any bar association that speaks deception to get you to worship the first beast?

{12} And he exercises all the authority of the first beast in his presence, and causes the earth and those who dwell in it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

Rickerberry translation of Revelation 13:12 and all the authority of the first beast **it** exercises before **it** and causes the earth and those who dwell in it that they should do homage to the first beast of whom was healed the wound of **its** death.

Comment: The second beast is an agent of the first beast. (This is not my terminology. Verse 12 calls it “the first beast”). Beware of any form of worship of the first beast confederation, the one with brutal power, that speaks blasphemy and overcomes saints and was once thought of as dead. As for worship-homage to the first beast: A salute is a form of worship, as is a perjury oath.

{13} He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

Comment: I have another chapter just on this topic. Fire from heaven is a capability of the second beast. It is either a literal fire or a symbolic fire. If literal: We are living in a time where military can make fire come down from heaven in the sight of men. If symbolic: light from heaven could symbolize the glory of a counterfeit god. “In sight of” is used in the Bible more than 150 times. It can mean “on behalf of” as in verse 14, or it can mean “in defiance of” or “in the witness of”. Anything in history that agrees with this prophecy cannot be flippantly dismissed.

We know from Revelation 19:20 that the false prophet will use miracles to deceive those that already had the mark. We presume that this Revelation 13:13 fire from the sky miracle will be used to deceive men into making an image to the first beast in Revelation 13:14. But this is prior to the mark existing. It doesn’t explicitly state that the miracles cause people to get the mark. All the other indications of war lead me to believe that fire from heaven is military fire. But there are other possibilities for you to consider. If you want to insist that fire from heaven cause people to get the mark, you have to consider that brightness from heaven signifies God’s glory. As in Luke 2:9, Acts 22:6, Acts 26:13, 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 4:4&6, Hebrews 1:3, and in Revelation 21:23. (*Glory* means *very apparent*) Perhaps this performance of a great sign is referring to the glory of a counterfeit God in the sight of men. Were you induced by the glory of a counterfeit god to get a number so you could sell your labor? If so, then you cannot dismiss this as a “great sign.” The glory of their counterfeit gods is depicted on the ceiling of the U.S. Capitol rotunda. Is this a “great sign”?

Another possibility is that John is referring to fire from heaven similar to the great sign from heaven that influenced those at Pentecost. Such supernatural signs (real or simulated) could deceive people that they have divine approval.

Another possibility that cannot be ruled out: Would the fiery destruction from the sky of the world trade center influence public opinion (a democracy power rising from the multitudes) to demand that you worship (with a perjury oath signature) on an ID card (engraved and symbolically in your right hand and forehead), the logo of the Department of Justice (graven image of the eagle that follows the goddess Justitia, from Roman mythology once thought of as dead but did live), forced on you by military power with worldwide influence, that speaks against God, demands worship and overcomes saints? Are you sure? And yes, it is international: I will prove later that the U.S. Attorney General is forced to take orders from INTERPOL whether he likes it or not.

{14} And he deceives those who dwell on the earth by those signs which he was granted to do in the sight of the beast, telling those who dwell on the earth to make an image to the beast who was wounded by the sword and lived.

**Point of identification:** Deception is involved. There is no hint of force, only deception. Perhaps just a hidden agenda. Beast #2 simply tells earthlings to make an image to the first beast. These signs are different than those in verse 13; these are done in the sight of the Beast whereas verse 13 was in the sight of men. The two-horned second beast kingdom deceptively, perhaps even politely, asks the people of the earth to make an image (Greek *icon* = profile, representation, resemblance, depiction) to, not of, the beast. Blasphemy is not mentioned as the authority. War is not mentioned. Religion is not mentioned. Anything that fits these prophecies cannot be flippantly dismissed.

**Point of identification:** This image of a beast is (or was, or will eventually be) worshipped and has a voice according to verse 15.

The book of Revelation is very symbolic. AN IMAGE DOES NOT HAVE TO BE AN INANIMATE OBJECT. If you are still looking for inanimate graven object to worship before you will worry about the mark, then consider that mankind was made in the **image** of God and no one suggests that image is an inanimate object. Perhaps the societies (and all their institutions) created by godless men are based on the image of godless men. Don't worship them.

The book of Revelation is very symbolic, but even if you are looking for physical images: a coin has an image (the very same Greek word *icon*), as in Mark 12:16. Could a monument to Pharaoh on the Great Seal of The United States be dismissed? How about the UN flag or the INTERPOL globe with a dagger through it (I will prove later that the Secretary of the Treasury that issues Social Security cards\* is forced to take orders from INTERPOL, as is the Attorney General)? How about the statue atop the Capitol Building or the painting of Roman gods on the rotunda ceiling? How about the obelisk in Washington District of Columbia, which is an image of the obelisk at the Vatican? Do you salute in court (just by obedience to their process) an eagle with his talons in a globe that symbolizes the bar association's takeover of the world?

\* The application for a Social Security Card is an IRS form, not a SSA form.

Another possibility exists for a symbolic image. You must control whatever you create. If we create a government to enforce God's laws, it is up to us to control it and keep it subservient to the lawful chain of command. Our civil servants did not like being subservient. They did not like the chain of command we created so they used deception to create, for their control, a false authority, as a mirror image of the actual authority. Their chain of command is the mirror image that you salute.

The polite but deceptive second beast rose from the land. Here is a possibility:

When the Mayflower pilgrims landed in 1620, the second beast rises from the land (venue) to restore the old ideals of Common Law and love of neighbor, and personal responsibility, and de-centralized government. De-centralized government existed for the first ten books of the Bible (until Saul was elected as King –which was evil in the eyes of the Lord, 1 Sam 12:17b). The history of early America, from the Mayflower to William Penn's Pennsylvania, was a history of fleeing from centralized authority to bring forth on this continent a new nation conceived in liberty. See my chapter "Do you Worship a Beast Authority?" for more notes on decentralized authority. But it didn't last. The Pilgrims were overthrown by a beast power and we became British subjects under a central government. (the laws of commerce, through the British East India Company overwhelmed the venue of religious separatists). Even the common law did not last. And today's courtrooms can no longer have a flag on the wall. It must be on a stand planted next to their judge, not attached to the venue.

According to Webster's 1913 Unabridged Dictionary: By the year 1873 "when rules of equity and of common law, in any particular case, conflict, the rules of equity are to prevail". And the Encyclopedia Britannica of 1911 (11<sup>th</sup> edition, Vol IX, page 727) stated of equity jurisdiction: "*The evils of this double system of judicature...*" were enforced by the Act of 1873 which "*consolidated the courts of law and equity, and ordered that law and equity should be administered concurrently.*" In other words: By means of the miracles (magic of deception) which you had the power to do in the sight of the first beast, you incorporated into the first beast. Now the second beast exercises all the authority of the first beast, and causes the earth's inhabitants to worship the first beast.

{15} He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed.

Rickerberry translation of Revelation 13:15 "...as many as not would do homage to the image of the beast..."

Comment: the second beast kingdom is granted (no word for *power* is in the original Greek) to breathe life into the image-icon-representation that we were previously asked to fabricate in verse 14.

Do not jump to the conclusion that the word "killed" means everyone who refuses to worship will be executed by a government.

There are many Biblical genocides that do not mean everyone is executed. Example:

Romans 8:36 (KJV) As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

There is a much more likely killing that the saints were very familiar with. Forced allegiance that is self-condemnation.

After all:

- James insists: Above all my brethren, swear not at all ... neither by any other oath, ... least ye be condemned. (James 5:12)
- Christ often spoke of the living as already dead.
- the saints had to work out their salvation with fear and trembling. (Philippians 2:12)
- Those who love Christ enough to obey him would not swear oaths (Matthew 5:34). Even lifting of the hand is swearing (see my chapter on oaths).
- Swearing condemns (as in James 5:12) "nor by any other oath" such as affirm. Least ye be condemned. Can a perjury oath signature be any different?
- "*Throughout the ages men have suffered death rather than subordinate their allegiance to God to the authority of the State.*" -- The U.S Supreme Court in *Girouard v. U.S.*, 328 U.S. 61 (1946)
- Forced allegiance has taken many forms throughout history. Emperior Decius required incense burning as a form of worship. The Catholics made it punishable by death to worship on the Jewish Sabbath (obey the Fourth Commandment). And the Anabaptists were hunted down and killed for believing that church membership must be voluntary. Quakers had the same problem because they believed that all forced liturgy was an abomination. Starting in 1563 Catholics required weddings to be solemnized (otherwise their bastards belonged to the state). Thomas Jefferson was against tyranny over the mind of man. And today this same authority, once thought of as dead, requires oaths in court and perjury oaths on government forms. The whole world was astonished and followed the Beast.

Even overhearing someone else's oath can present a problem for Christians. Tertullian, circa 200AD, points out the idolatry of letting Satan's servants speak to you "*when some other man binds you in the name of his gods, by the making of an oath, or by some other form of attestation, and you, for fear of discovery, remain quiet.*" (Tertullian, *Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Chapter XXI entitled "Of silent acquiescence to heathen formularies")

The word translated as "killed" is the Greek word *apokteino* that can also be translated as "abolish", as in Ephesians 2:16. It is used 82 times in the Bible, but the word is never used in the Bible for lawful executions. Its prefix *apo* (Strong's G575) "usually denotes separation, departure, cessation, completion, reversal, etc." The

"executions" (see my timeline in chapter 5.1.4 for other possibilities) in Revelation 20:4 are for the witness of Jesus, not necessarily for failing to register for a mark. Another reason to suspect that this does not refer to government executions, is that saints patiently endure these end-time events, many of whom have victory over the beast, mark and number according to Revelation 15:2. The NIV translation speaks of patient endurance and faithfulness in both Revelation 13:10 and 14:12. Not necessarily a reference to patiently and faithfully enduring their executions.

The "abolish" interpretation can satisfy this Revelation 13:15 prophecy. Saints will patiently endure their abolishment, perhaps by living as fugitives. But if you want to absolutely insist that this refers to government sanctioned killing/genocide, then consider that this is only an intent. "should be" (not "must be") to "cause" *apokteino*/kill/abolish/eradicate/ extirpate those who don't worship the first beast. Also consider that necessities of life include medications and shelter which are indeed denied to those who refuse to sign up for a credential. Later on in verse 17 you will discover that you need a housing authorization number to obtain this necessity of life, because your God-given right to contract is no longer valid.

**Point of identification:** The image's intent (and the spoken voice it was given in verse 15) is to cause those who will not worship the first beast to be killed/abolished/eradicated/extirpated. Are Christians now abolished? Have Christians been executed for 2000 years? Even in America, Christian Quakers were executed in Massachusetts in the 1650s. Has the recent doctrine of "separation of church and state" abolished Christianity? I have devoted another chapter to this topic. Is this prophecy fulfilled by a 500-year-old vow by a spokesman of the first beast to "*capture, vanquish and subdue... enemies... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery.*"?

This two-horned second beast that will issue the mark in verse 16, asked us, in verse 14, to fabricate an image to the first beast. Most people assume that this must be some manmade physical image such as a flag, emblem, logo, statue or other golden calf\* to bow down to. I want you to consider other more likely possibilities.

\* The golden calf of Exodus 32:24 represents a central bank of socialism. If you worship socialism, you deserve their fate 32:27. Did you worship, with a perjury oath signature, a central bank's Novus Ordo Seclorum, the fifth plank of the Communist Manifesto?

I want you to consider images that both speak and punish (to cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be abolished). Here in verse 15, the image is given a voice and commands worship.

Can we create a graven image to worship, an image that both speaks and punishes?

- An image does not have to be an inanimate object. As, for example: mankind was created in the image of God. (Genesis 1:27). Hardly an inanimate object.
- We created an image, which now demands worship. The first three words of the U.S. Constitution, which are in bold letters, introduce the authors. The word *authority* comes from the root word *author*. "We The People" wrote the Constitution. (I am using the U.S. as an example.) All political power is supposed to come from the governed. *Jura Summa Imperii*.
- The Declaration of Independence says that all men are created equal and that we are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights. (The foundation for this "created equal" status comes from refuting the Divine Right of Kings to rule. Read John Locke's first and second treatises on government, and Rutherford and Blackstone, etc.)
- An oath is always a form of worship (details are in a separate chapter) including perjury oaths on forms. People, instead of taking their vows to God, now swear oaths to superiors (as in Hebrews 6:16). Once they submit themselves to a superior they are subject to the laws of the superior.

How then, did We The People, if we are created equal, create a superior to be worshiped? How could you create any plural group (corporation, trust, association, team, body politic, municipality, State, or whatever) and then delegate to your representatives an authority that you yourself do not have? Answer: You cannot delegate an authority that you yourself do not have. You can't create a superior. And you did not create a superior, if we are all equal.

As I said earlier, divine revelation in Daniel 7:23 tells us that Beasts are kingdoms. Is there any possibility that



artificial entities, such as municipal corporations and other governments, are a manmade fabrication (graven image) of a Beast kingdom that has a voice and commands worship and has abolished Christianity? The answer seems so obvious to me. Even the U.S. Supreme Court ever since *Chisholm v. Georgia* has said that States are corporations. The law still calls them artificial entities.

How can you exclude as a beast power any manmade artificial entities, fabricated by man (=graven) based on Roman Civil Law, that speak Latin and demand worship? Do you salute a manmade image of a Beast kingdom that demands worship, provides for you and judges you?

I will explain later that contempt of court is a life sentence without a trial for refusing to worship this beast image that you created. Anyone who refuses to swear oaths will be severely punished. (Christians are prohibited from swearing oaths: First commandment, Matt 5:34, James 5:12). If you did not create a superior, then explain how your civil servants, whose office you created, got the authority to punish Christians for obedience to God?

How did your civil servants, whose office you created, get the authority to shed innocent blood? How did they get the authority to forcibly cancel someone's vows to God in their divorce courts? Or tax people who sell their own labor? Or promote sodomy, or seize property. They could not have been delegated these authorities from you, because you never had the authority yourself. Answer: you turned your back on God by allowing usury, then you declared bankruptcy and turned the nation over to ungodly foreign creditors who run the bankruptcy receivership. Then you forced people to worship (with their perjury oaths on "government" forms - which subjects them to the foreign "actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken..." per 12 U.S.C. §95b), the ungodly creditors who run (breathe life into) the graven image you created.

#### Revelation 13:15 KJV "Should be killed" NOTES

- This Revelation 13:15 verse does not necessarily mean that everyone who refuses the mark will be killed. We know this because there will be survivors who do not accept the mark. Some of them will have victory over the mark in Revelation 15:2. Some will be rewarded with the harps of God, and sing the song of Moses BEFORE the seven last plagues. And before the fall of Babylon, 144 thousand do not receive the mark, which occurs BEFORE the third angel of Revelation 14:9 warns those who dwell on earth not to receive the mark of the beast. And saints patiently endure the beast's persecution in Revelation 14:12.
- Don't presume that the words "should be killed" refer to a lawful execution. Your Bible has three other Greek words that are translated as "should be killed" that refer to lawful executions. (Matt 10:21, Mark 13:12, Luke 21:16, Luke 23:32, Acts 26:10, Acts 12:19 and 1 Peter 3:18) But this Revelation 13:15 does not refer to a lawful execution. The Revelation 13:15 terminology "should be killed" is the translation of the Greek word *apokteino*. It means to abolish or destroy (as, for example, in Ephesians 2:16). (Although this *apokteino* never refers to a lawful execution of a convict, it did refer to the massacre of innocents – perhaps *eradicate* or *abolish* would be a better translation).
- The same Greek *apokteino* as it is used in Ephesians 2:16 means to reconcile, put to death the enmity/hostility. Do you know of any existing mark, name, or number system that is required to buy or sell, and the requirement is intended to reconcile (put to death the enmity/hostility, to force into the fold) those people who are inclined to refuse the mark, name or number?
- Christ often spoke of living people as being already dead. Perhaps this Revelation 13:15 verse is referring to weak Christians being converted into unbelievers.
- Perhaps it is an idiom that means people will be mortified (as in Matthew 28:4). And indeed you will be dumbfounded, speechless and stupefied at the worship required by the welfare culture that permeates your once-great nation. Black's Law Dictionary definition of Allegiance: "*Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives.*"
- If you don't take the mark, you will indeed live as an abolished (*apokteino*) fugitive.

{16} He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads,

Comments:

I have other chapters on this topic. Here are the basics:

According to DIVINE interpretation by angels, Beasts symbolize kingdoms, not kings. Horns symbolize kings. The personal pronoun “he” in verses 11 through 16 refers to the two-horned beast, not a horn. Those of the antichrist theory say that this pronoun “he” refers to a future individual man, not a beast kingdom, yet they admit the he/his/him in verses 1 through 8 can not refer to one individual man.

We know that the mark exists prior to the rapture because Revelation 20:5 says the first resurrection includes those who refused the mark. When the 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:16 Lord himself comes down from heaven and the dead in Christ will rise, THEN we who are still alive will be caught up together with them.

There is a theory that the mark will be a physical mark, such as an implant or tattoo. Although this theory remains a possibility, it must ignore the symbolism of right hand or forehead. Nowhere in the Bible do other marks in the hand and forehead refer to physical marks. I have devoted an entire chapter on this topic. If you want to insist that the mark can only be a physical mark, you should state a reason for bible believers to ignore the five other Bible references to tokens, signs and seals that are in both the hand and forehead.

The original King James had a margin note that the word *to receive* could mean *to give*. And indeed, the Greek word *didomi* is NOWHERE ELSE translated *receive*. It means *to give*. Throughout this essay I will continue to quote the familiar phrase “receive a mark” but remember that the original means, “give a mark.”

{17} and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark **or** the name of the beast, **or** the number of his name.

KJV translation: “... *no man might buy or sell* ....”

NIV translation “... *the mark, which is the name of the beast, or the number of his name.*”

Comments:

Revelation 13:17 predicts a time when God-given rights to buy or sell will not be considered valid, replaced by a system whereby credentials from a beast power will authorize transactions.

Generally speaking, you will need one of three kinds of credentials: a mark, a name, or a number to exercise government regulated commerce at a time when God-given right to contract is not recognized. It does not say ALL transactions.

You are living in such a time.

The English phrase “might not”, is not an absolute prohibition. The other possibilities **might** also exist.

Further analysis of the original Greek shows that the questionable translation “the number of his name” in verse 17 DOES NOT refer to the number of one individual man. Nor is it “the number of a man” in verse 18.

In the Greek interlinear Bible published by Baker, verse 17 translates as “and that no one should be able to buy or to sell except he who has the mark or the name or the number of its name.” Not the number of his name.

And indeed, nowhere in your Bible does it say that an anti-Christ issues the mark of the beast. It is the mark of the beast, just as it states in verse 17, not the mark of an anti-Christ. Beasts have always symbolized governments. There is nothing convoluted or enigmatic about the Beast issuing the Mark. It is exactly as the Bible predicted. The second beast, while exercising the authority of the scarlet ten-horned first beast, being ridden by a whore who is drunk with the blood of saints, deceives people into worship of a substitute god to cause them to get a mark symbolically in their right hand or forehead so they can buy and sell. This seems straightforward. Again: the Greek word *autou* is the number of **its** name, not the number of **his** name. (See my chapter 5.2 What AntiChrist? for more proof. ) My paraphrase of Revelation 13:17: “certain men might not have permission of law to enter the marketplace or sell without a badge of the beast, the authority of the beast or the number of its authority”. (see my chapter 3.7 No Man Might)

DIVINE interpretation, by an angel, in Daniel 7:23-24 says the beast is a kingdom and that horns are kings. Again: Rev 13:17 says it is the mark of the Beast, not the mark of a horn, or an anti-Christ.

Comment: it is the mark of the beast, just like it says. It is not the mark of an antichrist. Transactions are authorized by a mark, name or number. Nowhere does it say that a number will be in an identically same format in all countries. As I will show in the next chapter, it is the number of its name, not the number of his name. The deliberate mistranslation “his” is due to the Catholic influence on the King James translators during the Counter Reformation. More about this, later. If you are a Protestant who was never told that you were protesting something, go to any encyclopedia and look up *counter reformation*.

**Point of identification:** look for situations where your God-given right to contract are ignored and replaced by your government-granted authorization to contract that needs some kind of credential involving a mark, or number or authority.

{18} Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.

Comments:

The phrase “Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding...” certainly sounds as if the meaning is hidden. I don’t claim to have this wisdom. But it sounds like John the Revelator is trying to repeat the same language as Job 28:28 “the fear of the Lord is wisdom, to depart from evil is understanding”. And we know that Daniel 12:10 none of the wicked will understand, but those who are wise will understand. Let the wise understand.

As for the “number of a man” - I will show in the next chapter that the King James translators were forced to mimic the Catholic fable that the antichrist is to be a future man, to divert attention away from Martin Luther’s accusations. There is nothing in the original Bible to suggest that the beast is an individual man. Carelessly repeating anti-Protestant fables will not help you understand prophecy that is unfolding right in front of you.

Throughout the book of Revelation, Christians are branded with a name, not a number. 3:12, 2:17, 14:1, 22:4. Nowhere is anyone branded with a number. Yet this number is something that you must overcome in order to avoid God’s wrath. 15:2.

There has been much wild speculation on the number 666, but I’m not one who has the understanding to calculate it. The most scholarly commentary that I’ve read on this topic is John Edward Clark’s Notes on Revelation 13, found in Clarke’s Commentary [The New Testament, Volume 8: 1 Thess. Through Revelation](#).

We notice that the original Greek for verse 18 is missing the indefinite article “a” which the King James translators added to get “number of a man”. And indeed, the NIV translates it as “it is man’s number”. (Although I hesitate to use the NIV as a good example). Again: The original Greek has never had the indefinite article “a”.

The verse 18 word for man is the Greek anthropos, from which we get our English anthro- words, such as anthropology and anthropomorphic, meaning all of mankind. It is not the Greek word aner which would be used for an individual man. Again we see that it is not the number of one individual man. For it is the number of mankind. The man of sin in 2nd Thessalonians chapter 2 is also anthropos.

## TEN COMMANDMENTS

Can violations of the ten commandments in order to buy and sell, be a point of identification?

The original Bible did not have chapters and verses, which were added much later in history. The modern division of the text might not be where the authors intended. John the Revelator introduces the Beast right after he mentions the dragon’s intent to make war with those who keep the commandments

*Revelation 12:17 (NKJV) "And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went to **make war with the rest of her offspring**, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ."*

and he concludes his mark of the beast prophecy with the punishment of those who take the mark, then immediately contrasts their fate with those who keep the commandments.

*Revelation 14:11 (NKJV) "And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name."*

*Revelation 14:12 (NKJV) "Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus."*

Why then, would the beast be enraged with the keeping of commandments? And why would he target children? (and does this targeting of children have anything to do with marks in hands and foreheads?)

We know from a few verses earlier in Revelation 12:12 that the devil's wrath is because he only has a short time left. Certainly he would want to disqualify all future judges. Satan knows that he is running out of time. The remnant of the Christian church will soon judge angels (1 Corinthians 6:2-3). Satan's legalists are in a final battle to disqualify all future judges. Yet Judgment must begin at the house of God, 1 Peter 4:17.

- Thieves will not inherit the kingdom of heaven 1st Corinthians 6:10. You have to agree to socialist "federal" benefits in order to get a Social Security Number. (the word "federal" never appears in the Constitution – it is foreign)
- Extortioners (theft and covetness) will not inherit the kingdom of heaven 1 Corinthians 6:10. Yet a democracy is the devil's own government, allowing you to extort the minority. See my chapter on beast politics.
- Divorce bastardizes children. (because licensed marriage is divorceable marriage – it is adultery). Satan knows that bastards and their descendants for ten generations cannot join the congregation of the Lord (Deuteronomy 23:2). Without legitimate marriage there is no legitimate church. Even Christ opposed bastards having authority (John 8:40-44). What chance do you have of judging angels if your family values are based on a "marriage" license to commit licentiousness rather than God-given right to marry? Know ye not that fornicators cannot inherit the Kingdom of God?

And that's just three commandments.

Keeping of commandments interferes with false religious traditions. Perhaps this is why Satan's wrath is upon believers.

Christ warned us:

- Mark 7:7 and Matthew 15:9: "**in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.**"
- Mark 7:9 (KJV) "And he said unto them, **Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.**"
- Mark 7:13 (NKJV) ""**making the word of God of no effect through your tradition which you have handed down. And many such things you do.**""

Colossians 2:8 (KJV) "Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ." This warning from Colossians 2:8 tells you to beware. You will be taken as spoil (Greek *sulagogeō*) -- prey, plunder, captive. Strong's G4812 says "to lead away as booty, ie seduce. from 4813 despoil - rob. (The NIV translates this word in Colossians 2:8 as "takes you captive").

Did 100+ years of socialist indoctrination by public schools gradually train generations to become anti-Christian? Do five Old Testament warnings about non-physical marks on hands and forehead also mention the training of children? Does today's generation of institutionalized (public schooled) children have non-physical marks of a beast (a final, brutal world government -- Your Novus Ordo Seclorum) on their hand and forehead, by which we have been taken captive/ plundered/ preyed upon/ spoiled ?

Get your religion from the Bible, not from fables.

Even the righteous shall scarcely be saved. 1st Peter 4:18.

### 3.3 The first and second beasts

Daniel 7:3 speaks of four beasts coming up from the sea with a total of seven heads and ten horns. An angel in Daniel 7:23 defines the final beast as a kingdom, whereas verse 24 defines horns are kings. Daniel's fourth exceedingly dreadful (Daniel 7:19) iron beast, has taken away the dominion of other beast powers (as prophesized by Daniel 7:12), consumed and trampled down the whole earth (verse 23). This fourth beast kingdom that had absorbed the other beast powers then appears in Revelation 13 as a confederacy (like unto a leopard-bear-lion with seven heads and ten horns) and carries a whore in Revelation 17.

The whore is easily identified:

- Revelation 17:1, the great whore who rides the confederacy of beasts sits upon many waters.
- Verse 18; she symbolizes a great city that rules over the kings of the earth.
- Verse 15; this city is headquarters to a vast international system.
- Verse 9; the city sits on seven Hills. (Hint: Rome sits on seven hills)
- Verse 4; she is arrayed in purple and red. (Hint: Cardinals are arrayed in red, archbishops in purple).
- Verse 12; the beast has the authority of ten rulers (Hint: your Federal Reserve Board is a private corporation and is owned by it's Class A shareholders, which are ultimately owned by 10 European families).
- Verse 3; the beast is red.

The Beast is red. Socialism has always been associated with red. May I suggest that the red seven headed, ten-horned confederacy of political and religious kingdoms that rise up from the sea is socialism?

- Hint #1: When the Pope met with Castro in 1999, the New York Times editorial page had the headline: "Castro: The Pope is on our Side."
- Hint #2: former head of the dreaded Soviet KGB, Mikhail Gorbachev, in a speech at Rome's Sapienza University on April 10, 2000, said Pope John Paul II was "the most important socialist in the world."
- Hint #3: Back on April 6, 1951 at the Vatican, Pope Pius XII had a meeting with delegates from the 4<sup>th</sup> Congress of the World Movement For World Government: "Your movement dedicates itself to realizing an effective political organization of the world. Nothing is more in conformity with the traditional doctrine of the church."
- Another hint: Symbolically the sea refers to people, according to Revelation 17:15. Even today we use the phrase "sea of humanity" to refer to large multitudes of people. Today's overwhelming flood (to paraphrase Rev 12:15) of humanity is demanding socialist benefits, and they are using democracies to enslave us.

If you have a worker authorization number and live in a nation that has already adapted all planks of the *Communist Manifesto*, and where more than 50% of the Gross National Product is spent by local, state and federal governments, then you are enslaved to support an endless line of socialists. If you spend more on federal, state and local taxes then you do for your own food, shelter, clothing and medical care, then you accept communism by doing nothing, and you surrender to it.

The second beast of Revelation 13 is more difficult to identify. We know that a two-horned second beast that comes up from the land exercises the authority of the red ten-horned first beast that came up from the sea and uses a Mark-name-number system to restrict buying and selling. Verse 12; it has worldwide influence. We know that military power is involved because of verses 4b, 7, 13 & 14 as well as trampling and crushing the whole earth per Dan 7:24. It can use military power on behalf of the first beast in order to deceive many. Military power is involved somehow, even if it is behind the scenes marital law or a foreign takeover of some government functions, or even if it was the brutality of the now ancient Roman Empire.

[Aside: Although we are living in a time when the military can make fire come down from heaven in the sight of men, this might not mean much to you, because you don't understand the threat. The IMF has imposed austerity programs on nations delinquent on their debt payments. Governments have been forced by treaty to number their citizens. Here in America, the GATT treaty requires your Government to issue Social Security Numbers to newborns. The United States is the world's largest debtor nation. Your national debt is more than you are worth. Is it too far fetched to suppose the creditors could enforce their collection with military force?]

I have avoided identifying specific beast powers because I don't have proof. Here are some thoughts:

***Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7***

Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

The two-horned beast (Revelation 13:11) issues the mark to those who worship the seven headed ten horned beast. Beasts symbolize kingdoms (Dan 7:23,18,22,24 and Rev 17:17). Horns symbolize kings, dynasties, or perhaps personified governments (Daniel 7:24, 8:20 and Revelation 17:12). The two-horned second beast that issues the Mark speaks as a dragon. The term "United States" is defined in Title 28, U.S. Code, section 3002, as "a Federal corporation" or alternatively as an agency or instrumentality of this Federal corporation. No other definition is given. I suspect that the stockholder of the corporation named "United States" also owns other government sounding names worldwide.

Possible horns:

- The Federal Reserve Bank is owned by its Class A stockholders, all of which are banks. BUT all these banks are ultimately owned by ten European families. Notice in Revelation 17:12 that the ten kings had not received their kingdoms.
- What kind of king has no kingdom "but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast"? Keep in mind that the banking laws 12 USC 95(b) gives the Secretary of the Treasury pre-approved authority "heretofore or hereafter taken" to control you.
- Department of the Treasury (which is not a part of the U.S. government. The *Treaty of Paris*, kept the treasury authority within the Holy Roman Empire, within the International Monetary Fund). The Department of the Treasury, not the Social Security Administration, issues SSNs to authorize you to buy or sell. This will eventually be backed up by an international military authority to enforce the collection of their collateral.
- the EEC, which has already, through the GATT treaty, forced the U.S. congress to require SSNs for children at birth. Notice that both these powers rose up from the earth to regulate commerce, both get their power from Rome, and both are involved in issuing Social Security Numbers.
- Knights Templar, by and through their agent, the British Bar Association, which is the parent of the American Bar association.
- The Illuminati (read the three sermons by Jedidiah Morse)
- and since the Old Testament's marks on hands and foreheads always involves the teaching of children, you should try to find out who owns your local school district. Go ahead and try to find out. Use the public disclosure laws to get a copy of the document that created the school district. Then try to find out the actual stockholders. Public schools are the tenth plank of the Communist Manifesto.

As I said, I don't have proof of the identity of the two-horned second beast. I've heard many well-researched claims involving the UN, the United States (sometimes symbolized by a two-horned Buffalo), Britain, Prince Charles, Islamic banking, the Knights Templar, and the Tribe of Dan. Some people insist that the two lamb-like horns prove that it must be a church. All these claims have merit. There is no proof who it is. If beast powers, such as the Department of the Treasury or the EEC, or the UN or the IMF or their creditors, are requiring you to be numbered and are related to a two horned military power, then the time is at hand. Let's take a closer look.

Here are a few hints about deceptive worldwide military authority that has deceived many and involves red (socialistic) confederation of beast powers:

- The General of the UN military has always been and will always be a Russian. (This was a US-Soviet agreement and is described in Trygve Lie's book *In the Cause of Peace*. Trygve Lie was the first UN Secretary General).
- US soldiers must now serve under this Russian L.Ed. UN command even though they, like PFC Michael New, swear oaths to defend a Constitution that requires the President to be Commander in Chief.
- Also keep in mind that General Sahlikashvili was once the highest-ranking man in the Pentagon. He was born in the Soviet Union.
- Former head of the dreaded Soviet KGB, Mikhail Gorbachev, now lives in the U.S. on an American military base that is also the headquarters of the United Religions Organization. He is here to preside over the dismantling of your American military bases pursuant to your Public Law 101-216. [President Kennedy required this "international control" in Public Law 87-297 "*Arms Control and Disarmament Act*" section 3A]. As far as the United Religions Organization is concerned, "We must extirpate all forms of... religious exclusiveness." according to Mikhail Gorbachev in his book *Perestroika*, 1987. If you don't know which religion he is referring to here is a hint: Christ said in John 14:6 "No one comes to the Father except through me" and, "there is no other name [Greek *onoma*] under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12

- The yellow fringed U.S. flag that you see in your local courtrooms is not the flag authorized by Congress in Title 4 of the U.S. Code. According to Attorney General Opinion 34 Op Atty Gen 483, only military authority can display the yellow fringe. I offer this as a hint that your nation has already been surrendered to military powers. Later I will show that this authority is related to the same brutal Roman occupation forces that fed Christians to the lions, and executed my King, and used the force of law to kill the baby boys in Bethlehem, and are now involved in issuing Social Security Numbers.
- And, UN troops are now working in federal prisons within the US. On July 17, 1998 the International Criminal Court Statute of Rome created the World Criminal Court to enforce International Law. The statute claims jurisdiction over all citizens of the world even if their countries have not approved the Statute.

Perhaps you now have more respect for the second beast's military power. Perhaps you were unaware that the anti-Christian Soviets were involved with your military decisions. Perhaps you were unaware of the Untied Religions Organization. Perhaps you were unaware that your local courtrooms are under military control. Perhaps you welcome Soviet iron fists in your local courthouse pursuing their long-term goal of eliminating Christianity. Perhaps not.

The second beast demands worship. The worship is very subtle, but it is indeed worship prohibited by God in His first and second commandments. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them. Much like the ancient Roman requirement to burn incense to their gods, the modern requirement for oaths (either in court or a perjury oath on federal forms) is nevertheless worship of a counterfeit god, contrary to the first commandment. As we shall see, it is nearly impossible for a Christian to avoid worshipping the beast and still have a government-granted right to buy and sell. The right to contract is no longer considered as a God-given right.

### 3.4 Right hand and forehead, Revelation 13:16

Many people insist that the Mark has to be an implant in the skin or a tattoo in the skin, or at least a breaking of the skin.

Some people insist that the phrase “hand and forehead” refers to manual work and mental work, therefore taking the mark only refers to working for the beast.

Some people insist that it has to be a clearly visible mark or tattoo of Satan's protection, just as God's mark protected Cain when he was evicted from Eden, and just as others were marked for protection as in Ezekiel 9:4-6.

Others suggest that the phrase “hand and forehead” refers to acceptance and obedience to the beast.

- Or allegiance to the beast.
- Or ownership by the beast.
- Or saluting the beast authority.
- Or simply a mental acceptance and a signature.

Let's study the Bible and figure out what interpretations make sense and what interpretations can be dismissed.

The last digit in 666 is the word *stigma*, which comes from a meaning more-than-a-handful. Although the Greek word *stigma*, translated as the last 6 in the number 666 (666= *chi-xi-stigma*), it can mean prick (as well as a reference to branding as a mark of ownership) and although the Greek word *charagma*, translated into the word “mark”, can mean etching (or a badge of servitude), this is not necessarily proof that the mark has to be an implant.

The King James Version translated the Greek word “*epi*” to the English word “in” or “upon” for the following marks:

- in their foreheads (Revelation 7:3)
- his mark upon their foreheads, (Revelation 20:4)
- or in their hands (Revelation 20:4)
- in their right hand (Revelation 13:16)
- in their foreheads (Revelation 13:16)
- written in their foreheads (Revelation 14:1).

The word “*epi*” is usually translated as “upon”. The King James Version translated the word ‘*epi*’ both ways in Revelation 20:4. We get our English word “*epidermis*” from the Greek. We also get our English word “*hypodermic*” from the Greek. You would never confuse the two English words. Epi-dermis is upon the skin, hypo-dermic is under the skin. In EVERY occurrence of the beast's mark in your Bible, the mark is *epi* (upon) the hand and forehead. It is never *hypo*.

Many people claim that the mark will be a mark physically in the skin because the English word "Mark" refers to a physical mark.

- Although it refers to a physical mark, the Greek word *Stigma* can refer to physical marks that are also designations of ownership, as in a rancher branding his cattle, or an artist signing his work. Later, I will show that a Social Security Card is indeed a certificate of ownership.
- The English word “Mark” can also mean a scar, as in Galatians 6:17 “...I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.” This is translated from the Greek word *stigma*, which is not the word “Mark” used in Revelation. *Stigma* in *Strong's Concordance* is defined as “a mark incised or punched for recognition of ownership, i.e. scar of service:-mark”. Notice that its primary meaning of this “*stigma*” physical mark is as a designation of ownership. More about the word *stigma*, later.

The Greek word for "Mark" in the eight occurrences in Revelation, is the Greek word *charagma* (*Strong's G5480*) which means an etching or a badge of servitude. The extent of God's wrath leads us to believe that this is something extraordinary. But grammatically, there is no reason to suspect that this is anything more advanced than a badge, or an ID card. The mark might eventually involve an etching of the skin, as a tattoo or an implant, but I don't see where the Bible



requires it. A Social Security Card already fits this prophecy. A number issued by a foreign power already qualifies you to buy and sell, and as we shall see, none of the other Biblical marks in the right hand or forehead refer to a tattoo or scar or implant.

The only other occurrence of the word `charagma' in the Bible is translated into the word `graven' in Acts 17:29.



Bus drivers, tea brokers and military all have engraved marks on their forehead as their authority to present themselves in public as representatives of their superiors. The Greek word for authority *exousia* comes from the root word *exon* which is the right to present oneself in public. An engraved etching at the forehead has always been a sign of servitude, presenting to the public the master's authority. The original purpose of the engraved etching was to allow a slave to go to the market and conduct business for his master. The etching was often just an impression of the master's family seal baked in clay. A badge has always been a symbol of servitude. Today, an ID card in your right hand serves the same purpose as an engraved etching at the forehead.

According to the American Heritage Dictionary



Phrygian cap

**liberty cap.** A brimless cap that fits snugly around the head and has a soft conical crown. Compare Phrygian cap.

According to Encarta:

*"The cone-shaped, forward-slanting cap that originated in Phrygia was presented to Roman slaves upon manumission; this cap was adopted as the "liberty cap" of the French revolutionists and also served as a symbol of liberty in the United States before 1800."*

Pagan Rome had adapted the liberty cap method from Phrygia, rather than the engraved etching used by Jewish culture.



The 1865 painting on the ceiling of the U.S. Capitol rotunda has a depiction of Young America wearing a liberty cap while giving to the Roman goddess Ceres a team horses pulling a reaper.

Quote from Art in the United States Capitol, U.S. Government Printing Office, 1978, House Document Number 94-660, page 302:

*Agriculture is represented by Ceres with a cornucopia. America, wearing a red liberty cap, is turning over to Ceres the mastery of a team of horses pulling a reaper."*

Your bodies are made from the dirt of the ground. (Genesis 2:7, 3:19 and 18:28, 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 15:47, Luke 3:8, etc). Your bodies are the agriculture being traded here. Traded for a little temporary liberty.

The IRS payroll is still paid by the Department of Agriculture.

All government regulated agriculture still belongs to Rome, which is why you pay property tax on "your" property.

By the way, Social Security Numbers are issued by applying to the IRS on Form SS-5. The SS-5 form is an IRS form, not a SSA form. Social Security Numbers are not issued by the Social Security Administration.



Unfortunately for you, America's liberty cap was removed by a Roman Republic in 1893, and memorialized by a 65 foot high statue on a 35 foot high pedestal. The sculptor was the same man who made the seated Lincoln in the Lincoln Memorial. Without America's liberty, the Roman Imperial iron eagle can consume the whole globe. More about this symbolism in chapter 4.17

Let's take a closer look at Revelation 13:16-17 so that you will never be lulled into waiting for a tattoo or implant.

Revelation 13:16,17 (KJV) "And he causeth (Greek *poiei* = agree, appoint, cause, commit, provide) all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive (Greek *didomi*=give, bestow, bring forth, grant, have power) a mark in their right hand (Greek *cheir*= grasping, a means of power), or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name."

I don't claim any great insight into these literal phrases. It might be as simple as making a mark available for all to grab. We have parallel examples in our own culture: one who is appointed (*poiei*) to office receives power (*didomi*) after he raises his right hand (*cheir*) during the oath of office. Even today's English dictionaries define "a right hand man" as one who is reliable in performing his delegated duties. When you signed the application for a SS number, with a perjury oath (right hand), you received power (*didomi*) to buy or sell.

I find it curious that the word for "give" (*didomi*) is translated as "receive."

**Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7**

Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

And some people claim that you receive the mark if the Catholic church made a mark on your forehead during infant baptism. They claim that water baptisms are the mark of the beast, the number of man. They insist that no water baptisms occurred during Christ's ministry because real baptism is of the spirit. Rituals of outward washing do not cleanse the soul. Their theory is "one baptism, which is not the putting away the filth of the flesh but the answer of a good conscience before God" by which we are buried with him, that after being washed and purged from our sins we may walk in newness of life. Christ's insistence in foot washing of John 13:8 proves it is not just symbolic outward cleaning, but must involve service to others.

The Catholic concept of baptism was opposed by the Anabaptists (today's Mennonites, Amish and Baptists) who were burned at the stake for refusing to register their infant children by baptizing them. Re-baptizing by immersion was also punishable by death.

The Catholic concept of baptism was also rejected by Quakers who recognized it as superstition.

According to the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, Eleventh edition, under the topic The Vatican Council, "...the Roman Catholic Church claims that all baptized persons belong to her..."

But don't be fooled by their definition of baptism.

If Catholic church made a mark on your forehead, then you belong to her.

If Catholics did not make a mark on your forehead, don't confess that you meet their definition of baptized.

**VATICAN COUNCIL, THE**, of 1869 and 1870, the last ecumenical council of the Roman Catholic Church, and the most important event in her historical development since the Tridentine synod. The preliminaries were surrounded by the closest secrecy. As early as the end of the year 1864, Pius IX. had commissioned the cardinals resident in Rome to tender him their opinions as to the advisability of a council. The majority pronounced in favour of the scheme, dissentient voices being rare. After March 1865 the convocation of the council was no longer in doubt. Thirty-six carefully selected bishops of diverse nationalities were privately interrogated with regard to the tasks which, in their estimation, should be assigned to the prospective assembly. Some of them proposed, *inter alia*, that the doctrine of papal infallibility should be elevated to the rank of a dogma. In public, however, Pius IX. made no mention of his design till the 26th of June 1867, when Catholic bishops from every country were congregated round him in Rome on the occasion of the great centenary of St Peter. On the 29th of June 1868 the bull *Aeterni Patris* convened the council to Rome, the date being fixed for the 8th of December 1869. And since the Roman Catholic Church claims that all baptized persons belong to her, special bulls were issued, with invitations to the bishops of the Oriental Churches, to the Protestants and to the other non-Catholics, none of which groups complied with the request.

The object of the council was long a mystery. The Bull of Convocation was couched in perfectly general terms, and specified no definite tasks—a circumstance which at first ensured a favourable reception for the scheme, as it allowed ample

chancellor. In his circular note to the Powers, April 1869 he analysed the political import of the papal infallibility,<sup>1</sup> and proposed a common convention. But his overtures met with no response. In view of the international situation, none of the Powers appeared willing to take a step which might easily have brought about a bitter conflict with the Church; and the studied reserve of the Curia in its official pronouncements on the occasion led them to assume an attitude of reserve and suspicion. France was equally inactive, though it refused to decide whether the council could even meet. The withdrawal of her troops from the papal States had been the signal for a patriotic Italy to sweep them away in the name of national unity from the face of the earth.

On none of the previous ecumenical councils did the papacy exercise so pronounced an influence as on the present. As early as the year 1865 a committee of cardinals had been appointed as a "special directive congregation for the affairs of the general council," a title which was usually abbreviated to "Central Commission." Among the earliest members of this body were a number of distinguished theologians and canonists, as *consultors* to the council. In the selection of members there was a preference for men of ultramontane tendencies; so Dollinger, for instance, was not invited—that the work in the convocation of the council were obvious from its opening. Under the control of the Central Commission six sub-commissions: (1) for dogma; (2) for matters of discipline; (3) for the religious orders; (4) for the Oriental Churches and the missions; (5) for the secular policy

Rather than speculate on the literal, let's study the symbolic and let the Bible interpret itself as much as possible.

Keep in mind that John the Revelator would be familiar with all of the other Biblical references to signs, words, tokens, law, and seals upon your right hand and forehead. And the audience that he was writing to would also be familiar with the Old Testament scriptures. These Old Testament references to marks that are on both the hand and forehead, none of which are physical marks, all involve the training of children.

The terminology "A mark in your forehead" symbolically means "to serve". And so it is to this very day; a uniform's cap has an engraved metallic mark etched at the forehead.

The terminology "In your right hand" symbolizes oaths (Genesis 14:22, Ezekiel 17:18, Ezekiel 36:7 and Daniel 12:7). And so it is to this very day; an oath is performed with your right hand raised. Look up "oath" in any encyclopedia: An oath is

always a religious ritual. Your Bible prohibits taking an oath to a pagan state god. A perjury oath on a government form is a religious ritual. (Your government continues to conduct their religious rituals, because they cannot have separation of their church from their state).

Foreheads and hands when mentioned together signify "loyalty and obedience". It is as simple as today's idiom "right hand man".

As we study all the Biblical references to the right-hand-and-forehead, keep in mind that there are different messages being conveyed:

- a reminder that your sovereign will protect you and provide for your security
- In Deuteronomy 11, it seems to be a warning that your sovereign must be worshiped, and if forgotten, the sovereign will punish you and your children. (In other words: John could be saying that from the Beast's point of view you will be punished if you will not give out your number).
- it refers to the use of force to deliver your nation from oppressors (as in Exodus 13, Deuteronomy 11, Revelation 7) From the Beast's point of view, Christians are the oppressors of the degenerate political majority.
- It always seems to imply memorizing precepts about your sovereign's authority, and obeying the sovereign's law, and teaching these precepts to children.

Although hands mentioned without foreheads refer to oaths, notice that hands when mentioned with foreheads refer to loyalty, rather than to oaths. Also notice that your forehead is reserved for Christ's mark in Revelation 7 and 14. Those who receive this badge of servitude are marked as Christ's servants and are spared from the destroyer, just as in Ezekiel 9:4-6, and just as it was with the marking of doorposts in Exodus 12.

Here are the Biblical examples where both forehead and hand terminology are used together. It is important to notice that none of these refer to physical marks in the skin, or implants or tattoos, and notice that every instance also mentions children:

Exodus 13:8-9 (KJV):

*And thou shalt show thy son in that day, saying, This is done because of that which the LORD did unto me when I came forth out of Egypt. And it shall be for a sign unto thee upon thine hand, and for a memorial between thine eyes, that the Lord's law may be in thy mouth: for with a strong hand hath the LORD brought thee out of Egypt.*

Exodus 13:15-16 (KJV):

*And it came to pass, when Pharaoh would hardly let us go, that the LORD slew all the firstborn in the land of Egypt, both the firstborn of man, and the firstborn of beast: therefore I sacrifice to the LORD all that openeth the matrix, being males; but all the firstborn of my children I redeem. And it shall be for a token upon thine hand, and for frontlets between thine eyes: for by strength of hand the LORD brought us forth out of Egypt.*

Deuteronomy 6:6-9 (KJV):

*And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates.*

Deuteronomy 11:16-23 (KJV):

*Take heed to yourselves, that your heart be not deceived, and ye turn aside, and serve other gods, [Note: this word "gods" is the Hebrew word 'elohiym which can mean magistrates or judges] and worship them; And then the LORD'S wrath be kindled against you, and he shut up the heaven, that there be no rain, and that the land yield not her fruit; and lest ye perish quickly from off the good land which the LORD giveth*

you. *Therefore shall ye lay up these my words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a sign upon your hand, that they may be as frontlets between your eyes. And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates: That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of heaven upon the earth. For if ye shall diligently keep all these commandments which I command you, to do them, to love the LORD your God, to walk in all his ways, and to cleave unto him; Then will the LORD drive out all these nations from before you, and ye shall possess greater nations and mightier than yourselves.*

Proverbs 7:1-3 (KJV):

*My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments with thee. Keep my commandments, and live; and my law as the apple of thine eye. Bind them upon thy fingers, write them upon the table of thine heart.*

Revelation 7:2-3 (KJV):

*And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. Revelation 14:1 (KJV): And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.*

The word "Mark" in Revelation the Mark of the Beast is the Greek word *charagma* (Strong's G5480). *Charagma* is a badge of service, or an etching, such as an etched metallic badge (or perhaps an ID card). Throughout the history of mankind, A BADGE HAS ALWAYS BEEN A SYMBOL OF SERVITUDE. If you've been brainwashed into thinking of a badge as a symbol of authority, you have it backwards. A mark/badge on your forehead has your master's name (=authority). If you are off the feudal manor while wearing your master's badge, everyone knows you are conducting business in your master's authority. This was necessary as a public notice that your master would pay for any transactions conducted in his name and he would pay for any damage that you cause. Aaron wore a metal badge at his turban's forehead, as a badge of servitude. It was the part of his uniform (Exodus 28:36-38) which marks it as God's uniform. While he is in uniform, he represents his Master's authority. And so it is to this very day: Uniforms' caps, helmets, berets, or turbans have a metal badge of servitude at the forehead. Also, Ezekiel 9:4 refers to physical marks on the forehead as an outward symbol of inward attitudes.

Just as you cannot wear two caps at once, You cannot have both a mark of a Beast and Christ's mark (as in Rev 14:1) on your forehead. Your forehead is reserved for Christ's mark. If you belong to a beast, then serve your beast. If you belong to Christ serve Christ.

What about the teaching of children?

Could public schools be the mark in the hands and forehead of Revelation 13:16?

After all, no one in government told you to institutionalize your children.

The United States Supreme Court keeps ruling, over and over and over again that it is the parents' duty to educate their children. Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, Plyler v. Doe, 457 U.S. 202, Pierce v. Society of Sisters, 268 U.S. 510, Wisconsin v. Yoder, 406 U.S. 205, and there are dozens of cases on family privacy.

Aside: I want to dwell briefly on parents' duty to educate their children. Those who fail to educate their own children will lose their children to state custody where they will be forced into public schools.

The received-law-of-the-land as described in Blackstone's Commentaries Book 1, chapter 16, entitled "The Rights of Children" tells us that:

*"The duty of parents for the maintenance of their [legitimate] children is a principle of natural law... The establishment of marriage in all civilized states is built on this natural obligation... The last duty of parents to their children is that of giving them an education suitable to their station in life..."*

*Yet the municipal laws ... constraining the parent to bestow a proper education upon his children... made a wise provision for breeding up the rising generation... [these neglected children] are taken out of the hands of their parents."*

That's right! By institutionalizing "your" children, you have confessed that you are incapable of raising your own children. You lose your parental rights. The children become wards of the state. No wonder family courts are so sure that they have jurisdiction over the state's children. Activist judges no longer fear that they will be charged with kidnapping, genocide, and deprivation of liberty under color of law.

Interestingly, in my local school district, the registration form for enrolling a student does not need a parent's signature. Another interesting point is that my local school district could not prove that they exist. Despite the public disclosure laws, they could not tell me where the document that created the school district is recorded, nor even if it ever existed. (I suspect that wards of the state are collateral for the national debt, and are owned by foreign banks to which we owe the debt. Maybe I'm just being too suspicious.) Public schools are the 10<sup>th</sup> plank of the Communist Manifesto.

And why do today's Anabaptists forget the rights they suffered so much to keep?  
Even Roe v. Wade says that family decisions about rearing children are strictly private.

For another viewpoint on the mark see  
[www.hisholychurch.net/sermon/mark2.html](http://www.hisholychurch.net/sermon/mark2.html)

### 3.5 Revelation 13:13 Great signs, even fire from heaven

Revelation 13:13, New King James Version:

*He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.*

The second beast who was introduced in Revelation 13:11 will produce great signs (plural), even fire from heaven, to deceive us. But he doesn't deceive us into taking a mark, he deceives us in verse 14 into making an image of the first beast. The second beast asks us to make an image to verse 12's "*the first beast who's deadly wound was healed.*" This second beast, later in verse 16, intends to cause all to receive the dreaded mark of the beast.

It is entirely reasonable to assume that this fire from heaven must occur before the mark is issued. This presumption is entirely possible. But the presumption is not necessarily certain. Please consider that the paragraph structure keeps listing (we would today say "bullet items") a long list of ongoing capabilities of the second beast. Revelation chapter 13 Verses 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17 all start with the word "And" which is not necessarily a chronological resume. Also notice that this list refers to ongoing capabilities. In the King James Version, the words ending in -eth (exerciseth, doeth, deceiveth, causeth) all refer to continuous ongoing action, not just a one time event. Perhaps some or all of these capabilities are simultaneously occurring at the same time, not necessarily chronological.

Before jumping to conclusions please consider what is missing. The second beast's wonders, deception and miracles (verses 12 through 14) ends up with us earthlings, in verse 15, worshiping an image. It doesn't say that force is used. It doesn't say that religious leaders are involved. And except for restricted buying and selling in verse 17, it doesn't say that economics are involved. Also note that multiple angels, throughout the Bible, have defined symbolical beasts as kingdoms, but even these verses do not specifically say that politics are involved. Restrictions on buying and selling are the ONLY reason given for someone to get the mark. The mark is in the same list where the image is made. This mark probably, but not necessarily, occurs after the image.

Fire from heaven is a capability of the second beast, not the first beast, not the false prophet, not an antichrist, not the image, and not the dragon who gave power to the first beast.

What else do we know about fire from heaven?

This fire from heaven is either a literal fire or a symbolic fire. If literal: We are living in a time where military can make fire come down from heaven in the sight of men. If symbolic or a metaphor, then there are many possibilities.

Let's examine some of these many possibilities.

It could, of course, refer to actual fire from the sky. The military flavor of the first beast would support the interpretation of a fiery weapon.

Perhaps this sign of fire from heaven is a counterfeit of Christ's coming. 2 Thessalonians 1:7-8 (NKJV) "... when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on those who do not know God, and on those who do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ".

This great sign of fire is in sight of men. "In sight of" is used in the Bible more than 150 times. It can mean "on behalf of" as in verse 14, or it can mean "in defiance of" or "in the witness of".

There are **many** scriptural possibilities of this "fire from heaven". Since the Bible is the complete revelation of prophecy, we should examine scripture for our clues. A prudent study will not flippantly dismiss any scriptural possibility. There are many possibilities for you to consider. Some of these beastly signs, plural, from heaven have already happened. Only time will tell what John the revelator has revealed.

God often used fire to portray His presence. Genesis 15:17, Exodus 3:2-6, 13:21-22, 19:18, 40:38, Matthew 3:11, Luke 3:16, Acts 2:1-3, Hebrews 12:28-29. Perhaps one of these two beast governments is symbolically portrayed by fire.

***Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7***

*Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship*

<http://famguardian.org/>



Fire from heaven might symbolize vengeance against enemies: Genesis 19:24, Exodus 9:23, 2<sup>nd</sup> Kings 1:10&12, Job 1:16. Even the disciples expected Christ to call down vengeance fire from heaven in Luke 9:54. Is this fire from heaven a military strike against the beast's enemies?

Christ himself said that he comes to bring fire on earth. Luke 12:49. Does the second beast provoke Christ to send fire? A divine strike against the beast?

Side comment: Perhaps this fire that Christ said he would bring has already been fulfilled (almost 2000 years ago, during the 3½ years after the crucifixion) if it refers to confirming the covenant for the last half of Daniel 9's 70<sup>th</sup> week. After all, fire from heaven signifies God's acceptance of a sacrifice. 1<sup>st</sup> Chronicles 21:26, 2<sup>nd</sup> Chronicles 7:1, Numbers 18:17.

Does this Revelation 13 fire from heaven symbolize a beast's counterfeit of a deity's acceptance of a sacrifice? Does a beast system accept your offerings? Could this be your firstfruits offering from paycheck withholding? Does a beast system accept children that you offered? Before I accuse you of passing your children through the fire to Molech, I want you to find out who owns your local school district. Not who operates it, but who are the ultimate shareholders who actually own the property (hint: school districts are not created by your state legislature). Then consider that the five occurrences, in the Bible, of marks that are on hands and foreheads all have references to teaching God's laws to children. After all, the U.S. Supreme Court keeps saying that it is the parents' responsibility to educate their children. Whereas The Communist Manifesto requires public schooling. Then consider an 1884 law textbook: "since the state married them, the children were fruits of the state".

Heavenly fire, along with signs and wonders in the sight of men, are all mentioned together in Deuteronomy 4:33 – 34, as proof that God brought people out from the bondage system that they had grown to love. This message explicitly states that it is given as a reminder for the later days in tribulation, according to Deuteronomy 4, verse 30. Perhaps we should pay attention.

*Deuteronomy 4:30, 31 (KJV) "When thou art in tribulation, and all these things [curses for disobedience] are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the LORD thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice; (For the LORD thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he swore unto them."*

The covenant refers to God's promise that He would punish us *with the stripes of men* if we disobeyed Him – WAR, with its death, maiming, and broken homes!

Deuteronomy 4:33 (NKJV) "Did any people ever hear the voice of God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as you have heard, and live?"

Deuteronomy 4:34 (NKJV) "Or did God ever try to go and take for Himself a nation from the midst of another nation, by trials, by signs, by wonders, by war, by a mighty hand and an outstretched arm, and by great terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes?"

We know from Revelation 19:20 that the false prophet will use miracles to deceive those that already had the mark. The mark already existed when the miracles deceived them. Notice the difference. In Revelation 13 the second beast uses miracles, even fire from heaven, **before** the mark is mentioned. In Revelation 19 the false prophet, who is not necessarily the second beast, uses miracles **after** the mark is issued.

We presume that this Revelation 13:13 fire from the sky miracle will be used to deceive men into making an image to the first beast. But it doesn't explicitly state that the miracles cause people to get the mark.

There are other possibilities for you to consider. If you want to insist that fire from heaven cause people to get the mark, you have to consider that brightness from heaven could signify a counterfeit of God's glory, in the sight of men. See Luke 2:9, Acts 22:6, Acts 26:13, 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 4:4&6, Hebrews 1:3, and Revelation 21:23. (*Glory means very apparent*) Were you induced by great sign to get a number so you could sell your labor or trade with a bank account? The glory, from heaven, of their counterfeit gods is depicted on the ceiling of the U.S. Capitol rotunda.

Another possibility that cannot be ruled out: Would the fiery destruction from the sky of the world trade center influence public opinion (a democracy power rising from the sea of multitudes) to demand that you worship (with a perjury oath signature) on a Homeland Security ID card (engraved and symbolically in your right hand and forehead), their logo (graven image of the eagle that follows the goddess Justitia, from Roman mythology once thought of as dead but did live), forced on you by military power with worldwide influence, that speaks against God, and overcomes saints? Are you sure? And yes, it is international: I will prove later that the U.S. Attorney General is forced to take orders from INTERPOL whether he likes it or not.

There will indeed be a future fire from heaven.

- Revelation 19:11-13 describes heaven opening and the Word of God appearing with “eyes as a flame of fire” It says “in righteousness he doth judge and make war.”
- At some point in history, God will indeed bring literal fire from heaven to purify the earth. 2 Peter 3:12. Zephaniah 1:18.

God has destroyed heretics with fire from heaven. In Numbers 16:35 fire from heaven destroyed rebels who burned incense with Korah. Numbers 26:10 says this was a warning sign from God. A sign of God’s authority to punish heretics. Will the beast’s fire destroy rebels who don’t go along with the system?

- Numbers 26:10 followed a census commanded by God. Will a beast’s census (enumeration with numbers) foretell a counterfeit fire from heaven? or symbolize a non-fiery destruction of heretics?
- Incense smoke has always symbolized prayer. Korah’s rebels burned incense then God destroyed them with fire from heaven. Will prayer provoke the beast’s “fire from heaven” punishment of his enemies?

Another possibility is that John the Revelator is referring to fire from heaven similar to the great sign from heaven that influenced those at Pentecost. Acts 2 tells of “tongues like as of fire”. The phrase “Like as of fire” does not necessarily mean actual fire. Does Revelation 13:13 fire from heaven refer to a counterfeit Pentecost style indwelling of evil spirits? This great fire sign from heaven influenced those at Pentecost. Such supernatural signs (real or simulated) could deceive people that they have divine approval. Supernatural power could be spoken of, in general terms, as fire from heaven. After all, Christ himself said that they were to tarry in Jerusalem, until they be endued with power from on high.

Elijah was the only person to ever call down fire from heaven. Revelation 13:13 Fire from heaven may symbolize Satan’s counterpart to Elijah. Someone to herald his deceptive miracles.

- Malachi 4:5 (KJV) "Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD:"
- Christ said John the Baptist was Elijah. Matthew 11:14. But the Baptist never made fire come down from heaven. (at least not physical fire – he certainly called us to be baptized by the glory from heaven, in newness of life).

Other than Elijah, the only other individuals directly associated with fire are the Seraphim.

*“The Seraphim, whose very name means fire, are the ones that purified Isaiah. The only other place in Scripture where we see these “Seraphim” creatures are in the Revelation of Jesus Christ. They oversee the first four seals. ... God has a plan to purify His saints to come into His Presence. This [fire] is His chastisement.”*

In like manner, could Revelation 13:13 fire from heaven be as simple as the Beast’s public discipline-chastisement-sanction of subordinates? After all, even today’s idiom “from on high” refers to upper management. Can we really argue that a very symbolic Revelation would not use a similar “from heaven” idiom to refer to sanctions by less-than-divine lords?

Does Christ’s Luke 12:49 fire refer to the quick spread of Christianity? If so, could the beast’s symbolic fire refer to the spread of his cult? Do/Will people believe that it is Christianity?

Nero blamed Christians for the fire that burned Rome. Does Rev 13:13 deceptive fire from heaven refer to Nero’s framing, unexpectedly (“from out of the blue” is an idiom that we still use today), the fire on Christians in the sight of men? After all, he was emperor of the entire known world and indeed “caused them which dwell therein to worship the first beast.”


We could even say that Rome's avoidance of fiery destruction in Nero's day (July 64AD) might be the deadly wound that healed in Rev 13:12. After all

- (1) God often destroys by fire, and Christ who was expected to call down destructive fire from heaven in Luke 9:54 might just have done so, and
- (2) Nero was seventh in line of succession when John wrote the Book of Revelation [if you ignore the supposed 96AD dating of the book]. Counting from Julius Caesar to Nero is seven kings, Nero being the one who "is". By the way, have you noticed that the eighth beast that goeth into perdition is of the seven kings? Emperor Vespasian destroyed Jerusalem in 70AD [which is never mentioned by John the Revelator, perhaps because it had not happened yet].
- (3) this Rev 13:12 deadly wound is not necessarily a reference to the Rev 13:3 head wound, (even though Nero was the last head of the Claudius line).
- (4) nor necessarily the Rev 13:14 wound with a sword, but even if it is, then "sword" is a Christian reference to the word of God (as in Ephesians 6:17 and Hebrews 4:12).

Could fire from heaven symbolize the opportunity to escape while God himself creates a diversion?

- In Joel 2:30-31 Fire from heaven is prophesized to stop the enemy and allow the righteous the opportunity to escape from evil. This is to occur after God pours out his spirit and right before the sun turns to darkness and the moon turns to blood "before the great and terrible day of the Lord" This prophecy is repeated in Acts 2:18-20.
- Keep in mind that the end days will offer the opportunity to escape. Luke 21:36 Watch you therefore, and pray always, that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that are about to come to pass, to stand before the Son of man.
- the unchanging Lord memorialized an annual rehearsal of this hasty escape from evil (Exodus 12:11) that thou mayest remember - Deuteronomy 16:3. [your forefathers teaching of God's precepts to their children is God's mark (mark of protection) that is on your hand and forehead. Deuteronomy 11:18].
- Pray that your escape will not happen on the Sabbath - Matthew 24:20. [unless the 4<sup>th</sup> commandment that was written in stone by an unchanging God has somehow been nailed to the cross]

We know that actual Fire from heaven destroyed two cities, not because they were pagan but because they were immoral. Prior to the existence of any Jewish law, the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha were destroyed because they tolerated homosex. (And indeed, 1900 years later, in the unchanging morals of the New Testament, Romans 1:32 still imputes the death penalty to those who merely tolerate the consensual homosexuals of Romans 1:26, 27). Could Revelation 13 beastly fire from heaven symbolize beasts' punishment of morality (by enforcement of today's hate crime laws)? After all, it is a "great wonder" that perverts using political "beast" power have gotten this far in their political agenda. The terminology "pervert beast power" cannot be ignored. Remember that 2 Peter 2:12 and Jude verse 10 both refer to homosexuals as beasts. As they push for the elimination of millennia of moral code, their hate crime laws can now arrest and punish you for what you think, rather than for anything that you do.

	<p>There are three heavens (according to 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 12:2), the first heaven is where the birds fly and rain falls. Perhaps this Revelation 13 fire from heaven symbolizes the wrath of God against the disobedient (as in Isaiah 5:24,25 or Psalm 89:46, or Matt 13:40 or Zephaniah 3:8). Perhaps this Revelation 13 fire from heaven refers to the fire of tribulation spoken of in Joel 1 and 2. After all, throughout history the Jehovah God of the Bible has used brutal pagans to accomplish His wrath against disobedient nations. Throughout the history of mankind, an unchanging divine authority has seen fit to arrange for brutal pagans to take into captivity any nation that obeys a counterfeit authority.</p>
<p>Fire From Heaven</p>	
<p>God has always used pagan nations to punish his people. In the Bible, brutal nations enslave those who turn their backs on God. Brutal pagan conquerors are instruments of His discipline (Isaiah 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3, Jeremiah 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10, Ezekiel 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15). IS AMERICA GOING TO BE ANY DIFFERENT, OR DID GOD CHANGE?</p>	

Here is how fire will destroy disobedient nations:

- (Joel 1:6 a nation has invaded, 1:15 the day of the Lord is near, it will come as destruction from Almighty, 1:19 fire has destroyed the land, 2:2 there comes the largest army of all time \*; Joel 2:3 fire devours, nothing escapes, 2:6 nations anguish 2:10 before them the sun and moon are darkened (unstated: by smoke from the destruction fires), 2:11 he is strong who obeys the word of the Lord, the day of the Lord is great and terrible, 2:12 the Lord says repent, 2:17 priests pray that heathen should not rule over them, -- the rest of chapter 2 the Lord intervenes and restores (redeems) his people and pours out his spirit. Joel 3 then discusses staging all nations at the valley of Jhoshaphat to bring judgment against them. The town of Jhoshaphat just happens to be in the valley of Megiddo. Armageddon. And indeed the only occurrence of the word Armageddon in the Bible is in Revelation 16:16, where it is a staging area, not a battle field)
  - \* [sounds just like the greatest tribulation/vengeance of all time, spoken of by Jesus in Matt 24:21, Mark 13:19, Luke 21:22] While I'm on the topic of the largest army of all time — There are two existing possibilities for the two hundred million man army of Rev 9:16. Muslim or Chinese.

Armageddon is in the valley of Megiddo. There were two famous victories here. Barak over the Canaanites and Gideon over the Midianites. Armageddon symbolizes a place where God defends His people from their enemies. Resulting in great bloodshed. Armageddon in Revelation 16:16 is a staging area for the final battle. It is not the battle ground. Are you symbolically staged for God to defend you?

Another speculation is smoke. Smoke, as with fire, is mentioned in many of these end time prophecies. Sometimes smoke symbolizes prayer, sometimes smoke is the result of fiery destruction, especially when mentioned along with the sun turning dark. Joel 2:30, Acts 2:19, Rev 8:3-4, Rev 15:8. If smoke symbolizes prayer, then the souls of the saints are praying (Rev 6:10)



And my final “fire from heaven” speculation is UFOs. God’s chosen people were lead out of bondage from Egypt by a pillar (cylinder) of fire in the sky. Exodus 14:24, Numbers 14:14, Nehemiah 9:12 & 19. I don’t know how likely this is, but I mention it so you can be prepared for UFOs as Satan’s followers counterfeit a heavenly authority. Certainly there is technology available to create this illusion with flying craft. (Not with holograms. Don’t give any credence to [Project Blue Beam](#)).

Conclusion: yes indeed, the two-horned beast that issues the mark can do great deceptions to make fire come down from heaven. Be prepared for any possibility.

“But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief” (1 Thessalonians 5:4)

The perilous times are upon us “but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits” (Daniel 11:32)

### 3.6 Signs of Revelation 13:14

In Revelation 13:14 the first beast allows the second beast to use signs to deceive us into making an image

Revelation 13:14 King James Version:

*“And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of those miracles, which he had the power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. “*

The KJV has “the means of” in italics. These were added by the translators and words for this phrase do not appear in the original Greek text. Just one word is in the original. Their translation “By the means of” was from the Greek word “dia” which means “through” It is the same root of our English words diameter, diagonal or diagram. Through. The advanced student will also recognize the prefix of “diabolical” is this same Greek word that means “through”. Are you deceived through the means of miracles?

The KJV translation uses the word “miracles” whereas the new translations use the word “signs” It is the word defined in Strong’s Lexicon as: miracle, sign, token, wonder.

This same word is used in 1 Corinthians. 14:22, which says that Signs are for the non-believers, not for believers. Believers already know where authority comes from, and we already know we are being deceived. Signs are for non-believers.

This Greek word for “miracles” or “signs” is the Greek σημεια and means a sign, *that by which a thing is known*, a token, an indication, of authority; hence, especially of supernatural authority, a miracle, whether real or unreal, Luke 11:16,29, 2 Thessalonians 2:9

These need not be supernatural miracles. These signs/miracles can be real or unreal. Here are two contrasting examples. Real: in Luke 11:16,29 where Christ told us of his only divine credential. Counterfeit: in 2 Thessalonians 2:9 that prophesied Satan’s power, signs and lying wonders. Counterfeit credentials would certainly fit into the deception being revealed in Revelation 13:14.

In a general sense, we should be looking for any signal of authority, whether real or unreal. Does today’s news media refuse to tell you the real truth and instead focus on their lying power and signs and wonders, and in all deceivableness of unrighteousness ... because they received not the love of the truth?

There are many other possibilities here. Let’s take these meanings one at a time and examine the possibilities. Those who have an ear to hear will recognize the most likely possibilities. The context of the sentence is deception. The deception is by the means of (or through) a “*sign by which a thing is known, ... an indication of authority, ... whether real or unreal.*” Most people are expecting feats of illusion, whether real or unreal. But counterfeit credentials cannot be ruled out. Even a stolen password would fit the definition, and the prophecy. Here are some possibilities:

1. Authenticating signs by which a thing is known. Signatures (notice the root word of “sign”) even in today’s language will authenticate contracts and delegate powers, and are indeed signs by which a thing is known. A signature, even in today’s legal dictionaries, is anything that authenticates, including notary seals, brand names, trademarks, letterhead, company logos – in other words: marks which are presented as proof “by which a thing is known.” The Great Seal of the United States is the authority mark of the United States. Could its eye atop a pyramid be a counterfeit authenticating sign? Ben Franklin wanted the Great Seal of the U.S. to show Moses departing the Red Sea. Quite a contrast, isn’t it? Could constitutions written by secret societies be a counterfeit authoritative “sign” which keep church and state separated?
2. Proof. Credentials by which a thing is known. Miracles to show divine authority. Christ himself used this same Greek word to present his only divine credential to non-believers (miraculous signs are for non-believers Matthew 12:39, Matthew 16:4, and Luke 11:29-30). And prophesied about end times false signs in Mark 13:22 which could deceive, if it were possible, even the very elect. Even today we still rely upon signs as proof of delegated

authority: Badges, Imprimatur, and apostilles. Perhaps we should also consider land patents, treaties, constitutions, corporate charters or even Papal Bulls. HOW DID WE GO FROM A NATION WHERE YOUR OWN WAX SEAL WAS SUFFICIENT TO AUTHORIZE ANY LEGAL DOCUMENT, BACK TO THE ROMAN SYSTEM OF NOTARY PUBLICS?

3. Signs as proof of Delegated authority. By which a thing is known. Christians had the delegated authority to work supernatural Signs (Acts 14:3) as proof of the word of God, Mark 16:20, Acts 2:43, 4:30, 5:12 etc.
4. Let's examine legitimate credentials that might seem deceptive, but are not. If the company that you work for is bought out by another owner (or employer or stockholder), and they didn't tell you that you are in a new chain of command, do you still work for the new owner? Even if abhorrent? The answer is Yes. If your representatives in Congress sell the National Debt to foreign creditors and you were not told about it, can your land and labor be used for collateral (they use the legal terminology "full faith and credit of the United States") to this new chain of command? (borrower is servant to the lender Proverbs 22:7) Even if abhorrent? Even if you didn't know about it? Can this foreign chain of command then seize your land and labor, which is the collateral for the contract? The answer is Yes. You agreed to pay your debt. Debt can be subrogated even if you don't know about it. Even to Satan. The borrower is servant to the lender.
5. Legal process and Jurisdiction and a court's rules of evidence would also encompass authenticating credentials "by which a thing is known". There are many tricks to keep you in the jurisdiction of foreign courts. Ever since medieval days attorneys existed for this very purpose. The word "Attorney" comes from the word Attorn. It means to turn-over or to twist. They were hired to ensure that all slaves turned-over with the sale of feudal property.

Perhaps you thought you could ignore this feudal possibility. Think again. King John gave the land of England to Pope Innocent III as a fiefdom, which is perpetuated today through the American Bar Association, as a branch of the British Bar Association.

Here is a brief history lesson. Other than the original 13 States; inhabitants of federal territories sought Statehood in the union because admission into Statehood would free them from federal jurisdiction. State inhabitants would then be free from federal law. And the inhabitants of the first 13 states were never subject to laws passed in Washington DC. The U.S. Supreme Court's decision in *Ex Parte Milligan*, 71 U.S. 2, after the civil war, determined that States have a duty to protect their citizens from the federal government.

If you find yourself somehow subject to federal laws, then perhaps a deceptive "sign" of authority somehow tricked you into a two-horned beast power. (where you would be subject to two kings – for example: governor and president.). The Supreme Court in the *Cruikshank* case, 92 U.S. 551, said: "It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

I'm NOT saying that this dual government system is indeed the two horned beast of Revelation 13, I'm just giving an example. Perhaps it is just a coincidence that it has worldwide military dominion, demands worship, -- worship of a confederation of military beast powers that was once thought of as dead -- wears out saints, uses deception to force us to make an image, gives life unto the image, and has allied itself with an international authority that issues a mark needed to buy and sell – a mark that you can only get by worshipping, with a perjury oath, their graven image.

While I'm on the topic of a two horned beast authority rising up from the land in Rev 13:11, There are two other possibilities that directly relate to false authority from the dirt itself: venue and agriculture.

6. VENUE. Venue is essentially "a place that has its own laws." The concept of venue is relatively new. How did an imaginary boundary line in the dirt get the authority to make laws? What concept of law allows a small group of people (typically, they were freemasons) to vote to create a county government that could bind all their neighbors into their laws? Regardless of how abhorrent the laws becomes?

Venue. God gave us the earth to subdue (Genesis 1:28) and now it rules over us. HOW DID WE GET FROM A LEGAL SYSTEM WHERE FAMILIES WERE THE HIGHEST FORM OF GOVERNMENT for the first ten books of the Bible, TO A LEGAL SYSTEM WHERE DIRT IS THE HIGHEST FORM OF GOVERNMENT?

I never understood the concept of venue. God commanded us to subdue the earth. How did land (dirt, geography, a man-made line in the sand) evolve to have its' own laws? During the Roman times it was brutal violence that forced people to comply with those who conquered them. This brutality was perpetuated in the Catholic era. Examples: Galileo was imprisoned for suggesting that the earth moves. Queen Mary executed 6 mothers for teaching the Lord's prayer to their children, and government brutality was certainly used to coerce (subject) others mentioned in Foxes Book of Martyrs. People had to live in castles to avoid death and capture by enemies. The protestant reformation freed us from this Roman brutality. Kings could no longer claim that they ruled by divine authority. The land (venue, dirt) was no longer acknowledged to belong to the King.

After the protestant reformation, people had to join society to be subject to society's laws, and land ownership was only for those who worked the land. When King James tried to bring us back into the Catholic fold, the Pilgrims fled. They did not come to a new continent to form a British Colony, they came here to be free from British rule. John Locke suggested that merely walking on a road would subject you to the laws that protect you, but the U.S. Supreme Court keeps ruling that walking on the road is a liberty. They even quoted (in Boyd, 116 U.S. 616) an old English court case as the received law of the land, stating that a law officer cannot step onto your property, though the damage be none, for fear of bruising the grass.

I'm not the only one confused. Chief Seattle asked in 1851: "*How can you buy or sell the sky, the warmth of the land? The idea is strange to us. If we do not own the freshness of the air and the sparkle of the water, how can you buy them from us?*"

I'm convinced that venue is just another Satanic tactic used by his disciples that we will have to fight against until the Messiah returns to straighten out the mess.

There is much history and symbolism to show that land is associated with the air above it. Could it be that the Prince of the power of the air has restored us back under the boot of tyranny? We had freed ourselves from the concept of a King's divine right to rule, but we again find ourselves subject to someone else's imagined right to rule over a venue.

- Boundary lines extend up to the heavens according to a legal maxim *Cujus est solum, ejus est usque ad caelum*. Ownership of soil gives exclusive right to everything which is upon, or above it to an indefinite height. (Blackstone's Commentary on the Law Book 2 page 18, and Book 3 page 217). Does a King still own your land? Or did allodial land patents restore our right to own land?
- A man's home is his castle. The original source for this legal maxim is found in English law. It is his castle to protect him from government, but not from power of the air. Here is the original quote: "The poorest man may in his cottage bid defiance to all the forces of the Crown. It may be frail—its roof may shake—the wind may blow through it—the storm may enter—the rain may enter—but the King of England cannot enter!—all his force dares not cross the threshold of the ruined tenement!" WILLIAM PITT, Earl of Chatham, speech in the House of Lords in 1763 in opposition to an excise tax on cider
- Ephesians 2:1&2 (NKJV) "And you He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins, in which you once walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience,..."

The second beast rises up from the land according to Revelation 13:11. I can understand how individual contracts could bind those few that are within the society they created, but I could never figure out how someone else's line in the dirt could bind you to their laws. In 1690 John Locke's second treatise of government never mentioned society in geographical terms, and Rutherford's Lex Rex in 1644 explained how society is created when one family is not large enough to contain everyone, but did not mention geography or venue. And the Supreme Court in 1884 would not accept a claim that a Native American was subject to the laws of a State. In *Elk v. Wilkins* in 1884 (112 U.S. 94) they determined that a Native American was not allowed to vote because he was not allowed to pay tax.



Laws only apply to those who have entered into society, not to land venue. In fact, the State of Texas argued that its laws should not apply to illegal aliens that lived there, and that the aliens could not be educated in Texas schools. The Supreme Court did not disagree, either. They said in Plyler v. Doe, 457 U.S. 202, that “although education is not a fundamental right, the Fourteenth Amendment’s protection extends to anyone, citizen or stranger, who is subject to the laws of a State...” The Supreme Court did not jump to a conclusion that everyone living within the boundary is indeed “subject to the laws of a State”. And there are plenty of legal commentaries that prove that children are not subject to the laws of a state.

Are you “subject to the laws of a State”?

[and before you jump to the wrong conclusion, please consider (1) that birth within a State does not establish citizenship according to the 1941 U.S. Supreme Court decision in Edwards v. California, 314 U.S. 160. And (2) “although citizenship implies the right of residence, the later by no means implies citizenship... [no one] can be treated or dealt with by the government as citizens, but those who are citizens in reality.” according to the U.S. Supreme Court in Rundle v. Delaware 55 U.S. 80 at page 101]

Could “venue” be the false sign of authority, from the beast that rises from the land, which causes us to make an image to the first beast?

7. I want to mention that agriculture rises up from the land, as does the beast that issues the mark, name or number. The seal of the IRS has the wheat staff, the balance scale and the eagle. The wheat staff is curved over the top. In heraldry, the highest authority appears at the top. The IRS payroll is authorized by the Department of Agriculture’s National Finance Center in New Orleans.

Perhaps I’m overly suspicious, but I’m beginning to think that all law recognizes that the Pope owns the land as a fiefdom, and we are serfs who owe a tribute. If you confess to being a “resident” then you are a serf who is attached to the land. Also look up “Ryot Tenure” in an old Law Dictionary.

**RYOT-TENURE.** A system of land-tenure, where the government takes the place of landowners and collects the rent by means of tax gatherers. The farming is done by poor peasants, (ryots), who find the capital, so far as there is any, and also do the work. The system exists in Turkey, Egypt, Persia, and other Eastern countries, and in a modified form in British India. After slavery, it is accounted the worst of all systems, because the government can fix the rent at what it pleases, and it is difficult to distinguish between rent and taxes.

Is America just another British colony with “*the worst of all systems*”? Are you required to “*find the capital, so far as there is any, and also do the work*”? In America allodial land is untaxed. Governments are instituted among men to protect rights. A right cannot be taxed. If government does not protect your untaxed land, then you must have waived your right to own land. What did you do to waive your right to own land?

The SS-5 form is the application for a Social Security Number. It is an IRS form (IRS agriculture being symbolized by the wheat staff), not a Social Security Administration form. The authority that rises from the earth, processes the payroll of the people that issue Numbers that are needed to buy or sell. By the way, Congress never created the IRS. The IRS remains foreign. Congress only created the office of Commissioner of Internal Revenue, as an office within the Justice Department, not the Treasury Department, as a one-man office, and later gave him an assistant. See my chapter on IRS Authority.

The mural painted on the ceiling of the U.S. Capitol rotunda in Washington DC depicts some Roman gods. In gods you trust. The Roman goddess Ceres is the goddess of Agriculture (from which we get our English word “cereal”). America is depicted wearing a liberty cap, and “is turning over to Ceres the mastery of a team of horses pulling a reaper.” [quote from Art in the United States Capitol, U.S. Government Printing Office, House Document Number 94-660] I don’t know much about Roman gods, but it seems to me that gods should be providing for the people, not the other way around.

Certainly you wouldn’t be offering a ritual sacrifice of a third of your income to your pagan gods, would you? A yearly sacrifice made with a perjury oath ritual? Even the Hebrew slaves under Pharaoh only had to pay 20% of their harvest (Genesis 47:24 – and that was when they were recovering from a famine).

8. What do we know about deceptive miracles? Those who warn us about occult magic are quick to point out that
- The “Theology of the Sephiroth” is the Masonic “high magic”
  - Dr. Robert Anton Wilson, an anti-Christian writer on occult magic, remarks that “Theater is, and has always been, magic”
  - And indeed, sorcerers’ magic wands were made of Holly wood, so it was only fitting that their center of deception be named after the sorcerer’s magic wand. Be warned: any deceptive amusements, movies, or television (video games) could be Satan’s tools. Professor John Wu of Auburn University: “The truth is to know that everything is an illusion.”
  - If beast (governmental) powers are not as they seem, then you have experienced the miracle of deception.

It is already apparent a new beast power is at work deceiving them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had the power to do in the sight of the first beast.

### 3.7 Revelation 13:17 No man might

- Revelation 13:17 “and that no one **may** buy or sell except one who has the mark **or** the name of the beast, **or** the number of his name.”
- Revelation 13:17 KJV translation: “... no man **might** buy or sell ... “
- Revelation 13:17 NIV translation “... unless he had the mark, **which is** the name of the beast, or the number of his name.”
- Those who resist the beast must resist the image, mark and number according to Revelation 15:2 “... those who have the victory over the beast, over his image and over his mark and over the number of his name, ... having harps of God.”

No man **might** buy or sell.

A prudent student will want to know what is meant by "no man might".

- Is this a prophecy about an absolute prohibition of all transactions such that there will be no trading, bartering or unmonitored transactions?
- OR will there be some minor exceptions to this prohibition, but it remains generally true? [It is generally true that you cannot sell your labor without a mark of a beast. It is generally true that you cannot open a bank account without a mark of a beast.]
- OR can one single instance of any law, regulation or court decision that prohibits a transaction be enough to prove that your God given right to contract has already been cancelled by a beast power?
- OR does this prophecy refer to a law that makes it punishable to trade or barter under the table?
- The [Declaration of Independence](#) says that we are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights, and that governments are instituted among men to secure those rights. That's right. The purpose of government is to secure God given rights. The Constitution prohibits government from impairing the obligation of contracts. Why would you need permission to contract if you already have a right to do so? Under what conditions is it legal for government to restrict your buying and selling? If you have ever needed a mark (credential) of a beast (ruling power) to buy prescription medication to save your life, is this enough proof that your God given rights are gone AND that legitimate government is gone? Oaths are always religious rituals. Did you need to swear an oath to get the mark?

Where will you draw your line in the sand?

Here are some things to consider:

- The NIV translation speaks of patient endurance and faithfulness in both Revelation 13:10 and 14:12. Some people insist that this is a reference to martyrs patiently and faithfully enduring their executions.
- Since God will reward some people for refusing the mark, this prophecy CANNOT MEAN THAT ALL WILL GET A MARK.
- It says all will have a cause to get a mark. Verses 16 and 17 are one sentence. This sentence states that THE BEAST'S INTENT IS TO CAUSE ALL TO GET (or give) A MARK. Revelation 13:16,17 (KJV) "And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive [Greek *didomi* = give] a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name."
- There is a big difference between the assumption that this is an absolute prohibition that no man will buy or sell without a mark when it really says is "no man might (NIV says 'could') buy or sell". One is absolute and one is permissive. Even in today's English language, there is confusion about mandatory sounding words. See my chapter on your government's definition of the word "must". The word *causeth* (Greek *poieo*) can also be translated "to prepare" "to appoint" or "to promise".
- John's choice of the words "no man" must mean something less absolute because he did not use the usual *oudeis* (translated 94 times as "no man", 27 times "none", and 6 times "any man") nor did he use *medeis* (32 times "no man"). My paraphrase: "certain men might not buy or sell..." The word for "buy" (*ἀγορεύσαι* agorusai) means to do commerce in the marketplace.

- It says “receive a mark” but uses the Greek (*didomi*), which normally means *to give*. Nowhere else is this word translated as *receive*.
- It says that no man might [Greek *dunamai*] buy or sell without a mark, name or number. *Dunamai* is used in the New Testament over 200 times but translated as *might* only 6 times. Able, having power, mighty. Might is the root word of mighty. It is translated as *possible* in Romans 12:18, Galatians 4:15, but translated as *The Almighty* in Luke 1:49.. Quite a contrast in meanings. *Permission of law* is backed by might (Able, having power, mighty). The Greek Interlinear Bible published by Baker translates this phrase as “no one should be able to buy or to sell...” [the Greek word *dunamai*, *Strong’s Concordance* G1410, is the “should be able” which can also be translated as can, could, may, be possible, have power, or by permission of law]. My paraphrase: “certain men might not have permission of law to enter the marketplace or sell without a badge ...”
- We know that tea brokers and bus drivers (and stock brokers while on the exchange floor, and utility meter readers who step onto private property, etc.) all have badges to present themselves in their marketplaces as representatives of their masters.

Is there something more sinister being described by this Revelation 13:17 mark-of-the-beast? What about the vast majority who want to participate in the golden calf of central banking? We know that they can get a banking authorization number to present themselves in public commerce. All they need to do is swear an oath to (worship) a beast power -- a counterfeit lord/master/provider.

Where does it say that ALL transactions require a mark? There are several alternative interpretations of verse 17.

- (1) Buying and selling in verse 17 could very well refer only to government monitored commerce:
  - As I stated above, since some people will be rewarded for refusing the mark, therefore prophecy doesn’t say that all will be forced to get a mark.
  - Even a cashless society can not prevent bartering under the table. If you know the right people, you can always barter labor for food. Even in Nazi occupied Europe, people who had to hide in attics could barter with those who risked the death penalty to hide them.
- (2) Perhaps verse 17 refers to a time when buying, selling or even barter are illegal without a mark name or number.
  - Guess what? Buying, selling and bartering without a mark are already illegal. Such crimes prove intent to commit tax evasion, and bartering is also the crime of “structuring” transactions as if to evade the reporting of money laundering. Under the structuring laws, U.S. Code Title 31, sections 5322-5324, money-laundering crime doesn’t have to be drug money. Cash transactions over a certain amount are treated the same as if it were drug money. If you have a large family, then merely asking your grocer if he takes checks could land you in prison for structuring a money-laundering scheme over \$10,000 a year.
  - The average so-called “law-abiding” American now commits [three felonies a day](#).
  - Unless the beast can control illegal bartering under the table, some people will barter outside the mark-name-number system to avoid government monitored transactions (such as cashing a check, receiving wages, buying a car, getting a job, paying taxes, buying medical care, renting an apartment, buying airline travel, or even getting a phone.) Today, A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER or credentials obtained thereby AUTHORIZES THESE TRANSACTIONS. Even though government was once prohibited from impairing your God-given right to contract.
- (3) There is yet another possibility. Slaves don’t have a right to buy or sell. Suppose, just suppose, that as a slave all your income belongs to your master. Since owners must provide for their slaves, the after-tax income that you are allowed to keep is really your living allowance. Perhaps you became a slave in 1933 when the U.S. declared bankruptcy and your new owners made ALL domestic buying and selling illegal. More about this, later.

### 3.8 666 – the number of man

- The beast's mark accomplishes the same purpose as its number according to Revelation 13:17.
- The number of the beast is man's number [not necessarily "the number of a man" in the translations that added the indefinite article "a"] to Revelation 13:18. It is not there in the original.
- His [mankind's] number is 666.
- 666 is not necessarily one person's number.
- Revelation 13:17 and Revelation 15:2 both associates a number with the mark.

Revelation 13:17 (NIV)

*"so that no one could buy or sell unless he had the mark, which is the name of the beast or the number of his name."*

Revelation 13:18 (NIV)

*"This calls for wisdom. If anyone has insight, let him calculate the number of the beast, for it is man's number. His number is 666."*

The number of mankind. Revelation 13:18 translates the Greek word *anthropos* into the English word *man*. But *anthropos* means all of mankind, which is not the Greek *aner* that would be used to indicate an individual man. Again: The original Greek has never had the indefinite article "a".

The verse 18 word for man is the Greek *anthropos*, from which we get our English anthro- words, such as anthropology and anthropomorphic, meaning all of mankind. Again we see that it is not the number of one individual man, for it is the number of mankind. The man of sin in 2nd Thessalonians chapter 2 is also *anthropos*.

#### 3.8.1 The number 666

Just as some Roman letters are still today used as Roman numerals, Some Greek letters are used as numerals. The numeral Six is the letter S ( $\sigma$ , *sigma*) in the Greek. Greek Sigma and stigma are translated into the numeral 6.

The 666 of Revelation 13:18 is translated from the Greek chi-xi-stigma which is indexed in Strong's Concordance as G5516. The third digit is the numeral *Stigma* (4742). Not *sigma*.

As a word *stigma* is normally translated as a mark of ownership, but is here used as a numerical digit, not as a word. Stigma as a number, is not necessarily the number 6, but is 5 and a fraction. It is derived from a meaning more-than-a-handful or overflowing. The book of Revelation is filled with symbolism; but should the 666 appear as a non-symbolic real number, keep in mind that the original is 665½. Also note that some authorities say early manuscript fragments have it as 616.

#### 3.8.2 Possible meanings of 666

The Greek word Stigma is a mark of ownership, The English word "stigma", although it comes from the Greek, has come to mean a mark of shame or a brand of disgrace. The third six in 666 is the Greek *stigma* (666= *chi-xi-stigma*). Do you have a permanent mark of shame?

More than 100 years ago, E W Bullinger wrote about this 666 mark of ownership,

*"The number 6 was stamped on the old mysteries. The great secret symbol consisted of the three letters SSS, because the letter S in the Greek alphabet was the symbol of the figure 6. ... Now the word stigma (stigma), means a mark, but especially a mark made by a brand as burnt upon slaves, cattle, or soldiers, by their owners or masters; or on devotees who thus branded themselves as belonging to their gods. It is from stizw, stizo, to prick, or brand with a hot iron. Hence it came to be used of scars or wound-prints, and it is*

thus used by Paul of his scars, which he regarded as the tokens of his sufferings, the marks which he bore on his body for the sake of his Lord and Master, and marking him as belonging to the one who had bought him (Gal 6:17). "

"...the numbers formed by the letters of the words themselves. This last is called by the ancients Gematria. This is the use of the Gematria. This is the use of the letters of the alphabet instead of figures. Arabic numerals being a comparatively modern invention were not, of course, known to, and could not have been used by, the more ancient nations.

This letter ζ (called Stigma) is used for the number 6. Why this letter and number ... both are intimately connected with the ancient Egyptian "mysteries." The three letters SSS (in Greek ΣΣΣ) were the symbol of Isis, which is thus connected with 666. Indeed the expression of this number, Χξζ, consists of the initial and final letters of the word Χριστος (Christos), Christ, viz., Ξ and ζ, with the symbol of the serpent between them, Ξ-ξ-ζ.

source: [http://philologos.org/\\_eb-nis/chap03.htm#49](http://philologos.org/_eb-nis/chap03.htm#49) (and notice the mention of three sigma, which is SSS or 666, for the ancient Egyptian symbol for Isis. We will discuss this in detail, later.)

If John the revelator intended a meaning that 666 would be an identification system, the Social Security Number, or equivalent number in your country (SIN in Canada, Tax File number in Australia, Social Insurance in England, etc.), is truly your permanent identification number, the number of man. All your other numbers (address, phone, apartment, credit card, licenses, accounts) do not mark you permanently. Do you have a Number symbolically burnt upon you as a mark of ownership?

The number of mankind. Revelation 13:18 translates the Greek word *anthropos* into the English word *man*. But *anthropos* means all of mankind, which is not the Greek *aner* that would be used to indicate an individual man.

But some people claim that the number 666 must be one man's number, and is only the number 666, and since everyone's Social Security Number is different, they claim that therefore the SSN cannot be the Mark of the Beast.

Those of the implant or tattoo crowd will usually agree that a transponder implant or a tattoo will have a unique identifying number for each person, not just one man's number. They point out that UPC bar code synchronization bars form the number 666.

Some people insist that 666 refers to the 666<sup>th</sup> chapter of the Bible, even though the original Bible did not have chapters, which were added to the Bible much later in history. And different faiths canonize different books.

### **3.8.3 Calculating the number 666**

Verse 18 calls for wisdom and understanding that we don't yet have. But as knowledge increases, more is revealed. Literally translated: Here is wisdom. He who has understanding let him calculate the number (Greek word *arithmos*) of the beast, for it is man's number, and its [not his] number equals 666 (*chi-xi-stigma*).

The number 666 is in the Bible in 1<sup>st</sup> Kings 10:14 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Chronicles 9:13, as the yearly 666 talents of gold received in tax revenue by Solomon's tax system mentioned in 1<sup>st</sup> Kings 4:7. Perhaps, just perhaps, a calculation of man's annual revenue will have something to do with the mark.

These 12 tax districts "brought tribute and served Solomon all the days of his life" verse 21. Perhaps Solomon's then-unnumbered taxing system is prophesized by John to eventually require an account number. Or perhaps the taking of taxes to provide the welfare giveaway in 1 Kings 4:27 which "provided food ... for all who came to Solomon's Table. There was no lack in their supply."

-- And don't ignore the slave labor of resident aliens required by Solomon in 2 Chronicles 8:8, "... as it is to this day." You will soon learn that in America only aliens are required to pay income tax. Perhaps you are a slave who is alien to the foreigners who overthrew your nation.

-- And don't ignore Rehoboam's forced welfare contributions. Corban, nullifies the word of God. Mark 7:11-13. Powerful words from Christ himself. And Rehoboam's forced contributions divided a nation that has never recovered.

## CORBAN

Mainstream teaching misconstrues the forced welfare of Roman times and equates the word corban with voluntary welfare of ancient time.

A bronze figure of Apis, the Egyptian sacred Bull of sacrifice, [located at Galilee](#) is inscribed with the word 'korban' in 3 languages, Greek, Egyptian hieroglyphs, and Aramaic. Pagan Rome also used the word qorban for their forced contributions, because every conquered society had similar sacrifices. Although it can mean sacrifice, the meaning also includes the idea of 'dedicated to God', sacred, separate, a gift, and even taboo.

In the Old Testament 'korban' is always used in reference to Yahweh rather than the word Elohim. Leviticus. 1:2; Mark 7.11-13; Matthew. 15:5. In Matthew 27:6 it is translated as *treasury*.

Pilate even used those funds for public works including an aqueduct. The funds included meat, grain etc sacrificed for God but most of the offering were consumed by the people, specifically the needy.

The Hebrew word Corban comes from a root word meaning to bring closer. The system of voluntary sacrifice was intended to bring us closer to Him. To emulate Christ. To feed His sheep and teach the golden rule.

Paul repeated King David's warning that government charity would be a snare to trap you. Romans 11:9

But forced welfare contributions (socialism) divide us and separate us from Christ, by encouraging greed and idleness among the less faithful. And nullify the word of God according to Christ himself. And after 100+ years of socialized public education, Christians became a minority in a nation their forefathers established. The lessons of our forefathers were replaced by the lessons of daddy government.

The Egyptian sacred Bull Apis represents the welfare system.



Apis is always depicted with a sun disk between his horns. And Isis, the Egyptian mother goddess is always depicted with a crown of Bull Horns with a sun disk between the horns. As we are about to see, this has a direct connection to 666 worship.

And after the death of Solomon, the people protested to the new King that his father's taxes had become a great burden, and promised to serve him if he reduced their taxes. 1 Kings 12:4. But Rehoboam increased their taxes until the nation rebelled against him.

By the way, the tax, tax, tax of your elected officials is a consequence of electing a king to rule over you. Electing a King is evil in the eyes of the Lord, 1 Samuel 12:17. If you want to have a graven government, the LORD Himself warned you in 1 Samuel 8:5-17 that government will tax, tax and tax until you cannot stand it (and back then it was just 10%). You were warned that your elected king would take, take, take until society collectively wants God back into their life, but God will not answer your prayers (God honored your free-will, you got what you wanted, stop complaining). 1st Samuel 8:18 (NKJV) "And you will cry out in that day because of your king whom you have chosen for yourselves, and the LORD will not hear you in that day."

Repetitive S sounds SSS, in both in Hebrew (Strong's H8337, H8346) and the Greek Sigma and stigma were identified as 666. In addition to being the symbol used for the Egyptian goddess Isis, Solomon's perpetual tax, tax, tax (the take, take, take that Samuel wrote of) could also be relevant to the 666 of Revelation 13. It is identified with the repetitive S sounds SSS.

More than 100 years ago Biblical numerologist E. W. Bullinger wrote about this alliterative SSS sound in the Greek and linked it to the symbol used in ancient Egyptian worship of Isis.

He wrote:

*"666 was the secret symbol of the ancient pagan mysteries connected with the worship of the Devil. It is to day the secret connecting link between those ancient mysteries and their modern revival in Spiritualism, Theosophy, etc. The efforts of the great enemy are now directed towards uniting all into one great whole. The newspapers, worldly and religious, are full of schemes as to such a union. ... and are signs of the coming Apostasy. During this age, "Separation" is God's word for His people, and is the mark of Christ; while "union" and "re-union" is the mark of Antichrist."*

Source: [http://philologos.org/\\_eb-nis/13666.htm#666](http://philologos.org/_eb-nis/13666.htm#666)

And his words were written before the Income Tax Amendment or before Social Security or a Federal Reserve Bank ever existed. Do you agree that income tax & Social Security "unites all into one great whole" by collectivist laws that force each person to produce according to his abilities, in order to benefit the needy and the slothful?

Abraham Lincoln, September 11, 1858:

*"Accustomed to trampling on the rights of others you have lost the genius of your own independence and become the fit subjects of the first cunning tyrant who rises among you."*

[quoted from "The Banditti and the Regulators: Passion and Terrorism in Lincoln's Wild Midwest" By Donna Patten Goldsmith-Day, page 59]

666 could be a census of people. 666 is in the Bible in Ezra 2:13 as the count of the Adonikam tribe from Babylon. Adonikam means *the lord of the enemy*. But some people have concluded that this census count means two-thirds of mankind will be returned from Babylon to Israel's storehouse, like Solomon's salary, as good as gold. Note that Nehemiah 7:18 has the count at 667.

Also related to a census: 2nd Samuel 24:10 *"And David's heart smote him after he had numbered the people. And David said unto the LORD "I have sinned greatly in that I have done... for I have done very foolishly"* And 1st Chronicles 21:1 tells us who requires a census.

### 3.8.4 Other biblical occurrences of 666

The duration of the old Assyrian empire was 666 years before it was conquered by Babylon.

Jerusalem was trodden down by the Roman Empire exactly 666 years from the battle of Actium, BC 31, to the Saracen conquest in AD 636.



### 3.8.5 Subjective ideas about the meaning of 666

Biblical numerologists say that "The 666 marks the culmination of man's opposition to God."

Some people insist that 666 refers to the enemies of God because Isaiah 66:6 and John 6:66 both refer to enemies of God, and that chapter and verse numbers are added by mankind to the Bible (as the number of man).

There were numbers associated with avowed enemies of God identified by Bullinger:

- Nebuchadnezzar, whose "image" which he set up, was 60 cubits high and 6 cubits broad (Dan 3:1), and which was worshipped when the music was heard from 6 specified instruments.
- Goliath, whose height was 6 cubits, and he had 6 pieces of armour; his spear's point weighed 600 shekels of iron (1 Sam 17:4-7).

Biblical numerologists say that 666 is the number meaning "fullness of the works of man", the perfection of imperfection, the culmination of man's independence from God.

Perhaps the works of mankind's covetousness will reach its fullness when he resorts to plundering (taxing) his neighbors' buying and selling, which will require a number to track the transactions.

New King James Version. Some people warn that NKJV may very well be the 666 that we are warned about [www.av1611.org/nkjv.html](http://www.av1611.org/nkjv.html)

Conspiracy theorists point out that each side of the Washington Monument base is 666 inches, was designed as an Egyptian obelisk representing the phallus of Osiris, mimics the Egyptian obelisk that was moved from Egypt to the center of Vatican St. Peter's Square, and was supposedly designed to channel Satanic powers into Washington DC. Is it just a coincidence that both the White House and the Capitol face it, and also the Supreme Court both before and after it's move in 1931, so that the leaders of all branches of government are in line with the spirit of evil, and also inline directly south from the headquarters of Freemasonry? There is symbolism in the design of both the monument and of the layout of Washington DC. Just as ONLY Isis has the opportunity to restore the original phallus of her dead husband, so also does ONLY the 666-SSS worship of Isis have the opportunity to restore the great sun worship Babylon mystery religion as the fullness of the works of man, the culmination of human independence from God, the creation of a Novus Ordo Seclorum Secular New World Order. The culmination of man's opposition to God.

Related symbol: The eye atop the pyramid on the Great Seal is the eye of Horus -- the once blind son of Osiris -- overseeing our endeavors. Egyptian prophecy predicts a resurrected Horus ruling the world.

**Ancient sun worship Babylon Mystery Religions**



Ancient Egyptians venerated Isis as the mother goddess. Only she can restore the faith by restoring her dead husband Osiris, the man god. Their mythology has it that she has already found and restored all his dismembered parts except for one piece. She must now retrieve his dismembered phallus from the fish god.

She is always depicted wearing a Bull Horn crown with a sun disk.

-- A "Queen of Heaven" that Jeremiah warned about in Jeremiah 7:18-19 and Jeremiah 44:17-25



Ancient Mesopotamia Sculpture shows a religious vestment with a fish hat.

Inman, *Ancient Pagan and Modern Christian Symbolism*, page 21

Also: Layard, *Babylon and Nineveh*, page 343



St. Ambrose, by Moretto





Pope Paul VI wearing mitre.

According to Hislop: "The two-horned mitre, which the Pope wears... is the very mitre worn by Dagon, the fish-god of the Philistines and Babylonians..." Hislop, *The Two Babylons* page 215

"H.A. Ironside says that the pope is 'the direct successor of the high priest of the Babylon mysteries and the servant of the fish-god Dagon, for whom he wears... the fisherman's ring.'" Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion*, page 77

Do you know of any religion that today still venerates a mother goddess -- a queen of heaven?

And upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth: and he had two horns like a lamb: and he spake as a dragon.

	
<p>Beast (ruling power) that comes up from the sea (multitudes). With Egyptian obelisk in the center of a sun disk.</p>	<p>Image to the first Beast which had the wound but did live. *</p>
<p>And the smoke of their torment ascends up for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night, whosoever worships the beast...</p>	<p>... and his image, and whosoever receives a print of its name (authority).</p>
<p>ONLY the 666 (SSS) worship of Isis has the opportunity to restore the great sun worship Babylon mystery religion as the fullness of the works of man, the culmination of human independence from God, the creation of a Novus Ordo Seclorum as the Secular New World Order (restoring their old world order). The culmination of man's opposition to God.</p>	

\*Who is able to make war with him? And he deceiveth them that dwell on the earth; saying to them that dwell on the earth that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound and did live.

Bullinger said "The three letters SSS (in Greek ΣΣΣ) were the symbol of Isis". Notice how the sibilant sound of the serpent and the forced welfare payments by Isis and Solomon's take, take, take (the tax, tax, tax that Samuel warned of), and Lucifer's trade routes (the licensed commercial commerce started in Ezekiel 28:15-18's multitude of merchandise, inequity of trafficking etc) all have the same roots. Did you also miss the origins of the Catholic's Sun disk, their Egyptian sun dial, the British banking empire established by the Knight's Templar, and your banking authorization number? How about the British Bar Association's eventual establishment of the American Bar Association, even though the Supreme Court had warned about "The rude and degrading league between the bar and feudal barbarism"? Here are some of the more subjective ideas of 666:

Perhaps this is a test for mankind. After all, Christ has been delegated all authority in heaven and on earth, and He assures us that we will have persecution, and that only those who endure until the end shall be saved (Matthew 24:13 and Mark 13:13 and Matthew 10:22). There is still time to "endure until the end" so that you don't flunk Christ's final exam.

Some people insist that the 666 must be an actual number of (of = created by) the beast and cannot be symbolic. If you think this, then consider this. The new national ID law. Title 42 U.S. Code section 666. Additionally, a sister law, Public Law 104-208, contains information for National ID cards using State driver's licenses. Here it is:

*"666(a) In order to satisfy section 654(20)(A) of this title, each State must have in effect laws requiring the use of the following... "(13) Procedures requiring that the social security number of - "(A) any applicant for a professional license, driver's license, occupational license, or marriage license be recorded on the application..."*

And now the [Real ID](#) diver licenses conform to this National ID law.

Have you ever been prohibited from buying or selling (such as selling your labor) without a banking authorization mark, name or number?

## 4 SECTION 4: CAN SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBERS BE THE MARK?

### 4.1 Introduction

There is overwhelming evidence that the Social Security Card has ALL the characteristics of the Mark of the Beast. I have found nothing in Scripture that rules out a Social Security Card. This essay will give you references so that you can study the issues and make your own decision to accept or reject this apocalyptic mark.

Since most of you won't believe the Bible's authority, I'll cite your laws, regulations and Supreme Court decisions as a higher authority. These are quoted for those of you who venerate man's law above God's law. They are quoted merely to help you understand the consequences of God's laws. The existence of these treaties, court rulings, statutes and regulations are merely proof that throughout history those who forget God's authority are taken into captivity.

This essay has several main themes to show that a Social Security card fits perfectly into Bible prophecy as the mark:

- (1) your government has already been surrendered to multinational authorities, and
- (2) by pledging allegiance as a ward of your worldly lord-master-provider you waived all your rights (including your right to buy and sell – even if they still allow you some unmonitored buying and selling), and
- (3) a Bible believer will not worship this worldly lord,
- (4) the law prohibits involuntary servitude, but voluntary servitude is entirely constitutional,
- (5) you swore an oath to obey a worldly lord.

From a government point of view --

- (1) Welfare, such as Social Security, is available only to someone who has no other means to survive. This gives government the right to step into your life, make you their ward, in order to save your life.
- (2) Rights have responsibilities. The right to take care of yourself has equal responsibilities. Rights are “*susceptible of restriction only to prevent grave and immediate danger to interests which the state may lawfully protect*”. This welfare-for-forwards function (socialism) is not available for those who take care of their own benefits.
- (3) By becoming a ward of government, You waived all of your rights. You even waive your religious rights to “*overriding governmental interest*” according to the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Lee* ([455 U.S. 252](#)). Government can ignore rights to save a life. They call this “*a compelling state interest*” or “*overriding government interest.*” Or “*interests which the state may lawfully protect*”
- (4) By waiving your right to earn wages, wages become taxable. Your take-home living allowance becomes taxable as a gift tax.
- (5) Socialists cannot become citizens. Not under the Articles of Confederation, and not in the United States (the Sauer case, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358)

This essay will give you enough verifiable references for you to prove to yourself that:

- To end the American Revolution, King George III as he authorized the United States to exist in the *Treaty of Paris* in 1783, retained title over the Holy Roman Empire and the United States of America as Arch-Treasurer and Prince Elector. Yes, the Holy Roman Empire is explicitly mentioned as the treaty's authority to allow the U.S. to exist. This is consistent with the Biblical beast powers. **THE UNITED STATES REMAINS WITHIN THE ROMAN EMPIRE.** Freemason Benjamin Franklin signed the treaty with his British title – and taken us along with him. -- hypothecating America to his King, as collateral for the war debt.
- The Secretary of the Treasury issues Social Security Cards. The Secretary of the Treasury is not only an officer of the U.S. Government, he is the Arch-Treasurer of the Holy Roman Empire, just like the treaty says. The National Archives couldn't find a copy of Alexander Hamilton's oath of office, nor did they find it in their index. In Title 31, Code of Federal Regulations, chapter 3 there is a list of all the agencies and authorities subordinate to the Department of the Treasury. The IRS is not on the list. There are two Treasury Departments. The Treasury that has the IRS is foreign. Social Security Cards are issued by the Arch-Treasurer of the Holy Roman Empire, just as the treaty requires. (The U.S. Congress did not create the IRS, they only created the office of “*Commissioner of Internal Revenue*”, which was a one-man office within the Justice Department. The federal regulations that implement the Treasury laws, list the IRS as a “*component*” of the Treasury, but not as one of its 19 “*departmental offices*”) There are other government

documents which prove that the IRS is not an agency of the United States. See <http://notfooledbygovernement.com/essays/social-security-system/>

- In 1933, during the Great Depression, the U.S. government was threatened by financial emergencies that threatened legitimate constitutional duties. When the government declared bankruptcy on March 4, 1933, it was put under the control of a receivership governed by its creditors. The U.S. has a duty to secure the assets and income of the federal government as collateral for its creditors. Federal lands were already mortgaged, so the federal government had to secure more collateral as surety on the country's debts. The only assets remaining were the labor of federal people. The U.S. government now uses the labor of its numbered people as collateral to secure its debts. To secure the pledge to the creditors, the U.S. has a duty to manage and protect these assets, and enforce the obligations to pay.
- **You are living in a time of declared war.** The ongoing emergency, declared by FDR's Executive Orders, ongoing since 1933, declares that Americans are the enemy of their own government.
- Can an innocent civilian be denied his liberty during time of declared war, without a showing of military necessity?
- the U.S. Supreme Court 1866 ruling in Ex parte Milligan determined that military courts cannot be used to try civilians if the civilian courts were available. But sadly, civilian courts are no longer available.
- On March 9, 1933, domestic transactions were removed from the exclusions to the 1917 Trading with the Enemy Act (40 Stat L. 411, subdivision b of section 5). Trading with the Enemy is always illegal. Prior to March 9, 1933 domestic transactions were always legal. After March 9, 1933 all domestic transactions are illegal. We are the enemy of the Roman occupation forces. Again: trading with the enemy is always illegal, but now our domestic trading is with the enemy of your foreign masters. Domestic transactions can now be regulated and punished. I repeat: domestic transactions are illegal. NO MAN MIGHT BUY OR SELL. It is illegal to buy or sell in America unless your transactions are with a surrendered person. Guess who has surrendered.
- The multinational authority that is already pre-authorized by the U.S. Congress to control your buying and selling with "actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken..." is the very same multinational authority that issues Social Security Cards. Title 12 United States Code, section 95(b) gives the Secretary of the Treasury complete power over us. Whatever drastic actions he wants to take to control us are already authorized by law. His actions "heretofore or hereafter taken" have already been pre-approved by congress in 1933. (This all fits nicely with Revelation 13:10 "if anyone is to go into captivity...")
- The Social Security Act has no provision for a trust fund or insurance. In fact, it would be unconstitutional if it had a trust fund according to Davis v. Boston, 89 F.2d. 368. Even the Supreme Court says that there is never a contractual obligation to pay Social Security benefits because no one has a contracted right to benefits (Flemming v. Nestor, 363 U.S. 603).
- It is the official U.S. Government policy that only federal welfare applicants are required to have Social Security Numbers. I've included a chapter citing ALL the court cases requiring people to get SS numbers, but every case is for welfare applicants. And I have another chapter with Constitutional proofs that it cannot be otherwise.
- The Social Security card is entirely voluntary. They cannot issue one without a signed application form. There is no law that requires anyone to apply. Social Security Numbers are ONLY for federal welfare applicants.
- No law has ever required a worker to get a Social Security Number. Neither has a court ever required a worker to get a Social Security Number. According to Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 31.3402(p) "...furnishing Form W-4 shall constitute a request for withholding." Withholding remains entirely voluntary. U.S. Citizens are not subject to withholding according to the recently repealed Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 1.1441-5 entitled "Claiming to be a person not subject to withholding." citizens were not subject to withholding.
- The W-4 withholding form is for IRS tax class 5, gift and estate tax, not for income tax. There is no withholding form for tax class 2, income tax. Since the federal government owns your labor, is your paycheck a grant of a government gift to their enemy wards? Is your take-home pay (the amount they allow you to keep) just a slave's living allowance? Is this living allowance a gift from the federal government and taxed under tax class 5?
- Even the Social Security Administration admits that it is unaware of any law or regulation requiring the Social Security Number to be used for employment purposes.
- It is highly unlikely that you ever qualified for a Social Security Number. Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) allows Social Security Cards to be issued to those who need government funds. The application for a Social Security Card is an application to become a ward of government. You signed a financing statement whereby they agree to finance your benefits in exchange for all your wealth. This can be upheld in any court.
- Once you voluntarily ask to be a ward of your provider, you are chained to their chain of command. While you are in their house, you obey their rules. No matter how abhorrent or repugnant their rules become. The Supreme Court in the Ashwander case said that anyone who takes federal benefits cannot challenge their rules. Caesar has become lord. You cannot obey two masters.

- By asking to be a ward of the government, you've created a host of providers to regulate you, judge you, and be your savior. This is the moral equivalent of having other lords before God Almighty, in violation of the First Commandment.
- By applying for a Social Security Card you are applying for federal benefits. Christians cannot associate with freeloaders according to 2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14. Therefore, a Christian cannot qualify for a Social Security Number.
- You have entrusted your rights, your wealth and at least a third of all future paychecks to your masters (I would use the term "gods") in return for retirement benefits, unemployment benefits, welfare benefits, free schooling and protection of all sorts. All planks of the Communist Manifesto are in place (public schools are the 10<sup>th</sup> plank). You and your neighbors are forced to pour your wealth into the public trough to provide for freeloaders that Christians cannot even associate with (per 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14). If you insist on standing upon Christian beliefs, tax collectors will take your bank accounts and eventually resort to armed force to take your homes. Christ in Luke 22:25 said that benefactors exercise lordship over them. Christ continued in Luke 22:26 (NIV): "But you are not to be like that."
- A right cannot be taxed. Do you have a right to sell your labor? What is the possibility that you receive part of the federal estate from the bankruptcy receivership (taxed as IRS tax class 5), because you have no right to earn income?
- The Enumeration at Birth program was entirely voluntary up until November 1996, when children for the first time were issued numbers at birth over parents' objections. Congress claims that the GATT treaty (GATT, General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade) requires all newborn babies in America to receive a Social Security Card, although the Social Security Administration says this is not so. The GATT treaty is closely associated with a world power that sits upon many waters and for centuries has boldly threatened to vanquish, conquer and subdue us and put us into perpetual slavery.
- A Christian name is a proper noun and has the first letter capitalized, with the remainder of each name in lower case. A proper noun is never spelled with all capitalized letters. You can no longer get a government ID with a Christian name. Could an all capitalized name be the name of [of = created by] the beast mentioned in Revelation 13:17? No one with a proper noun Christian name can get a Government ID. They refuse to issue ID with any proper noun Christian name. You must first renounce your religion, to dishonor your Father and Mother, before you can get credentials to buy or sell.
- Standing atop the U.S. Capitol building, and depicted on the painted ceiling of the rotunda, are Roman gods that are the god's they trust. Are these the gods you trust?
- According to your Constitution's Article VI, Treaties are equal with your Constitution as the supreme law of the land. A 1797 treaty correctly states: "... the government of the United States is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion..."
- Applying for a Social Security number waives your right to earn wages. This is what makes your wages taxable (under section 801 of the Social Security Act). If you had a right to earn wages, the government would protect your right to untaxed wages. (Aside: you cannot agree to slop up at the public trough without agreeing to the strings attached). Since your labor can now be taxed at any rate they want to take, they can use your future wages for collateral on the national debt.
- Anyone who has a social security number has changed his citizenship to a Catholic owned feudal estate (according to the word "cession" in the U.S. Constitution), and has been seized by multinational financial networks as collateral for your national debt.
- Even the Supreme Court (92 US@551) said: "The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."
- Social Security is pure orthodox socialism. Socialists can not believe in the Bible. Socialists cannot become citizens. Never could, still can't. 81 Fed 358. And again: the Social Security Card Application is an application for federal benefits. It cannot be given to someone who is not an applicant for socialist benefits. YOU changed your citizenship.
- US government regulations for assigning Social Security Numbers to newborn children have been established by the United Nations headquarters district.
- You gave up your right to vote in a republic.
- You gave up your right to a trial by jury.
- You will soon get a national ID card. The law already exists.

If you are like most people, you think that my assertions are preposterous nonsense. This essay should open your eyes that have been blinded by the god of this world, and give you enough references so that you can start your own research. Prove these things to yourself, and hold fast to that which is good. God instructs you to discern the difference between truth and deception. Either I'm deceiving you, or the world is deceiving you.

Most Americans have been systematically deceived bit by bit, precept upon precept, that they might fall backward and be snared into accepting a counterfeit government. By accepting small incremental compromises, America was transformed from a Holy nation into a nation that will receive the due penalty for its perversion. All the circumstances involving the mark are circumstances created in small incremental steps by deceived socialists who received not the love of the truth that they might be saved. Throughout the history of mankind, an unchanging God has seen fit to arrange for brutal pagans to take into captivity any nation that obeys a counterfeit authority. God has always used pagan nations to punish his people. In the Bible, brutal nations enslave those who turn their backs on God. Brutal pagan conquerors are instruments of His discipline (Isaiah 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3, Jeremiah 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10, Ezekiel 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15). IS AMERICA GOING TO BE ANY DIFFERENT, OR DID GOD CHANGE?

Many people cannot believe that God would punish them just for getting a silly number. They are under a strong delusion. It is not just a number.

DECEPTION. Will the Mark be something obvious that everyone would know to avoid? Or, can you take the mark of the beast accidentally? There are many hints that the endtimes will be confusing. Revelation 19:20 says the false prophet deceived those that had received the mark of the beast. When asked about the end time, Christ said "take heed that ye be not deceived." Revelation 20:3-4 says that those who receive the mark will be deceived. Revelation 13:18 says that it takes wisdom to understand the number of the beast. Second Timothy 3:13 tells us that evil men and imposters will wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived. Revelation 13:9 "he who has an ear let him hear" proves that you must be receptive to its message. Revelation 17:9 says it takes wisdom to understand the beast's identity. 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:9-10 speaks of deceivableness and delusion in the end times. And in Revelation 13:14 the two horned second beast "deceiveth them that dwell on the earth" to cause them to worship the first beast. Christ warned (in Matthew 24:24) of an endtime false religion that if possible, would deceive the very elect. And there is a false prophet that issues forth spirits who will influence the kings of the earth. And men will turn to cleverly devised fables. YES, YOU CAN ACCIDENTALLY TAKE THE MARK. Falling for deception has grave consequences today, just as it did for Adam and Eve.

HINT: The word *Revelation* means revealing. Revelation 13:17 says that a mark, name or number will be presented as something that authorizes you to buy or sell. This is the ONLY hint we are given (other than noticing that prophecy has become history), as to why someone would take the mark. Shouldn't your authorization number be suspicious?

One premise of my message is that the term 'worship' can include swearing of a perjury oath signature on an application form. If you want to deny fundamental principles, then you can stop reading and continue with your buying and selling. But first, go to any dictionary or encyclopedia and look up "oaths" and you will find that an oath is always a religious ceremony. If you continue to conduct YOUR religious ceremonies to a beast power (on 1040 forms, W4, I9, marriage license applications, etc) then don't write to me saying that you are one of the very elect whose name is written in the book of life.

If you applied to a confederation of Beast powers for permission to buy or sell, then you have created a host of saviors to regulate your life. These graven (man made) idols will demand worship, provide protection, and insure you against God's cataclysms. The word cataclysm means "wash down".

Americans have turned to a false image of god for protection from God's long overdue wash down. This false image of god will protect you if you voluntarily swear a perjury oath on a permanent irrevocable record, violate God's Commandments against worshiping other Lords, take God's authority in vain, offer firstfruits (withholding) to this false image of god, and participate in the theft of socialism. Corban (forced contributions to a welfare system) makes the word of God of no effect.

God's wrath will be poured out undiluted into the cup of His indignation, and the smoke of their torment shall rise forever, whosoever receives the mark. These are harsh words, but they are in your Bible.

But there is still hope. Nowhere does it say that a repentant Beast worshiper will be damned. Only the unpardonable sin must be damned (Matt 12:31 and Mark 3:29). You can still be rescued from the dominion of darkness and brought into the kingdom of the Son in whom you have forgiveness. Colossians 1:13-14. God, not Congress, is the Christian's Lawgiver, James 4:12.

Even the archangel Michael would not rebuke the devil. Jude 9

## 4.2 Social security is not a trust fund nor insurance

Social Security is socialism, not insurance, not a pension, nor a trust fund.

I will explain in the next chapter why your federal government cannot give entitlements to ordinary people. But first, I will convince you that you did not earn any SS benefits, and you did not deposit anything into a trust fund, you did not earn a pension, and you did not pay any insurance premium.

In 1937 the Social Security Act was declared unconstitutional because, according to the federal appellate court, it was using public funds for private purposes, as a "trust fund" and as "insurance" - *Davis v. Boston*, 89 F.2d. 368. The court declared that as an excise tax, which it claimed to be, it could not be imposed on wages since an excise tax may be placed only on articles of consumption. (This case reversed a lower court's ruling in 17 F.Supp. 97, which decided that it was valid as an excise tax). A month later, the Supreme Court, in both *Helvering v. Davis*, 301 U.S. 619 and in *Steward Machine Co. v. Davis*, 301 U.S. 548, both cases decided on the same day, reversed the appellate court on a technicality. Although they did not explain why the appellate court was wrong, they reversed the appellate court.

The Supreme Court in *Helvering v. Davis*:

*"The act cannot be said to constitute a plan for compulsory insurance within the accepted meaning of the term 'insurance'"*

The Supreme Court found that the appellate court was wrong to claim that there is a trust fund or insurance. **THERE IS NO TRUST FUND AND IT IS NOT INSURANCE.** The Supreme Court refused to face the question of whether Social Security was an excise tax. They declared: "We find it unnecessary to make a choice between the arguments, and so leave the question open."

That's right! There is no official determination that Social Security is constitutional. You are about to learn why, but you won't like it.

Also consider that the Hearings before the House of Representatives Committee of Ways and Means Subcommittee entitled "Legal Status of OASI Benefits", November 27, 1953 also confirmed that Social Security was not insurance.

By the way, there are some minor trust funds for federal worker's compensation, black lung disease, vaccine injury and a few others (these are in the Internal Revenue Code in sections 9501 to 9510, not in the Social Security Act). Nowhere is there a trust fund for old age benefits. Nowhere does the Social Security Act have provisions for a trust fund. You can search it all you want, but you won't find it. **THE SOCIAL SECURITY ACT HAS NO PROVISIONS FOR A TRUST FUND.**

As further proof that there is no trust fund or insurance: In 1960 the Supreme Court in *Flemming v. Nestor* determined that Social Security remains constitutional because there has never been a promise to pay benefits. Again I repeat: **SOCIAL SECURITY REMAINS CONSTITUTIONAL BECAUSE THERE IS NO TRUST FUND AND IT IS NOT INSURANCE AND THERE IS NO PROMISE TO PAY BENEFITS.**

Allowing your family to partake of Social Security is a sin (1<sup>st</sup> Timothy 5:8, Mark 7:9-13). The phrase "worse than an infidel" may seem harsh, but it is in your Bible.

Proverbs 1:10-19 do not entrap the innocent to fill your house with plunder.



### 4.3 Welfare part 2: Federal entitlements, such as SS, were never intended for Christians

We already know from 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3: 6-14 that Christians must earn their own bread, and cannot associate with freeloaders. God-the-Father condemned us to earn our own bread by the sweat of our brow in Genesis 3:19.

In the past chapter, I've provided proof that Social Security would be unconstitutional if it was a trust fund. In another chapter I'll prove that it is only available to indigents, but first I'll explain why, so that you will understand that IT CANNOT BE OTHERWISE.

This chapter is intended to prove that government welfare is available only to those few people who actually qualify to convert treasury funds into their own personal use. A government safety net was never intended to be a hammock. The legislators who wrote the Social Security Act were well aware that welfare to individuals is unconstitutional.

Socialism cannot recognize the God-given rights of individuals. Principalities and powers in high places (Ephesians 6:12) had to overcome the U.S. Constitution to allow welfare benefits to trap you. This chapter will prove that welfare cannot be a U.S. government function. It is foreign, but administered locally by an agency of your benefactors. It is available only to those who worship their socialist lords contrary to Luke 22:25. **But ye shall not be so.**

Your Constitution does not allow government to provide ordinary people with entitlements such as welfare or Social Security benefits. It is not a government function to provide entitlements to people. It is not a government function to take care of people. Nor is there any authorized source of funds to take care of people, nor can civil servants receive a paycheck for performing such non-governmental services. And indeed, your Government does not give entitlements to ordinary people. **ORDINARY PEOPLE CANNOT QUALIFY FOR FEDERAL BENEFITS.** Again: it is not a government function to provide entitlements to people.

There is ONLY one way to Constitutionally provide welfare, even Social Security, to individual people. Government has a duty (called by several names "compelling state interest" or "interests which the state may lawfully protect" or "overriding governmental interest") to prevent an individual's death. You can become a ward of government. All you have to do is request that government save your life by applying for relief under any program funded by federal funds. If you applied for federal funded programs under any other circumstance than to save your life, then you falsified a federal application.

When your Constitution was being considered for ratification by the State Senates, some people were suspicious of the "general welfare" clause and tried to claim that these two words could authorize any kind of welfare. The general welfare clause in Article 1, Section 8 of your Constitution reads: "The Congress shall have Power to ... provide for the common Defence and general Welfare of the United States;..." It is an introductory phrase which is followed, after a semi-colon, by a specific list of the 17 things the new government would be authorized to do, such as; to establish post offices, coin money, make treaties, establish standard weights and measures, provide for a Navy, punish pirates, punish counterfeiting, fund a temporary army, declare war, and exercise exclusive jurisdiction over all cases in the future District of Columbia., etc.

To counter those rumors that the general welfare clause in the proposed Constitution would authorize any kind of welfare, James Madison, in Federalist Paper #41, explained its clear intent. He stated that it "is an absurdity" to claim that the General Welfare clause confounds or misleads, because this introductory clause is followed by enumeration of specific particulars that explain and qualify the meaning of phrase "general welfare".

That's right! YOUR CONSTITUTION WAS RATIFIED UNDER THE ASSURANCE THAT IT WOULD NEVER BE INTERPRETED TO PROVIDE WELFARE TO INDIVIDUALS. And it has not. And indeed, to this very day, your U.S. government can not and does not provide entitlements to ordinary Americans. Here is the catch: The ONLY way to qualify for entitlements, such as welfare or Social Security, is to become a ward of a foreign authority. The U.S. government administers the foreign program as their agent. **SOCIAL SECURITY AND WELFARE REMAIN CONSTITUTIONAL BECAUSE ORDINARY AMERICANS CANNOT QUALIFY FOR ENTITLEMENTS.** The Supreme Court says, 92 U.S. 551: "It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

Congress cannot appropriate funds for entitlements to Americans. No one who swears an oath to uphold the Constitution can lawfully spend funds for any entitlement. Government funds can only be spent for legitimate purposes. Examples:

- In 1792 Congressman and future-President James Madison voted against a congressional appropriation to assist war refugees. He said "I cannot undertake to lay my finger on that article of the Constitution which granted a right to Congress of expending, on objects of benevolence, the money of their constituents."
- President Franklin Pierce in 1854 vetoed a health care bill to help the mentally ill. He said "*I cannot find any authority in the Constitution for public charity.... [this] would be contrary to the letter and the spirit of the Constitution and subversive to the whole theory upon which the Union of these States is founded.*"
- In 1897, President Grover Cleveland vetoed an appropriation to provide disaster aid to victims of a Texas drought. His veto stated: "I feel obliged to withhold my approval of the plan to indulge in benevolent and charitable sentiment through the appropriation of public funds... I find no warrant for such an appropriation in the Constitution. The lesson should be constantly enforced that though the people should support the government, the government should not support the people."

AND IT DOESN'T. And indeed, to this very day, YOUR U.S. GOVERNMENT CAN NOT AND DOES NOT PROVIDE ENTITLEMENTS TO ORDINARY PEOPLE.

It has never been a governmental function to help people. In fact, it would be a crime of embezzlement to use government funds for private use. If you expect welfare to provide for you, then you are "*subversive to the whole theory upon which the Union of these States is founded*".

Congressman Davy Crockett's famous "["it is not yours to give" speech](#)" to Congress also made it clear that welfare to individuals is not Constitutional.

Conclusion #1, welfare is prohibited by your constitution. IT HAS NEVER BEEN A GOVERNMENTAL FUNCTION TO HELP PEOPLE

Jesus Christ said in Luke 22:25: "... they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors."

And 2<sup>ND</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14 prohibits Christians from associating with freeloaders.

Genesis 3:19 requires you to earn your bread from the sweat of your face. This principal was still true when Abraham Lincoln gave his second Inaugural address, March 4, 1865:

*"It may seem strange that any men should dare to ask a just God's assistance in wringing their bread from the sweat of other men's faces..."*

He was speaking of slave owners, but the principle is still true today. IF you expect the law to force others to provide for you, then you are of the same mindset as a slave owner.

Those who manage themselves will not accept socialist benefits. Christians will not force others to pay for their retirement. Those who accept benefits do so only by a pledge of allegiance to a worldly master. Perhaps you've chosen the wrong provider.

Another interesting document is President Cleveland's June 21, 1886 veto of military pensions. His veto blasted into politicians because a pension would "urge honest men to become dishonest." And he refused to pass such a "demoralizing lesson". Military pensions were dishonest in 1886. Federal pensions are still dishonest today. If earned pensions are dishonest, how depraved are those who think of unearned welfare as honest?

Conclusion #2, pensions are prohibited by your constitution.

By the way, The Federalist Papers are not just some antiquated editorial opinions, they are, according to the Supreme Court in Cohens v. Virginia (6 Wheat), the exact record of the intent of the Constitution.

Cohens v. Virginia 19 U.S. 264 at 418

*The opinion of the Federalist has always been considered as of great authority. It is a complete commentary on our constitution; and is appealed to by all parties in the questions to which that instrument has given birth. Its intrinsic merit entitles it to this high rank; and the part two of its authors performed in framing the constitution, put it very much in their power to explain the views with which it was framed. These essays having been published while the constitution was before the nation for adoption or rejection, and having been written in answer to objections founded entirely on the extent of its powers, and on its diminution of State sovereignty, are entitled to the more consideration where they frankly avow that the power objected to is given, and defend it.*

Just in case you think a law or an amendment changed the intent of your Constitution, Think again. A congressman cannot swear an oath to support and defend your constitution and then suggest an amendment to change something that he is sworn to perpetuate.

If you don't believe me, perhaps you can believe the U.S. Supreme Court in S. Carolina v. U.S. 199 U.S. 437 (1905): "The Constitution is a written instrument. As such, its meaning does not alter. That which it meant when it was adopted, it means now..."

Busser v. Snyder, 37 ALR 1515:

*"An Old Age Assistance Law is prohibited by a constitutional provision that no appropriation shall be made for charitable or benevolent purposes to any person."*

Conclusion #3, Old Age Assistance is prohibited by your constitution.

And if Old Age Assistance Law is prohibited by a constitutional provision, how likely is it that the Supreme Court will ever declare Social Security or Medicare to be constitutional?

Also in Busser v. Snyder:

*"The term 'poor,' as used by lawmakers, describes those who are destitute and helpless, unable to support themselves, and without means of support."*

I want you to remember the legal definition of the term "poor" from this Busser case. Destitute, helpless, unable to support themselves, without means of support. The U.S. Supreme Court in 1941 in Edwards v. California used very similar language. Later on, I will show that this is entirely consistent with the *poor laws*. If you cannot take care of yourself, others are allowed to take care of you, EVEN IF YOU DON'T LIKE IT. Just as Christ told you in John 21:18. Hint: since Social Security is only available to those who need these foreign benefits, your confession is sufficient to prove that you cannot take care of yourself.

Your constitution has not changed. WELFARE, PENSIONS AND OLD AGE ASSISTANCE REMAIN UNCONSTITUTIONAL. Such things are not within the realm of the United states government, they must remain foreign. The only way to get such assistance is to become a ward of a foreign authority. The U.S. Secretary of the Treasury, as the agent of your foreign masters, will administer the foreign program with "actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken..." pursuant to Title 12 United States Code, section 95(b). The Secretary of the Treasury uses this very same multinational authority to issue Social Security Cards.

Yet social security and welfare remain legal. Here is a history of what is really going on:

The funds for social security, welfare, housing, disaster relief, and now terrorist attack relief, come from the foreign authorities who loan us the national debt. These funds are not appropriated by Congress, but by treaties and trusts administered by the President. In 1933, the U.S. government was threatened by financial emergencies that threatened legitimate constitutional duties. Instead of resorting to direct taxes to collect funds, as was allowed by the Constitution, the government went bankrupt. When the government declared bankruptcy in 1933, it was put under the control of a receivership governed by its creditors. The government provided a (still ongoing) public emergency to administer foreign funds borrowed from the receivership. The U.S. has a duty to secure the assets and income of the federal government as

collateral for its creditors. Federal lands were already mortgaged, so the federal government had to secure more collateral as surety on the country's debts. The only assets remaining were the labor of federal people. The U.S. government now uses the labor of its numbered people to secure its debts. To secure the pledge to the creditors, the U.S. has a duty to manage and protect these assets, keep them healthy, and provide for their welfare and enforce their obligations. More details will be provided later.

Here is an anti-welfare anti-tax quote once attributed to Abraham Lincoln: "You cannot strengthen the weak by weakening the strong. You cannot help small men by tearing down big men. You cannot help the poor by destroying the rich. You cannot lift the wage earner by tearing down the wage payer. You cannot keep out of trouble by spending more than your income. You cannot help men permanently by doing for them what they could and should do themselves."

Although this was once published in the Congressional Record, Lincoln scholars now doubt he ever said it.

US Supreme Court in Railroad Retirement Board v. Alton Railroad Co., 295 U.S. 330:

*"The catalog of means and actions which might be imposed upon an employer in any business, tending to the satisfaction and comfort of his employees, seems endless. Provision for free medical attendance, nursing, clothing, food, housing, and education of children, and a hundred other matters might with equal propriety be proposed as tending to relieve the employee of mental strain and worry. Can it fairly be said that the power of Congress to regulate interstate commerce extends to the prescription of any or all of these things? Is it not apparent that they are really and essentially related solely to the social welfare of the worker, and therefore remote from any regulation of commerce as such? We think the answer is plain. These matters obviously lie outside the orbit of congressional power." [May 6, 1935]*

Read that again. There are no mandated benefits. The welfare of workers cannot be regulated. Benefits for "the social welfare of the worker" cannot be "imposed upon an employer in any business." No Unemployment Insurance, no Worker's Compensation, no minimum wage, no mandatory disability, first-aid, health or safety (OSHA) regulation, no forced Social Security contributions.

Welfare cannot be provided by the U.S. Government. Welfare remains a church and family responsibility. Yet slave owners must provide for their slaves.

If you pray to your foreign provider for benefits, then they are your church. Give allegiance to whom allegiance is due.

Black's Law Dictionary definition of Allegiance:

*"Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives. U.S. v. Kuhn, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp. 407, 414"*

Allegiance is defined by Homeland Security in their [Title 8, Code of Federal Regulations, section 337](#) as a commitment

*"... I will perform work of national importance under civilian direction when required by the law; and that I take this obligation freely without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; so help me God"*

Is this there a limit to this "work of national importance", or is it an oath to perform unlimited hours of perpetual slavery? Involuntary servitude is prohibited by the 13<sup>th</sup> Amendment. Voluntary servitude is entirely Constitutional.

If you have absolute allegiance to a foreign benefactor, then you must obey their rules.

This is the only Constitutional way to qualify for welfare. But you must give up your rights when you give up your responsibility to take care of yourself. Since rights only come with responsibilities, you give up all your rights and are forevermore a ward of the system.

But this welfare-forwards function will waive all your rights. Rights are "susceptible of restriction only to prevent grave and immediate danger to interests which the state may lawfully protect". You even waive your religious rights to "overriding governmental interest" according to the Supreme Court in U.S. v. Lee ([455 U.S. 252](#)) which ruled that Amish

who have obtained SSNs have lost their religious liberty to “overriding governmental interest”. Note that the same religious liberties are accorded to Amish who are exempt from SSNs. Amish objectors are exempt from SSNs per section 1402(g) of the Internal Revenue Code (mentioned in the Legislative History of Public Law 99-514 section 4)

If you accepted welfare (or even a Social Security Number) under any other circumstance other than grave and immediate danger of death, then you were fraudulently induced to participate in unlawful means to raid the Treasury.

Welfare applicants lose their citizenship. See my chapter on citizenship.

A pauper is one who is supported by public funds. Paupers cannot have rights. The Articles of Confederation excluded paupers from ANY rights of citizenship. Article IV of the Articles of Confederation requires

*“... the free inhabitants of each of these States, paupers, vagabonds, and fugitives from justice excepted, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several States;...”*

Social Security numbers can only be assigned to aliens (after 1972) or to those who register to accept federal benefits (according to section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) of the Social Security Act). Yet government benefits are only available to those who are absolutely destitute and without the means to survive.

As you can see, Social Security Cards are only available to those few select people who actually have the authority to convert federal funds to private use, which can deplete the federal treasury.

That’s right! If you apply for a Social Security Number, it is either embezzlement of federal funds or it is a confession that you cannot take care of yourself. If you cannot take care of yourself, how could you expect the rights of citizenship? John Locke’s [Second Treatise of Government](#) Chapter 15 asks the question “For what compact can be made with a man that is not master of his own life?” Once you get a number by signing up for socialist benefits financed in whole or in part from Federal funds, what happens next? You have received unjust enrichment at the expense of others thereby creating a constructive contract. The Social Security Act Title VIII section 801 requires you to pay Social Security AND OTHER TAXES. This is also repeated word-for-word in Section 3101(a) of the Internal Revenue Code:

*“In addition to other taxes, there is hereby imposed on the income of every individual a tax equal to the following percentages of the wages...”*

A right cannot be taxed. **You waived your right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable.** Those who are numbered do not have a right to sell their labor. They have no right to their “own” labor. Their labor belongs to their master. Your take-home living allowance is taxable as a gift.

According to the Supreme Court in [Ashwander v. TVA](#) anyone who "avails himself of a benefit" cannot then question the Constitutionality of the law that he benefited from. The Supreme Court WILL NOT consider the case.

Others will represent you. This maxim of law is known as *tacit procuration* This basic law extends much deeper than welfare. You no longer have a right to contract. You are incompetent to represent yourself, and must be represented by a competent attorney. You are allowed to conduct business only through a government created strawman. You are the collateral for the fines he must pay. But you already know that. Proverbs 6:1-11, Proverbs 11:15, Proverbs 17:18, Proverbs 22:26.

Welfare is unconstitutional except for the truly destitute. You received unjust enrichment at the expense of others, and thereby become liable for your public liability. Just like any other deadbeat who has forfeited his right to whatever is seized. You must now pay your fair share. We will learn more about unjust enrichment when we discuss constructive contracts.

You no longer have a right to a bank account. Yes indeed, you cannot buy without a mark of the beast. If you don't want to believe me, will you believe your bank? Take a check from your own checkbook. Look at the line under the signature space. Magnify the line 30 times and read the text. Then confess that you are not a principal owner of a bank account. It is not your account, you are merely signing as an agent of the real owner. You have somehow become the authorized representative of the real owner. NO ONE CAN BUY without a mark of the beast. You can deal with the beast only as a

representative of an abstraction that it created. It is no wonder the IRS can seize their own account without a judicial determination.

Revelation 13:4 asks the questions: Who is like the beast? And who can make war with the beast? Are you beginning to sense that you are subordinate to, not like, the beast? Are you beginning to sense that you have no authority to make war (confront, challenge) the beast in court?

According to Black's Law Dictionary there is a legal maxim that Protection Draws Subjection:

*"The protection of an individual by government is on condition of his submission to the laws, and such submission on the other hand entitles the individual to the protection of the government."*

**Protectio trahit subjectionem, et subjectio protectionem. Protection draws with it subjection, and subjection protection. 7 Coke, 5a. The protection of an individual by government is on condition of his submission to the laws, and such submission on the other hand entitles the individual to the protection of the government. Broom, Max. 78.**

This has always been so. As Blackstone eloquently stated in the introduction to his commentaries on the law, the very essence of laws that require us to obey our creator, also "oblige the inferior to take the will of him on whom he depends..."

That's right! If you cannot agree to their perverted, licentious laws then don't take their protection. You qualify for benefits by agreeing that they are your protector/master/lord/benefactor. If you take their benefits, you must submit whether you like it or not. No matter how evil they become. No matter how much they demand. If you take their benefits, they make your rules. They determine what is right and what is wrong. Your moral values are now dictated from your benefactor. This maxim has always existed. Slaves submit to their lords. Slaves must be provided for. Children must submit to parents.

Conclusion:

Social Security CANNOT BE a program of the United States government.

There are federal statutes (which are required by treaty and by the bankruptcy receivership) that administer Social Security in the United States. Social Security cannot be a United States program. It must remain foreign.

You have already been sold to a world government. Your SS number is much more than the Number of your Name. Read the last item on the manifest in Revelation 18:13. Your soul has been sold.

Title 42 U.S.C. §433(a):

*"The President is authorized... to enter into agreements establishing totalization arrangements between the Social Security System established by this subchapter and the social security system of any foreign country"*

Links:

It's Time to END SOCIAL SECURITY by George O'Brien [www.isil.org](http://www.isil.org)

#### 4.4 Court cases forcing people to get an SSN over their objections

In the entire history of Social Security Numbers there have only been six people who have been told by a court to get a number. Note that ALL OF THE CASES INVOLVE PEOPLE WHO WERE PARTAKING IN WELFARE.

- Bowen v. Roy 106 S.Ct. 2147, 476 U.S. 693 (the only Supreme Court case)
- Callahan v. Woods, 479 F.Supp. 621 (reversed by 658 F.2d. 679)
- Chambers v. Klein, 419 F.Supp. 569
- McElrath v. Califano 615 F.2d. 434
- Doe v. Sharp, 491 F.Supp. 346
- Green v. Philbrook 576 F 440, (reversing 427 F.Supp. 834)

There is NO other federal court case requiring someone to get a Social Security Number. No one in authority has told you to get a social security number. Except for these six welfare recipients, there are NO other federal cases requiring someone to get a number. Not to work, not to pay a tax, not to open a bank account, not to drive, not to vote, not to cash a check. [I've been told, but could not confirm, that there was a Florida case where someone was told by a local court to get a SSN to register a boat]. NO COURT HAS EVER REQUIRED A WORKER TO GET A SSN, not even a federal worker. But there are plenty of cases where workers who already have a number are required to give it. Once you are in their snare, you agreed to the permanent slavery.

In fact, you were told in the Legislative History of the Privacy Act section 201(h) that employers cannot “make as a condition of employment the securing by any individual of any information which may be obtained through the exercise of any right secured under the provisions of section 201.”

Again, throughout history, only socialists have been required to have these socialist identifiers. There is no government requirement for ordinary people to get a number. ONLY the beast (the red beast of socialism, Revelation 17:3) requires ordinary people to get a number.

In one case, the court concluded that someone who was receiving welfare didn't have to number their children because of their belief that the Social Security Number was the mark of the beast. It would be worthwhile to read the case Stevens v. Berger 428 F.Supp. 896. Also related to SSNs for children, read the third Callahan case 736 F.2d. 1269.

Proverbs 21:6 "The getting of treasures by a lying tongue is a vanity tossed to and fro of them that seek death."
---

## 4.5 Who can qualify for a Social Security Card?

You will find conflicting answers to this important question.

The official U.S. Government answer is that only welfare applicants may get a Social Security Number.

Since welfare remains unconstitutional within the United States, the only welfare available is foreign welfare. Your federal government administers this foreign program. Social Security came into existence in 1936, three years after the federal government went bankrupt. The foreign bankruptcy receivership offers this welfare plan for destitute people who volunteer to become their permanent wards. The original intent was to get the ownership of American's ("slave") labor to put up as collateral for the national debt. Those who survived the Great Depression were grateful for the indentured servitude that allowed them to survive. Are you?

If you persist in your inquiry, you will get many answers. I've collected many different pamphlets and IRS publications and responses to letters. These are all unofficial. In my chapter on your right to earn wages you will learn what the courts think about unofficial answers:

- "... One who relies on a legal interpretation by a government official assumes the risk that it is in error... it has also been held or said that `the government could scarcely function if it were bound by its employees unauthorized representations'"
- "Informal publications of IRS all the way up to revenue rulings are simply guides to taxpayers and taxpayer relies on them at his peril."
- "... Anyone entering into an arrangement with the government takes the risk of having accurately ascertained that he who purports to act for the government stays within the bounds of his authority ... and this is so even though, as here, the agent himself may have been unaware of the limitations upon his authority."

The official answers are from the law, regulations, court cases and official notices.

**COURT CASES.** In the last chapter you were introduced to the six court cases that forced people to get Social Security Numbers. All six were welfare recipients.

**THE LAW.** There is no government requirement for anyone to apply for a number. SSNs cannot be assigned unless you first apply for socialist benefits. Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) of the Social Security Act allows the Social Security Administration to assign numbers

*"to any individual who is an applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part from Federal funds including any child on whose behalf such benefits are claimed by another person..."*

and to aliens (after 1972).

Read that again. Do you meet the eligibility requirements for a Social Security Number? It is available ONLY to those who claim government funds (Later I will prove that it is not even your government). Only those who need benefits can receive a Social Security Number. Social Security is not a trust fund, nor insurance, nor a pension; it's a handout. A Christian cannot associate with freeloaders per 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14. If you ask them to take care of you, then you are asking to become a ward of a foreign authority. **TO GET BENEFITS, YOU MUST BECOME A WARD OF A FOREIGN AUTHORITY.** For constitutional reasons, they can give welfare ONLY to these wards. James Madison said it "is an absurdity" to state that welfare can be given to ordinary people. A pauper is someone who is supported at public expense. As you've seen from the Articles of Confederation, a pauper cannot have rights. Never did, never will. You, like Esau, gave up your birthright for a future bowl of stew.

The only other categories of people who can be given a SSN are aliens applying for federal citizenship, and students enrolling in federally funded schools. [even though the Supreme Court in a 1982 case Plyler v. Doe, 457 U.S. 202, says that schools cannot require SSNs from students].



A pauper is one who is supported by public funds. The Articles of Confederation excluded paupers from ANY rights of citizenship. Article IV of the Articles of Confederation requires "... the free inhabitants of each of these States, paupers, vagabonds, and fugitives from justice excepted, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several States;..."

Social Security numbers can only be assigned to those who register to accept federal benefits. If you cannot take care of yourself, how could you expect the rights of citizenship? John Locke's Second Treatise of Government Chapter 15 asks the question "For what compact can be made with a man that is not master of his own life?"

#### THE REGULATION.

Title 20, Code of Federal Regulations, section 422.103:

*"(b)Applying for a number. (1) Form SS-5. An individual needing a social security number may apply for one by filing a signed Form SS-5 'Application for a Social Security Card', at any social security office and submitting the required evidence.....*

*(2) Request on birth registration document. Where a parent has requested a social security number for a newborn child as part of an official birth registration process....*

That's right. Individuals needing a number. Voluntarily. The only way they can tell if an indigent is needy enough to sell all his rights for a future bowl of stew is to wait until he asks. Notice that the term "needing" is not the term "wanting." This is entirely consistent with the poor laws.

#### OFFICIAL NOTICES

*The Paperwork Reduction Act (Public Law 96-511) requires all federal forms that request information from the public to display an OMB number assigned by the Office of Management and Budget. [Title 44, U.S. Code, section 3506\(c\)\(1\)](#), prohibits government agencies from collecting any information unless the form displays an OMB number. To get an OMB number for the form Application for a Social Security Card, Form SS-5, the agency had to file a form SF83 with the OMB. I have a copy of this SF83. The Standard Form 83's section 24 is entitled "Respondents obligation to comply" and then has three boxes to check: "Mandatory", "Voluntary", or "Required to obtain or retain a benefit". Their SF83 confirms that the SS-5 Application for a SSN is required to obtain a benefit and is not mandatory. And the form SS-5's "Legal authority for information collection" is Section 205(c)(2)(B) of the Social Security Act, which I've quoted above.*

The Privacy Act (Title 5, U.S. Code, section 552a) in subsection (e)(3) requires all federal forms that solicit information from the public to state what law authorizes the solicitation and whether or not disclosure of the information is mandatory or voluntary. The Application for a Social Security Card, Form SS-5, has a Privacy Act statement. It states in part: "You do not have to give us these facts, but without them we cannot issue you a Social Security number or card. Without a number, you could lose Social Security benefits in the future..."

The laws, regulations and court decisions and official notices are entirely consistent with each other. They conform with history and with the constitution and with the truth. And they are entirely consistent with the poor laws.

People v. Shirley, 92 A.L.R.2d. 413, indexed under the topic *Poor Laws*:

*"The provisions of the welfare code are to be administered fairly, with due consideration not only for the needs of applicants but also for the safeguarding of public funds; if children are not in need, they are not eligible for assistance regardless of who is paying for their support."*

Taxpayers don't need a Social Security Number. Those who file a Form 1040 for the first time and don't put down a TIN will be assigned a TIN by the IRS. But beware, the payment of a tax not owed creates an obligation to pay future taxes.

I have yet to confirm that religious objectors who work for the government can get a temporary ITIN instead of an SSN by filling out a W7 form. On the other hand, ITINs/IRSNs apply to Amish objectors per section 1402(g) of the Internal

Revenue Code (mentioned in the Legislative History of Public Law 99-514 section 4), and I've also read Revenue Ruling 85-61 which makes it seem that only alien limited partners qualify for these alternate numbers.

For more history on the Amish fight against Social Security Numbers, read [www.amishnews.com/amisharticles/amishss.htm](http://www.amishnews.com/amisharticles/amishss.htm). Relying upon others for support during old age is proof that you do not trust God (Mark 11:24, Philippians 4:19, etc).

The instructions for ITIN application (Form W7) state that the form is only for those who do not qualify for a Social Security Number.

Here are some notes that lead me to believe that Legal Notice has to be served, by a process server, on anyone required to get a Social Security Number.

US Supreme Court in U.S. v. Batchelder, 442 U.S. 114: "Due process requires that a person be given fair notice as to what constitutes illegal conduct, so that he may conform his conduct to the requirements of the law."

Service of notice requiring TINs is acknowledged by 26 CFR §422.6109-1(h):

*"... Nothing contained in the regulations under section 6109 shall limit the authority of the Internal Revenue Service to obtain taxpayer identifying numbers required before or after the effective date of this paragraph after notice is served upon the taxpayer pursuant to section 6001."*

Now take a closer look at this section 6001 of the Internal Revenue Code. It uses the deceptive terminology "may require" and "or by regulations":

*"... Whenever in the judgment of the Secretary it is necessary, he may require any person, by notice served upon such person or by regulations, to make such returns, render such statements, or keep such records, as the Secretary deems sufficient to show whether or not such person is liable for tax under this title."*

Concerning the "or by regulations" terminology: This is one of the places where the word "or" really means "and". If you are going to claim that some people are served notice in person, while others are served notice via the publication of regulations, then I demand the equal protection of the law, equal with those who have been served notice in person. [In statutes the word `or' can mean `and' unless preceded by a comma. Also see my chapter on the government definition of the word "must" – where I explain that `must' can mean `may'].

Concerning the "may require" terminology – Here is proof that "may require" really means "must require". Note how "may" is defined in 34 AmJur, Mandamus, section 72:

*"Frequently, however, the word 'may' or the like as used in statutes relating to the duty of public officers is construed as mandatory, and not merely permissive, Anno: 6 L.R.A. 162; 12 L.R.A.(NS) 340, See STATUTES (also 25 RCL p. 750), and when such is the case, mandamus may issue to compel the officer to perform the duty so imposed. Rock Island County v. United States, 4 Wall. (US) 435, 18 LEd,419; Brokaw v. Highway Comrs., 130 Ill. 482, 22 N.E. 596, 6 L.R.A. 161."*

US Supreme Court in Mahler v. Eby 264 U.S. 32:

*"It is essential that where an executive is exercising delegated legislative power he should substantially comply with all the statutory requirements in its exercise"*

Isaiah 50:1 (KJV) "...Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves...."

## 4.6 Qualifying for a Social Security Card

In my dozens of letters to the IRS, SSA, banks, Justice Department, tax experts, Department of the Treasury, State Department, OMB, GAO, lawyers, and congressmen, I never got a direct answer about the following laws and fundamental principals. Try getting your own non-answers. If you persist in your inquiry, you will arrive at the truth by noticing what questions they won't answer. [Tip: don't bother talking to self-called Christian lawyers].

1. Applying for a Social Security Number is entirely voluntary and is in no way mandatory, or required or coerced. There is no law that requires you to get a number. There is no penalty for not getting a number.

2. Compelled signatures are invalid. If an application form was mandatory, or required, or coerced, then it would be invalid and inadmissible in court. That's right! **YOUR SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER WOULD BE INVALID IF YOU WERE REQUIRED TO GET ONE.**

Forced contracts are void. Compelled signatures are inadmissible in court. But deception by the master deceiver or his disciples is allowed. It is your duty to know the truth and avoid deception. The Fifth Amendment prohibits the government from forcing you to sign confessions. Even on income tax forms, as in the Garner case, which I'll quote later.

3. If any law requires you to have a number, they would assign you one without your signature, and over your objections. But there is no law that requires you to have a number. Without your voluntary signature, they do not have a right to kidnap you and force you into their jurisdiction. The GATT treaty changed this, in November 1996 they started numbering their collateral.

4. You've exchanged real rights for civil rights.

You cannot be punished for failing to get a number that you are never required to get. No rights can be denied for failing to get a number. The government can not interfere with your natural rights by requiring a signature. Not your right to contract, not your right to earn wages, nor any other natural right. By the term `natural rights' I do not mean entitlements such as welfare or social security payments. Welfare and social security (and bankruptcy and divorce and food stamps and abortion and interest and public education) are privileges of being within the government; they are not natural rights. They are NOT available to regular people. Government socialist benefits are doled ONLY to the wards of the government. These are privileges, not rights, even though they are often called "Civil Rights".

Civil Rights are the opposite of natural rights. Real rights come from God and are inalienable. Real rights are the ones that existed before government existed. The people who created your government hired the civil servants to help them protect their rights. Rights do not come from government. Here is the distinction:

- Real rights cannot be regulated.
- Civil rights must be regulated. According to Nickell v. Rosenfield (1927), 255 P. 760: "A `civil right' is a right given and protected by law, and a person's enjoyment thereof is regulated entirely by law that creates it."

As further proof that rights cannot be denied, here is an interesting court case to study. The Equal Employment Opportunity Commission v. Information Systems Consulting. Civil Action CA3-920169-T in the U.S. District Court North District of Texas, Dallas Division, filed 1/27/92. The employer, Information Systems Consulting, had hired Bruce Hansen, a Christian Fundamentalist who did not have a social security number, then fired him for refusing to get a social security number. The EEOC charged the employer with discrimination claiming that the SSN is the Mark of the Beast. The employer settled out of court.

5. You waive ALL your rights by volunteering for a number.

There are less than a dozen federal court cases where someone was required to get a SS number. ALL of the cases involve people who are applying for welfare benefits, yet had religious objections to getting a number. I could not find any court cases where an average citizen was required to get a number. Ever since SSNs have existed, no religious objector, other than welfare applicants, was ever required by a court to get a number. Not to get a job or open a bank account or pay a tax. **ONLY WELFARE APPLICANTS ARE REQUIRED TO HAVE A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER.**

Throughout history, those who voluntarily become slaves in order to care for their families, are permanently marked and serve their master FOREVER (see Exodus 21:6).

You have a natural right to sign contracts. Like Esau, you can, with an oath, sell your birthright for a bowl of stew (Genesis 25:33). At least he ate what he bought; you sold your birthright for the mere promise of a future bowl of stew. (By the way, God hated Esau according to Romans 9:13 and Malachi 1:3)

By signing a contract to apply for a future bowl of stew, you have enlisted in your federal government. You've accepted a dual citizenship, both state and federal (acknowledged by the U.S. Supreme Court in the 1875 Cruikshank case and now allowed to be a presumption that any court can make unless challenged, by the 1938 case of Erie RR v. Tompkins, 304 U.S. 64). In Chapter 4.9, on the government definition of citizenship, I prove that you do not have access to the first eight amendment in the Bill of Rights nor a right to a trial by jury.

In my chapter on your right to earn wages, I prove that BY GETTING A NUMBER, YOU WAIVE YOUR RIGHT TO EARN WAGES, THEREBY MAKING YOUR WAGES TAXABLE as a gift tax (IRS tax class 5, not income tax which is IRS tax class 2).

6. Only those who have a number must disclose it whenever disclosure is required by law. Only wards of the government are required to have proof that they are wards of the government.

7. No one can disclose a number that does not exist. No one is asked to disclose a number that does not exist. No one is required to go out and get a number just because a law asks those who have a number to disclose it. Example: there is a law that says employers must ask for employee's green cards. This doesn't mean you have to go get one.

8. Some employers must ask for a number, but No employer is required to obtain a number (except perhaps civil service jobs, as I explained earlier). Unless you consent, employers cannot seize part of your pay without a court order. In fact, if you are a non-resident of Washington DC, an employer has to request authority to act as a withholding agent (per section 3504-A of the Internal Revenue Code) and forward his request with a Form 2678. If you sue an employer who takes what is yours, the IRS will not back them up in court. (And, by the way, your labor is your property. Your Constitution prohibits an unapportioned tax on your property. Also see my chapter on your right to earn wages).

9. Banks will ask for a number for interest bearing accounts. You can still get a non-interest checking account without a number, but you still need government ID. But beware, you still grant the government the power of attorney by getting a bank account, even without a number.

10. Banks and employers are required to ask for a number, just on the chance that the applicant might be a ward of the Treasury Department. A numbered person does not have a right to partake of contracts with banks or employers. He has waived his right to earn wages. The ward has a government granted privilege, not a right, to participate in contracts for wages or in contracts for interest (more about interest laws later). These are taxable government privileges, not rights, and the government requires the disclosure of the SSN so that the government granted privilege can be taxed. This is a legitimate indirect excise tax that need not be subject to apportionment.

11. The Social Security Administration became an independent agency on March 31, 1995. It now involves the UN. More about this, later.

Be cautious when any law says that you must fill out a form, or that you must get a number. The term `Must' often means `may'. (details are in another chapter).

#### 4.7 Consequences of getting a Social Security Card

Your federal government is very vague in answering most questions about Social Security Numbers. If you persist in your inquiry, which will take dozens of letters, the Government will openly and honestly tell you a few certain facts about Social Security numbers:

1. It is a permanent irrevocable status. Some bureaucrats claim that it is a contract, while the higher level authorities in the Social Security Administration say it is not a contract, but a *status*. Go to any law library and look up `status' in any law dictionary. You cannot change your own status once you've signed up, anymore than one who enlists in the military can change his own status.
2. It is up to the bank, employer, school or stockbroker to determine whether or not they will discriminate against someone who fails to give a number. The government has no policy on this.
3. Many state driver's license applications request a SSN. Strange language in section 205(c)(2)(C)(i) of the Social Security Act allows federal states "... for the purpose of establishing the identification of individuals affected by such law, and may require any individual who is or appears to be so affected to furnish to such State...or agency thereof having administrative responsibility for the law involved..." his SSN. Yet, The Social Security Administration before 1996 would not issue Social Security Numbers for the purpose of getting a driver's license. If you applied for a Social Security Number and stated that your purpose for applying is to qualify for a driver license, you would get a denial notice form SSA-L676. If you want to do more research, try to find out how a state driver's license became a federal benefit in 1996. There is another reason to believe that SSNs are not required for state driver licenses.

SSA Publication No. 05-10002 states:

*"You should not use your Social Security card as an identification card. However, several other government agencies are permitted by law to use Social Security numbers, but there is no law either authorizing or prohibiting their use."*

Also read Leahy v. District of Columbia, 833 F.2d. 1046 where Leahy refused, based on religious objections, to give his SSN on an application for a driver's license. Religious objections are powerful, because the first amendment acknowledges the free exercise of religion. In the Leahy case, as in others, only government "...interests of the highest order can overcome legitimate claims to the free exercise of religion." The Leahy decision was by a famous judge. Ruth Bader Ginsburg

4. According to a federal report to a Congressional Subcommittee on Social Security some people do not have Social Security Numbers. You can order one free copy of this report from U.S. General Accounting Office, P.O. Box 37050, Washington, DC 20013. The title of the report is "*SOCIAL SECURITY, Government and Commercial Use of the Social Security Number Is Widespread*" Report GAO/HEHS-99-28. On the bottom of page 3 you will read:

*"Some individuals do not have an SSN either because they do not want one or because they are ineligible to receive one."*

Later, the same paragraph continues:

*"... the only noncitizens to whom SSA has issued SSNs have been those with one of two valid nonwork reasons for needing a number. That is, the federal government requires applicants for benefits or services under certain federal programs to have an SSN, and states require applicants for driver's licenses to have SSNs."*

Now re-read this cleverly written TRUE statement, while keeping in mind that SSNs have never been required for work purposes either, not even for citizens, and the law requiring SSNs for driver licenses refers only to federal states.

5. According to the IRS, an ITIN (Individual Taxpayer Identification Number) is available to those who cannot qualify for a Social Security Number. The application form for the ITIN (Form W-7) in the general instructions, says than anyone

eligible for employment in the U.S. is eligible for a Social Security Number and cannot apply for an ITIN. This seems to confirm that Employment really is a federal benefit, rather than a private contract. Employment, as that term is used in the tax code, is a taxable government granted privilege and is available only to those who waive their right to sell their labor.

6. Once you get a number by signing up for socialist benefits financed in whole or in part from Federal funds, the Social Security Act Title VIII section 801 requires you to pay Social Security AND OTHER TAXES. This is also word-for-word in Section 3101(a) of the Internal Revenue Code:

*“In addition to other taxes, there is hereby imposed on the income of every individual a tax equal to the following percentages of the wages...”*

You agreed to partake of the communal fund in exchange for contributions to the communal fund. You agreed to contribute whatever they ask. This allows congress to tax you at any rate they want to. They can increase your tax to 100%, without a constitutional amendment, by a simple majority vote. You no longer have a right to your wages, you only have a government granted privilege of keeping what they allow you to keep. The Buck Act authorizes taxation of anyone with a Social Security Number, even though this is not referenced within the Internal Revenue Code either. More about this, later.

Aside: This is what you agreed to. Courts cannot impair the obligation of your permanent irrevocable contract. It doesn't matter that the 16<sup>th</sup> Amendment wasn't properly ratified. It doesn't matter that the tax laws would only apply to federal employees in federal territories. It doesn't matter that wages would otherwise not be taxable. There are many people who believe that the tax laws have not made them liable for an income tax.

Since you volunteered to pay whatever they will demand, they can use your future labor as collateral for the national debt.

7. Those who already have a SSN must disclose it on forms or suffer a fine. Those who do not have a SSN can file a 1040 form without a number, and the IRS will assign a Taxpayer ID number. These numbers are assigned by the IRS Entity Section in Philadelphia, and are not Social Security Numbers, and begin with the number 9.

8. In the Legislative History of Public Law 99-514, which is available in your local law library, in the discussion of Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(e), shows that congress never required religious objectors to begin using Social Security Numbers. Also see Revenue Ruling 85-61, 1985-1 CB355.

9. I have copies of letters from Social Security Officials which state:

- “If you do not wish your employer to use your SSN, you should request your employer to enter the phrase “religious objector” in the space provided for a SSN when your employer reports your wages and taxes.” (dated June 6, 1981, signed by the Commissioner himself)
- “you should request present and future employers to enter the phrase, “religious objector” in the space provided for a social security number when they report your wages and taxes. You may show this letter to your employer(s) to show that your request is valid.” (Aug 23 1979)
- By 1986 this advice was changed to “Workers who do not wish to use their Social Security numbers for religious or other reasons should get in touch with the Internal Revenue Service office in their area to explain their position and receive advice on how to proceed. We do not have the authority to require an employer to provide or deny employment or services to anyone who refuses to disclose his or her number. This is a matter between the individual and the employer.”
- “To our knowledge, there is no law which states employment can be denied if the employee does not have a Social Security number.” (dated Sep 23 1988)
- “There is no Social Security law requiring a U.S. citizen to have an SSN to live or work in the United States.” (dated Jul 19, 1993)
- “We are not aware of any Federal law or regulation that requires an employer to obtain a Social Security number before hiring an employee or for employment purposes.” (dated April 23, 1997)
- “Yes, there is no law requiring an individual to have a Social Security number to work.” (Jan 09, 2001)

10. As of September 1999, in Sutton v. Providence, U.S. Court of Appeals, Ninth Circuit, Case Number 99-55050, the Defendant is required by law to obtain Plaintiff's social security number. The employer is not subject to discrimination laws IF accommodating an employee's religious beliefs would require the employer to violate federal

law. I spotted many errors in the court decision, and I hope he appeals to the Supreme Court. But a precedent has been set. It seems straightforward to me that THE BEAST'S INTENT IS TO CAUSE ALL TO RECEIVE A MARK at least to sell labor. (or at least to sell the government's labor)

11. The patent number for the social security card (patent number 1,904,650) refers to a carefully worded technique involving a manifold web with permanently retained record and transfer strips. WHY WOULD SIMPLE CARDS NEED THEIR OWN PATENT? If you were a suspicious skeptic, you could find legal definitions:
  - manifold = having many sides or phases, multiplied
  - web = a tangle, as the web of life; a trap, as a spider's web; to cover with a web; entangle
  - record = a written account of an instrument, drawn up under authority of law, by a proper officer, and designed to remain as a memorial or permanent evidence of the matters to which it relates
  - transfer = removal from one place to another, conveyance of property from one owner to another; to convey to another as property; an act of the law by which title to property is conveyed from one person to another
 The patent class is 462/2, which also includes the "federal drug testing custody and control form (CCF)"
  
12. The Social Security Card remains property of the government. Every person with a card is the official custodian of this government property. Every custodian of a card is under strict responsibility to only use their card and number for legitimate governmental functions for which it was issued. It was issued for welfare purposes only.
  - You cannot apply for a card to get congressionally appropriated funds unless you qualify for the poorhouse. But once you apply, you waive your right to earn wages or own property. Congratulations, you now qualify for the poorhouse and you are now -- according to the original law of the land -- obliged to take the will of him on whom you depend.
  - On the other hand, you cannot use the card/number to fraudulently force others (such as employers) to donate extortion money to the treasury by falsifying a W-4 form. The W-4 is only for gift and estate tax. If you sign a W-4 form you are certifying, under the perjury laws, on behalf of your duty to only use the card/number legitimately, that you are subject to a gift and estate tax.
  - It is illegal to take private property (such as part of your wages, or your employer's profits) and convert it to public use without just compensation. Violating the fifth amendment's taking clause. Since you signed under penalty of perjury, they must take you at your word and seize the extortion money.
  - And the reverse is also true. It is your responsibility to ensure nothing private ever benefits from public functions or funds.
  
13. Once you get a Social Security Card, you cannot claim that you don't want to participate in socialism. You cannot say you don't want SS benefits in the future, because you already applied. Applying for a SSN is a request for benefits. SS cards [can only be issued to those who apply for federal benefits](#):

*"an applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part from Federal funds including any child on whose behalf such benefits are claimed by another person"*

Deductions for the Roman version of forced welfare contributions -- once called Corban, now called FICA -- will be taken from your paycheck. You cannot claim you don't want socialism because Social Security Cards are ONLY issued to those who apply for federal benefits.

#### **4.8 You waived your right to earn wages.**

Do you have a right to contract (sell) your labor without first contracting for a Social Security Number? Or is it the other way around? Did you waive your right to earn wages by getting a number, thereby making your wages taxable?

The Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), requires non-alien applicants for Social Security Numbers to be an "applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds" which is forbidden in the Christian Bible by 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14 ? (not to mention covetousness and falsifying a document, and Luke 22:25 lordship of socialist benefactors)

We are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights. One of those rights is a right to sell your own labor. According to your Declaration of Independence, governments are instituted among men to secure the rights endowed by the Creator. A

right cannot be regulated. A right cannot be taxed. If you had a right to your wages, it would be a Government duty to secure your right to wages. What contract did you sign to waive your right to earn wages?

The U.S. Constitution in Article 1, section 10 prohibits government from impairing the obligation of contracts. If you had a right to contract your labor for wages of equal value, then government would not impair that contract. But you don't have a right to contract, because your labor belongs to your benefactor. It belongs to the same people who own the IRS. Your employer buys your labor from them. They allow you to keep a living allowance. Slaves must be provided for.

The application form for a Social Security Number is a Department of the Treasury form, not a form from the Social Security Administration. They are your Lord.

If you applied for a number, you agreed that the Secretary of the Treasury is your Lord. You cannot question federal jurisdiction once you avail yourself of federal benefits (according to the Supreme Court's [Ashwander](#) case). And I again repeat the *Black's Law Dictionary* definition of Allegiance: "Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives. U.S. v. Kuhn, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp. 407, 414"

Let's take a closer look at this obligation of obedience.

If government determines your moral values for you then you cannot claim that it is immoral to fund vile abominations. You must render unto Caesar that which is Caesar's.

On the other hand, if you have a right to earn wages, then your wages cannot be taken from you to fund abominations. If you waived your right to earn wages, then your wages become taxable.

#### 4.8.1 Basic taxation principles

Romans 13:6 requires us to pay taxes to fund legitimate government functions. This makes perfect sense, after all, we masters should pay our civil servants. On the other hand, Satan has a counterfeit authority for you to obey. This counterfeit authority needs tax revenue to fund their abominations. How then do you distinguish legitimate authority from illegitimate authority? Answer: Legitimate government functions, per Romans 13:3-4, are not a terror to good works, but are terror to evil.

There are two ways to make your earnings taxable: one is to work for the government, the other is to have your labor rights owned by the government.

No one has a right to work for the government. The privilege of working for government is a government granted taxable privilege. It was taxable in 1862, long before the 16th Amendment, and it remains taxable now. The Public Salary Tax Act of 1939 [76th Congress, 1<sup>st</sup> Session, Chap 59, pages 574-575] has never been repealed. It defines gross income to include only "compensation for personal service as an officer or employee of a State, or any political subdivision thereof, or any agency or instrumentality of any one or more of the foregoing." That's right! The statute definition is such that only federal government employees have "income".

[Side issue: This allows the IRS to say that wages are income. And the Internal Revenue Code is very misleading. If you study it carefully, you'll find out that the term "employer" only refers to the government.]

And only federal government employees have a right to work in the US. "The United States" is both the name of the government and the name of the geographical place. Don't confuse the two.

And NO, the 16th Amendment didn't make all wages taxable. The Supreme Court ruled in *Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co.*, 240 U.S. 103 that: "The 16th Amendment conferred no new power of taxation..." but simply prohibited the income tax from being taken out of the category of indirect taxation to which it inherently belonged.

The other way to make wages taxable is to give away your right to earn wages, thereby making an equitable conversion of your labor. This is usury prohibited by scripture. You have no right to profit from labor that you no longer own. Income, gain, or profit from the use of government owned labor is taxable as an excise tax. Courts have acquired an *in rem* jurisdiction of this government owned labor. Any indigent socialist who deposits all his future labor into the socialist



trough in order to receive a future bowl of stew is, of course, receiving taxable profit if he tries to sell the labor owned by his benefactor.

Pay attention to the courts' use of the terms "income" "gain" and "profit".

Note that the Internal Revenue Code:

- section 61 lists 15 types of income subject to taxation but does not mention wages or salary,
- section 71 lists 19 types of income but does not mention wages or salary,
- section 101 lists 36 types of income but does not mention wages or salary.
- wages ARE mentioned in the FICA section 3101(a), "IN ADDITION TO OTHER TAXES, there is hereby imposed on the income of every individual a tax equal to the following percentages of the wages..."

The word "income" has never included wages, except for government employees. The exchange of labor for pay of equal value has never been income.

Edwards v. Keith, 231 Fed. 1:

*"One does not derive income by rendering services and charging for them."*

Conner v. U.S., 303 F.Supp. 1187 (1969) on page 1191:

*"If there is no gain there is no income... Congress has taxed income not compensation."*

#### **4.8.2 Your chains of slavery**

It is a Biblical principle (Proverbs 22:7) that Borrowing someone else's property makes the borrower a servant to the lender. Your Social Security Card is property of the government (someone else). You are servant to the lender. This creates an obligation (Your chains of slavery).

Before the Social Security Act was crammed down our throats, sociological intellectuals were influencing jurists on how to create one-sided contracts to impose a public obligation to fund socialism. Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Roscoe Pound, Second Edition, 1925, p 543:

*How, then, are purely equitable obligations created? For the most part, either by the acts of third persons or by equity alone. But how can one person impose an obligation upon another? By giving property to the latter on the terms of his assuming an obligation in respect to it. At law there are only two means by which the object of the donor could be at all accomplished, consistent with the entire ownership of the property passing to the donee, namely: first, by imposing a real obligation upon the property; secondly, by subjecting the title of the donee to a condition subsequent. The first of these the law does not permit; the second is entirely inadequate. Equity, however, can secure most of the objects of the donor, and yet avoid the mischiefs of real obligations by imposing upon the donee (and upon all persons to whom the property shall afterwards come without value or notice) a personal obligation with respect to the property; and accordingly this is what equity does. It is in this way that all trusts are created, and all equitable charges made (i.e., equitable hypothecations or liens created) by testators in their wills. In this way, also, most trusts are created by acts inter vivos, except in those cases in which the trustee incurs a legal as well as an equitable obligation. In short, as property is the subject of every equitable obligation, so the owner of property is the only person whose act or acts can be the means of creating an obligation in respect to that property. Moreover, the owner of property can create an obligation in respect to it in only two ways: first, by incurring the obligation himself, in which case he commonly also incurs a legal obligation; secondly by imposing the obligation upon some third person; and this he does in the way just explained.*

Now reread that with the knowledge that

- Your Social Security Card is not yours, it is property of someone else (read the back of the card)
- When he says "object of the donor" he means the objective, not the property

- The "purely equitable obligation" is the obligation to turn over all your wages to your guardian in exchange for their managing your affairs. (You are the ward, they are the guardian -- see chapter 4.9.1 on Daddy Government. Your wages are their property -- See chapter 4.15 maxims of law. They manage your affairs -- See chapter 4.15 tacit procuration )
- "trustee incurs a legal as well as an equitable obligation" is the obligation created by accepting a SS card -- the obligation of a taxpayer (or even resident, or citizen)
- Government funds are property (benefit) that you can acquire if you hold one of their cards. It creates an obligation to obey their laws.

### 4.8.3 For the advanced student

There are only two types of taxes authorized by your Constitution, indirect (such as imposts, duties and excises) and direct. Essentially: Direct taxes are taxes on people not things. Indirect taxes are a tax on things, but not people. Indirect tax, being a tax on things, must meet careful criteria so that it doesn't tax people.

Congress has always had the authority to collect an indirect tax on profits (of those within federal jurisdiction) without apportionment and without regard to any census. This power has always existed, it was not added by the 16th amendment.

Direct taxes (according to Article 1, sect 2) must be apportioned among the states, not among the people, and must be paid by the states, not by people. STATES PAY DIRECT TAXES NOT PEOPLE! The Governor then sends the tax bills to citizens who remit payment to the state treasury who then pays your federal government.

Your federal government can however directly tax federal employees. Federal employees can be taxed directly, just as they have been ever since the 1862 tax act of 12 Stat 432, chapter 119, section 86 imposed a direct 3% tax on their wages above \$600 per year. This was long before the 16th amendment, even though your constitution prohibited direct taxes unless apportioned.

The taxing of people is a direct tax, called capitation, and is prohibited by Article 1, section 9. A direct tax on wages "... would be by nature a capitation rather than excise tax." according to the Supreme Court in *Peck & Co. v. Lowe*, 247 U.S. 165 (1918)

Indirect taxes need not be apportioned, but must be taxed during import, manufacture or sale. To tax the purchaser for owning a thing would be a direct tax.

The U.S. Supreme Court in *Pollock v. Farmers Loan* 158 U.S. 601, found that The income tax act of 1894 "... being a direct tax within the meaning of the Constitution, and, therefore unconstitutional and void because not apportioned according to representation..."

A direct tax on wages remains unconstitutional. 1975 U.S. Supreme Court case *Colonial Pipeline Co. v. Traigle* 421 U.S. 100: "... Income tax statutes apply only to state created Corporations no matter whether state, local or federal."

*Eisner v. Macomber*, 40 S.Ct. 192 (1920), 252 U.S. 189 (1919):

*"The 16th Amendment must be construed in the connection with the taxing clause of the original Constitution" ... "this did not extend the taxing power to new subjects"*

*Brushaber v. Union Pacific RR Co.* 240 U.S. 1 (36 S.Ct. 242 & 243) (1916) made it theoretically possible to have an indirect tax on income (profits), while a direct tax on wages remained unconstitutional unless apportioned. This important case clarifies that a tax on income (profit) is an indirect tax as long as income was "separated from the source":

- "The Amendment ... was drawn with the object of maintaining the limitations of the Constitution" ...
- "a direct tax on the income, [would] be a direct tax on the source itself, and thereby take an income tax out of the class of excises, duties, and imposts and place it in the class of [unconstitutional unless apportioned] direct taxes."

also see *Flint v. Stone Tracy Co.* 220 U.S. 107, *Peck v Lowe* 247 U.S. 165 (1918), and *Evans v. Gore*, 40 S.Ct. 555(1920)

US Supreme Court in Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390: "The term [liberty]... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his own conscience... The established doctrine is that this liberty may not be interfered with, under the guise of protecting public interest, by legislative action which is arbitrary..."

U.S. Supreme Court in Murdock v. Pennsylvania, 319 U.S. 105 (1943).

*"The power to tax the exercise of a privilege is the power to suppress its enjoyment. ... Those who can tax the exercise of this practice can make its exercise so costly as to deprive it of the resources necessary for its maintenance. Those who can tax the privilege ... can close the doors to all those who do not have a full purse."*

US Supreme Court in Miranda v. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436,491:

*"Where rights secured by the Constitution are involved, there can be no rule making or legislation which would abrogate them."*

Only by informed consent can they take your liberty. According to the U.S. Supreme Court in Brady v. U.S., 397 U.S. 742:

*"Waivers of Constitutional rights not only must be voluntary, but must be knowing, intelligent acts done with sufficient awareness of the relevant circumstances and likely consequences"*

"... the slothful shall be under tribute." Proverbs 12:24

#### 4.9 Your Government's definition of the word "Citizen"

Before you can understand that you changed your citizenship, or that you worship a graven image, you need to study citizenship.

CITIZENSHIP is a term of incorporation: "incorporated into", "being a member of". Citizenship in a society of people is different from citizenship in an artificial graven (manmade) government. You have a right to associate with a society. Unless invited, you cannot join a government. You have NO automatic right to government granted privileges. Citizenship in a government is not a right\*. The society that you associate with has a right, if it chooses to do so, to create a structured government to help protect it. But plural groups (societies) cannot grant to their subordinates the right to destroy rights. For example: if you do not have a right to cancel your neighbor's vows to God, then you cannot delegate to the divorce courts you create, a right that you do not have.

\* You cannot participate in government. You have no right to vote. The U.S. Supreme Court says "the Constitution of the United States has not conferred the right of suffrage upon any one". (Minor v. Happersett and in U.S. v. Cruikshank)

Below is the definition of citizenship from Black's Law Dictionary, First Edition of 1891, which was well after the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment. Beware of the lawyer weasel words that limit your rights. We will study other earlier publications that say *Residents* did not have the rights of citizens. Residents didn't even have liberty.

The term *Citizen* is derived from ancient Rome "to designate a person who had the freedom of the city." These are the people who had the authority to present themselves in public. Including both partial citizenship and complete citizenship. Do you have "freedom of the city" or do you need to purchase credentials to present yourself in public?

**CITIZEN. In general.** A member of a free city or jural society, (*ciuitas*,) possessing all the rights and privileges which can be enjoyed by any person under its constitution and government, and subject to the corresponding duties.

**In American law.** One who, under the constitution and laws of the United States, has a right to vote for civil officers, and himself is qualified to fill elective offices.

One of the sovereign people. A constituent member of the sovereignty, synonymous with the people. 19 How. 404.

A member of the civil state entitled to all its privileges. Cooley, Const. Law, 77.

The term "citizen" has come to us derived from antiquity. It appears to have been used in the Roman government to designate a person who had the freedom of the city, and the right to exercise all political and civil privileges of the government. There was also, at Rome, a partial citizenship, including civil, but not political, rights. Complete citizenship embraced both. 18 Ind. 431.

All persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of the United States and of the state wherein they reside. Amend. XIV. Const. U. S.

There is in our political system a government of each of the several states, and a government of the United States. Each is distinct from the others, and has citizens of its own, who owe it allegiance, and whose rights, within its jurisdiction, it must protect. The same person may be at the same time a citizen of the United States and a citizen of a state; but his rights of citizenship under one of these governments will be different from those he has under the other. The government of the United States, although it is, within the scope of its powers, supreme and beyond the states, can neither grant nor secure to its citizens rights or privileges which are not expressly or by implication placed under its jurisdiction. All that cannot be so granted or secured are left to the exclusive protection of the states. 23 U. S. 542.

"Citizen" and "inhabitant" are not synonymous. One may be a citizen of a state without being an inhabitant, or an inhabitant without being a citizen. 4 Har. (Del.) 338.

"Citizen" is sometimes used as synonymous with "resident;" as in a statute authorizing funds to be distributed among the religious societies of a township, proportionably to the number of their members who are citizens of the township. 11 Ohio, 24.

Do you have "freedom of the city"? In 1803 America, the Supreme Court ruled in Marbury v Madison that Washington DC's Mayor Marbury was not entitled to a government credential to prove that he was mayor. Do you need to purchase a credential to present yourself in public, or do you have the same freedom of the city that Citizen Marbury had? Did you purchase your credential from a graven image? Can you register to vote in State elections without confessing that you are also a federal citizen? Citizenship is a complex issue, and many volumes have been written on the subject. Citizenship and residency and domicile are lawyer weasel words that are made deceptively complex in order to prevent you from entering into the Kingdom of Heaven.

This 1891 Law Dictionary definition also clarified that a citizen is "*One who, under the Constitution and laws of the United States, ... is qualified to fill elective office.*" This would exclude many people who are not natural-born. Article 2, Section 1: "No Person except a natural born Citizen... shall be eligible to the Office of President; ..."

Minor v. Happersett, 88 U.S. 162 (1875):

*"The Constitution does not, in words, say who shall be natural-born citizens. Resort must be had elsewhere to*

ascertain that. At common-law, with the nomenclature of which the framers of the Constitution were familiar, it was never doubted that **all children born in a country of parents who were its citizens became themselves, upon their birth, citizens also. These were natives, or natural-born citizens, as distinguished from aliens or foreigners.** Some authorities go further and include as **citizens** children born within the jurisdiction without reference to the citizenship of their parents. As to this **class** there have been doubts, but never as to the first. For the purposes of this case it is not necessary to solve these doubts. It is sufficient for everything we have now to consider that all children born of citizen parents within the jurisdiction are themselves **citizens.**" (Emphasis added.)

[Dred Scott v. Sandford](#), (1857) 19 How. 393, 60 U.S. 576:

*"The citizens are the members of the civil society, bound to this society by certain duties, and subject to its authority; they equally participate in its advantages. The natives or natural-born citizens are those born in the country of parents who are citizens. As society cannot perpetuate itself otherwise than by the children of the citizens, those children naturally follow the condition of their parents, and succeed to all their rights."*

*"... to be of the country, it is necessary to be born of a person who is a citizen, for if he be born there of a foreigner, it will be only the place of his birth, and not his country. The inhabitants, as distinguished from citizens, are foreigners who are permitted to settle and stay in the country."*

- According to the 1382 introduction of John Wycliffe's English translation of the Bible, "This Bible is for the Government of the People, by the People, and for the People."
- Christ bestowed upon us a Kingdom, where we are prohibited from exercising lordship over others. Luke 22:25-29 "And He said to them, **"The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and those who exercise authority over them are called 'benefactors.'** **But not so among you;** on the contrary, he who is greatest among you, let him be as the younger, and he who governs as he who serves. For who is greater, he who sits at the table, or he who serves? Is it not he who sits at the table? Yet I am among you as the One who serves. But you are those who have continued with Me in My trials. And I bestow upon you a kingdom, just as My Father bestowed one upon Me,"
- We already have a Citizenship. Philippians 3:20 "For our citizenship is in heaven, from which we also eagerly wait for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ," Ephesians 2:19 "Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;"
- NOTICE THAT CITIZENSHIP INVOLVES EITHER (1) LORDSHIP (prohibited to Christians by Christ's command **"not so among you"**) OR (2) VOLUNTARY SERVITUDE OR (3) ALLEGIANCE TO AN ALTERNATE AUTHORITY CALLED **"BENEFACTORS"**
- We are a holy nation according to 1 Peter 2:9-10 "But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, His own special people, that you may proclaim the praises of Him who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; who once were not a people but are now the people of God, who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy."
- Notice that Paul got in trouble whenever he used his government citizenship

Here are the basics of government citizenship: You do not need to be a citizen, but if you are a citizen, there are only two kinds of citizenship: state citizenship and federal citizenship. Those who reside in federal territories or receive federal benefits are federal citizens. "A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government..." (Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383). Citizens give up natural rights in exchange for political privileges. State citizens have political rights, such as the right to run for President, and such as the protections acknowledged by the first eight amendments.

Alternatively, Federal citizens cannot have political rights. Federal citizens are subjects on the federal plantation. Example: only state citizens can become President, no one from a federal territory, such as Washington DC, can run for President. Again: territories such as Washington, DC are outside the US. Again: Federal people cannot have political rights, and cannot run for President.

How could there possibly be such a thing as **an artificial government-created citizenship** that is not a people-created citizenship? How could the civil servants fabricate their own masters out of a piece of paper? The answer is found in the

words of Justice Miller in the U.S. Supreme Court decision in The Slaughter-House Cases, [83 U.S. 36](#) (1873) when comparing citizenship prior to the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment:

*"... It had been said by eminent judges that no man was a citizen of the United States except as he was a citizen of one of the states composing the Union. Those, therefore, who had been born and resided always in the District of Columbia or in the territories, though within the United States, were not citizens"*

and comparing it to federal citizenship that existed after the Fourteenth Amendment:

*"persons may be citizens of the United States without regard to their citizenship of a particular state..."*

*"Not only may a man be a citizen of the United States without being a citizen of a state... it is only necessary that he should be born or naturalized in the United States to be a citizen of the Union."*

Notice that there were two citizenships; **an artificial, government-created citizenship**: citizenship of the United States; and the natural citizenship of a state. After the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment a national citizenship could exist on its own. You can now be a citizen of the federal government.

Yes, one can now be a member of a graven image and ignore what was once "natural citizenship" that once had what the Bible calls "*the perfect law of liberty*" as the authority for your government.

But once you claim to be a U.S. Citizen, even if you are also a natural citizen, you would owe allegiance to two governments.

If you don't understand this yet, I'll try to explain the chain of command. State citizens created state governments. State citizens are masters of their servants. An association of these servants (who once called their association "The United States in Congress Assembled") became your federal government. Your Constitution Article 1 section 8 clause 17 granted your federal servants exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever, over the District of Columbia. I repeat: exclusive legislation in all cases. DC residents and Fourteenth Amendment citizens are subject to the servants of the servants of the state citizens. They are not state citizens. These servants and sub-servants cannot grant rights. We are endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights, Rights do not come from servants. You cannot be granted rights you already have.

The chapter on the definition of the word "person" covers the distinction between the term "person" and the term sovereign. You had all the birthrights of a sovereign. I want to introduce you to the sovereign power that you gave up when you consented to be governed.

Sovereignty is delegated from God to you, and it is up to you to keep it.

After the Revolutionary war, Ben Franklin L.Ed. a delegation to negotiate the Treaty of Paris, which was signed September 3rd 1783. This document is what gives America the right to exist. King George signed over (through his representative) to all Americans the rights of the sovereign, except those that he retained. All Americans understood, at that time, exactly what power they had.

US Supreme Court in Lansing v. Smith, 4 Wend. 9, 20 (1829):

*"People of a state are entitled to all rights which formerly belong to the King, by his prerogative."*

The People v. Herkimer, 4 Cowen (NY) 345, 348 (1825):

*"The people, or sovereign are not bound by general words in statutes, restrictive of prerogative right, title or interest, unless expressly named. Acts of limitation do not bind the King or the people. The people have been ceded all the rights of the King, the former sovereign ... It is a maxim of the common law, that when an act is made for the common good and to prevent injury, the King shall be bound, though not named, but when a statute is general and prerogative right would be divested or taken from the King [or the people] he shall not be bound."*

Read that again. That's right! Your birthright means you are not bound to statutes that take away your rights. Unless, of course, you signed something to give up your birthright.

[Aside: notice the phrase "shall not be bound" is similar to other Republics, such as the historical account in Acts 22:29 that a Roman officer cannot bind a Roman citizen. Notice that the word "bind" is used in the Bible to refer to a mark that is both on hands and foreheads. Deuteronomy 6:8, Deuteronomy 11:18, Proverbs 7:2-3. Now notice that the word 'pledge' as in A PLEDGE OF ALLEGIANCE MEANS TO BIND -- see *Strong's* H2254. A pledge of allegiance is an oath to be bound, and is symbolically a mark on your hands and forehead.]

Allegiance is defined by Homeland Security in their [Title 8, Code of Federal Regulations, section 337](#) as a commitment

*"... I will perform work of national importance under civilian direction when required by the law; and that I take this obligation freely without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; so help me God"*

There is no limit to this "work of national importance", it is an oath to perform unlimited hours of perpetual slavery.

Even the very definition of Liberty means you cannot be regulated. Study the terms Liberty and Liberties in the Law Dictionary. Another Example: the U.S. Supreme Court in Meyer v. Nebraska, 262 U.S. 390, 399: The term Liberty "... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience, the established doctrine is that this liberty may not be interfered with under the guise of protecting public interest, by legislative action which is arbitrary..."

If this doesn't describe your liberty, then perhaps you signed something to give up your rights. Notice that protecting public interest is not a function of government, at least according to your Supreme Court. Your government was instituted among men to protect the rights of the innocent. PROTECTING PUBLIC INTEREST IS CONTRARY TO PROTECTING RIGHTS. Ben Franklin said that those who would give up liberty for safety deserve neither. Thomas Jefferson said that the Tree of Liberty must be periodically fertilized with the blood of patriots and tyrants.

Conclusion: the federalists have been given exclusive jurisdiction over Washington DC. There are no sovereign rights in Washington DC.

- Ephesians 4:14-15 (KJV) "That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:"
- Colossians 2:20 (KJV) "Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, ... "

Continuing with the topic of federal jurisdiction:

The Presidency is an office of servitude, not an office of authority. Unless, of course, you signed something to make you subordinate to his authority.

The story that I think best contrasts today's esteem of servants with the true nature of servitude is the story of Thomas Jefferson's inauguration. President Jefferson was sworn into office, and went home to his boarding house for lunch. All seats at the table were occupied, and no one offered their seat to the civil servant, so he ate his inauguration day lunch alone in his room.

I'll quote from his inauguration speech later.

The next time you are filling out a form that asks you to check a box, don't be so quick to confess that you are a U.S. citizen. (And don't be so willing to waive your right to privacy, fill out confessions, take perjury oaths, or greed after whatever worldly recognition that the form offers). Without a confession, you might be able to retain basic human rights, such as the right to own property and the right to earn wages.

Article IV of the Articles of Confederation extended privileges of citizenship to mere inhabitants, with this phrase:



*"... the free inhabitants of each of these states, paupers, vagabonds and fugitives from Justice excepted, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several states"*

The Articles of Confederation uses phrases in which nouns are not capitalized proper nouns, and never use the preposition "of", examples:

- "states in this union"
- "free inhabitants"
- "free citizens"

The U.S. Constitution omits references to free, and uses phrases with proper capitalized nouns, and often use the preposition "of":

- "Citizen of the United States"
- "Inhabitant of that State"
- "Resident within the United States"
- "People of the several States"
- "residents of the same state"

The 14th amendment created a type of federal "citizenship" which is analogous to ownership.

In your Constitution prior to the fourteenth amendment, the word Citizen was ALWAYS capitalized: Article 1, section 2 (twice), Article 1 section 3, Article 2, section 1, Article 3, section 2 (five times), Article 4 section 2 (twice) and the 11th amendment (twice). But, it is NEVER capitalized in the five occurrences within the 14th amendment. Congress did not forget the proper use of English. One refers to the proper title of the government's Master. The other is a word for government property. Which one are you?

The 14th amendment created a new class of citizenship. Originally intended for the 4 million freed slaves who had no means of support, it allowed for federal ownership of those who needed federal entitlements in order to survive. As previously explained, it "is an absurdity" to think that your Constitution would ever be interpreted to provide welfare to individuals. Under your Constitution, welfare for individuals is not possible without ownership (because welfare is the responsibility of owners, church and family). This is Biblical.

Equal protection under the law ?

Lawyers will tell you that the 14th amendment was the great equalizer. They will tell you that your rights to equal protection under the law come from the 14th amendment. They will then ask you why you would question such strong protections?

Compare the following two quotes that acknowledge equal protection under the law:

- The 14th Amendment section 1, "... nor shall any State deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law... "
- The 5th Amendment "... nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law..."

The U.S. Supreme Court in 1878 case of Davidson v. New Orleans stated that your Constitution is not redundant. They mean different things.

Recommended reading on the topic of the 14th Amendment: 1968 Utah Supreme Court decision in Dyett v. Turner, 439 P.2d. 266.

Another topic. The phrase "and subject to the jurisdiction thereof" in the first sentence of the 14th amendment.

The U.S. Supreme Court ruled on the meaning of the first sentence of the 14th Amendment in Elk v. Wilkins in 1884 (112 U.S. 94)

*"The persons declared to be citizens are `all persons born or naturalized in the united states, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof.' The evident meaning of these last words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but completely subject to their political jurisdiction, and owing them direct and immediate allegiance."*

Do you owe complete, direct and immediate allegiance to someone else's civil servants?

Another Topic. The term "citizen" as used in government laws

In Powe v. U.S., 109 F.2d. 147, 149 (1940) the court determined what the term `citizen' means in federal statutes. Notice that the term `citizen', when used in federal laws, excludes State citizens:

*"... a construction is to be avoided, if possible, that would render the law unconstitutional, or raise grave doubts thereabout. In view of these rules it is held that `citizen' means `citizen of the United States,' and not a person generally, nor citizen of a State ..."*

U.S. Supreme Court in U.S. v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542:

*"A person may be at the same time a citizen of the United States and a citizen of a State, but his rights of citizenship under one of these governments will be different from those he has under the other."*

In 1887 the Supreme Court in Baldwin v. Franks 7 S.Ct. 656, 662; 120 U.S. 678, 690 found that:

*"In the constitution and laws of the United States the word `citizen' is generally, if not always, used in a political sense... It is so used in section 1 of article 14 of the amendments of the constitution..."*

The U.S. Supreme Court in Logan v. US, 12 S.Ct. 617, 626:

*"In Baldwin v. Franks ... it was decided that the word `citizen' .... was used in its political sense, and not as synonymous with `resident', `inhabitant', or `person' ..."*

14 CJS section 4 quotes State v. Manuel, 20 N.C. 122:

*"... the term `citizen' in the United States, is analogous to the term `subject' in the common law; the change of phrase has resulted from the change in government."*

"The terms resident and citizen are not synonymous" Shaffer v. Carter, 252 U.S. 37, at pages 78-79.

*"The classification citizen of the United States is distinguished from a Citizen of one of the several states, in that the former is a special class of citizen created by Congress"*  
[U.S. v. Anthony, 24 Fed. 829 (1873)]

125 Fed 322, 325: "The thirteenth amendment is a great extension of the powers of the national government."

U.S. v. Rhodes, 27 Federal Cases 785, 794:

*"The amendment [fourteenth] reversed and annulled the original policy of the constitution"*

The U.S. Supreme Court in Twining v. New Jersey, 211 U.S. 78, in 1908:

*"The first eight Amendments are restrictive only of National action, and, while the Fourteenth Amendment restrained and limited state action, it did not take up and protect citizens of the States from action by the States as to all matters enumerated in the first eight Amendments."*

The U.S. Supreme Court in Hague v. CIO, 307 U.S. 496, 520:

*"... the first eight amendments have uniformly been held not be protected from state action by the privileges and immunities clause" [of the fourteenth amendment]*

That's right! the U.S. Supreme Court says that fourteenth amendment citizens are not protected by the Bill of Rights.

#### STATE CITIZENSHIP

State Citizens have their same rights in all the states because your Federal Constitution in Article 4, section 2 guarantees that "The citizens of each State shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of citizens in the several States."

The Supreme Court in Colgate v. Harvey, 296 U.S. 404, 429 clarified that rights of state citizenship are in contradistinction to the rights of U.S. citizenship: "The rights of a citizen under one may be quite different from those which he has under the other..."

Colgate v. Harvey then concluded that the right to trial by jury and the right to bear arms are not guaranteed to 14th amendment citizens.

Merely reciting which kind of citizen you are, is admissible by anyone taking you to federal court. Be careful about checking a box on a form claiming U.S. citizenship. Example: The U.S. Supreme Court in Urtetiqui v. D'Arcy, 34 U.S. 692: "Where plaintiff, suing in the circuit court of the United States for the district of Maryland, alleges that he is a citizen of Maryland, an affidavit signed by him in a suit brought in a state court, reciting that he was not a citizen of the United States, thereby procuring a removal of the case to the federal court, is admissible on defendant's behalf."

Your Constitution Article 4, section 2 guarantees "privileges and immunities" to Citizens of each state. K Tashiro v. Jordan 256 P 545, was later affirmed by U.S. Supreme Court in 278 U.S. 123: "There is clear distinction between national and State Citizenship, U.S. Citizenship does not entitle citizen of the privileges and immunities of the Citizen of the State"

That's correct! If you claim to be a U.S. citizen, you are claiming that you are not entitled to the privileges and immunities of a State Citizen (a right guaranteed by Article 4, section 2). You are not protected by your Constitution. You have no rights. Like Esau, you sold your birthright.

Hebrews 12:16: See to it that no one is profane, like Esau, who flippantly sold his birthright.

If you are a citizen, it is because you have voluntarily submitted to the dominion of your political community. Whether you like it or not. No matter how evil.

US Supreme Court in the 1875 case U.S. v. Cruikshank 92 U.S. 542: "Citizens are the members of the political community to which they belong. They are the people who compose the community, and who, in their associated capacity, have established or submitted themselves to the dominion of a government for the promotion of their general welfare and the protection of their individual as well as their collective rights.... The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

A Christian, however, would not consent to be governed. He already has a King. He already has a citizenship. Philippians 3:20 (NIV): "But our citizenship is in heaven. And we eagerly await a Savior from there, the Lord Jesus Christ," We ARE a nation, according to 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:9.

United States v. 24 Federal Cases 829,830 (1873): "The rights of Citizens of the States, as such, are not under consideration in the fourteenth amendment. They stand as they did before the adoption of the fourteenth amendment and are fully guaranteed by other provisions."

Notice the terminology "enter into society" in the 1798 U.S. Supreme Court case Calder v. Bull, 3 Dallas 386:

*"The people of the United States erected their Constitutions, or forms of government, to establish justice, to promote the general welfare, to secure the blessings of liberty; and to protect their persons and property from violence. The purposes for which men enter into society will determine the nature and terms of the social compact; and as they are the foundation of the legislative power, they will decide what are the proper objects of it: The nature, and ends of the legislative power will limit the exercise of it. This*

*fundamental principle flows from the very nature of our free Republican governments, that no man should be compelled to do what the laws do not require; nor to refrain from acts which the laws permit..."*

And notice the same terminology in Andrew Jackson's second inauguration speech March 4, 1833:

*"Constantly bearing in mind that entering into society individuals must give up a share of liberty..."*

Again notice that citizens have given up a share of liberty, whereas non-citizens keep their rights.

Have you entered into a society that uses a vote to determine the morality of abortion, sodomy, divorce, usury, pornography, and property seizure? You paid your fair share for these abominations. Jesus told us not to have dominion over others. Christians would

- depart from iniquity (2<sup>nd</sup> Tim 2:19) and
- come out from among them and be ye separate (2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 6:17), and
- be not partakers (Revelation 18:4) and
- seek citizenship in heaven (Phil 3:20, Eph 2:19, Heb 11:16, etc),
- agree with adversaries quickly (Matt 5:25), and
- "And be not conformed to this world..." Romans 12:2, and
- rather be wronged 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:7, and
- judge not, and love their enemy.

None of these are possible for someone who is trying, with a vote (or a gun\*), to force perverted values on others, or to exercise dominion, or to force others to provide for them.

\*(Ballot and bullet and bully are etymologically the same word. They all refer to rock throwing. Examples: President Lincoln 8/26/1863 said "Among free men there can be no successful appeal from the ballot to the bullet." Another example: The apostle Paul, admits that before he was converted he stoned to death the saints. He confesses in Acts 26:10 "When they were put to death, I cast my vote against them.")

State governments were originally founded on Biblical principles. Here in these United States, or any other Republic, the citizens are the higher power of Romans 13:1. The civil servants who daily blaspheme God are not the higher powers ordained of God. They are a terror to good works. Romans 13:1 (KJV): "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." Romans 13:3 (KJV) "For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil." The same principles that require you to obey lawful government require you to punish tyrants.

Here are Citizenship issues related to the 14<sup>th</sup> amendment children.

First, The 14<sup>th</sup> amendment says that all persons born or naturalized in the U.S. are citizens of the U.S., and Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(b)(i) lists indigent children and immigrants as the only ones who can qualify for Social Security Numbers. Note that the words "including any child on whose behalf such benefits are claimed" may be construed, by the rules of statutory construction, to exclude all non-children. In statutes written by congress the word "includes" normally excludes everything else not mentioned. There is a strong possibility that congress authorized ONLY government children, regardless of age, to receive SS numbers. Read my chapter on Parens Patriæ for proof that the word "child" in this section of the Social Security Act refers only to government wards.

Statutory construction for the law's words "including any children" require you to consider legal maxims:

- *Expressio unius est exclusion alterius.* "A maxim of statutory interpretation meaning that the expression of one thing is the exclusion of another... Mention of one thing implies exclusion of another. When certain persons or things are specified in a law, contract, or will, an intention to exclude all others from its operation may be inferred." (quote from Black's Law Dictionary)
- *Expressum facit cessare tacitum.* "That which is expressed makes that which is implied to cease... Where a law sets down plainly its whole meaning the court is prevented from making it mean what the court pleases..." (quote from Black's Law Dictionary)

The rules of statutory construction are mentioned in *Stenberg v. Carhart*, [530 U.S. 914](#) (2000):

*"When a statute includes an explicit definition, we must follow that definition, even if it varies from that term's ordinary meaning. Meese v. Keene, 481 U.S. 465, 484-485 (1987) ("It is axiomatic that the statutory definition of the term excludes unstated meanings of that term"); Colautti v. Franklin, 439 U.S. at 392-393, n.10 ("As a rule, 'a definition which declares what a term "means" ... excludes any meaning that is not stated"); Western Union Telegraph Co. v. Lenroot, 323 U.S. 490, 502 (1945) ; Fox v. Standard Oil Co. of N.J., 294 U.S. 87, 95-96 (1935) (Cardozo, J.); see also 2A N. Singer, Sutherland on Statutes and Statutory Construction §47.07, p. 152, and n. 10 (5<sup>th</sup> ed. 1992) (collecting cases). That is to say, the statute, read "as a whole," post at 998 [530 U.S. 943] (THOMAS, J., dissenting), leads the reader to a definition. That definition does not include the Attorney General's restriction ..."*

Second, there are ASSIGNED Social Security Numbers and ISSUED Social Security Numbers. Compare SS Act section 205(c)(2) with 20 CFR 422.103 through .104, and 26 CFR 31.6011(b) and (c).

Assigned Social Security Numbers	Issued Social Security Numbers
Are ALWAYS called Account Numbers	Are NEVER called Account Numbers
Are not for children (in neither SS Act nor SS regulations)	Are for children (SS Act only)
	Are not for children (regulations only)

Third,

Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(d), (I've added the emphasis): "The SOCIAL SECURITY ACCOUNT NUMBER ISSUED to an individual for purposes of section 205(c)(2)(A) of the Social Security Act shall, except as otherwise be specified under regulations of the Secretary, be used as the identifying number for such individual for purposes of this title."

Search as much as you want, but you won't find an issued account number. Yet, this is what your tax law wants. Every April 15<sup>th</sup>, you swear a perjury oath to the federal god that you have a number that does not exist.

There is one last topic to consider. The word "enumerated" as used in the Social Security Act. The Social Security Administration has stated on their web site

<http://www.ssa.gov/history/history6.html#postoffice> :

*"The process of issuing Social Security numbers is called "enumeration," and over the years it has been one of the most interesting topics involving Social Security."*

Now, here is the legal definition of ENUMERATED:

*"The term is often used in law as equivalent to "mentioned specifically," "designated" or "expressly named or granted"; as in speaking of enumerated government powers, ITEMS OF PROPERTY, or articles in a tariff schedule..."*

#### 4.10 Parens Patriæ (daddy government)

Yes, you can be a child of daddy government.

The last chapter mentioned some curious connections between SSNs and 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment children. This chapter will study the daddy government story. The connection is not so curious.

Summary so far:

- three times in the Bible, angels tell us that Beasts symbolize governments.
- The five occurrence in the Bible of marks (signs, words, tokens, law, and seals) that are on both the forehead and hand also mention the training of children.
- Welfare is unconstitutional except to save the lives of incompetent people who cannot take care of themselves
- After the American Civil War the freed slaves had no way to take care of themselves. They were considered incompetent. In order to survive, they were offered 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment citizenship to be "born" IN the United States (and no, this United States birth is not a geographic birthplace of an infant, it is birth into the federal government "and subject to the [singular] jurisdiction thereof"). Unless, of course, they were born AT the United States.
- The Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) allows SS cards to be issued to those who qualify for federal funds "including any children on whose behalf such benefits are claimed..." The rules of statutory construction for the word *Include* exclude everything else that is not mentioned.

By accepting the position of child, you loose your liberty.

- Christians cannot associate with freeloaders. 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14
- Protection draws subjection.
- "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt.
- The Articles of Confederation deny to paupers (supported by public funds) the privileges of citizens.
- "He who derives a benefit from a thing, ought to feel the disadvantages attending it."
- "No one can unjustly enrich himself at the expense of others" (this creates a constructive contract that courts enforce)
- According to the Supreme Court in *Ashwander v. TVA* anyone who "avails himself of a benefit" cannot then question the Constitutionality of the law that he benefited from. The Supreme Court WILL NOT consider the case.
- Like Esau, you sold your birthright for a future bowl of stew. God hated Esau.

And 2000 years ago [Plutarch said](#) "It is truly said that the first destroyer of the liberties of a people is he who gave them bounties and largesse. "

There are responsibilities of accepting the status of government child.

- Obey your masters (Ephesians 6:5, Colossians 3:22, Titus 2:9, 1st Peter 2:18). Or as Blackstone so eloquently stated in the introduction to his law books: "a state of dependence will inevitably oblige the inferior to take the will of him, on whom he depends, as the rule of his conduct " -- Inferior? How do you like that? In a nation where all men were created equal, you become inferior to your guardian.
- Anyone who hires a lawyer is a *ward of the court*, according to Volume 7 CJS Attorney and Client, section 2
- Black's Law Dictionary says *wards of the court* are under government guardianship.
- Christ, at the Last Supper, warned his successors not to be like benefactors who rule one over the other. Jesus said in Luke 22:25-26 "... they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors, but ye shall not be so..."

*Disability* is a word that takes up a full page definition in the law dictionary.

Here is part of the definition from the Black's Law Dictionary, 1933 third edition, that existed when Congress wrote the Social Security Act in 1935.

At the present day, disability is generally used to indicate an incapacity for the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights; thus married women, persons under age, insane persons, and felons convict are said to be under disability. Sometimes the term is used in a more limited sense, as when it signifies an impediment to marriage, or the restraints placed upon clergymen by reason of their spiritual avocations. Mozley & Whitley.

A legal disability indicates "*an incapacity for the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights*".

is also used as equivalent to *legal* disability, both these expressions meaning disabilities or disqualifications created by positive law, as distinguished from *physical* disabilities.

Notice that a legal disability is created by positive law, to disqualify you from "*the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights*." If you are so destitute that you need to get a Social Security Number in order to survive, then you waive ordinary legal rights and become a ward of your guardian.

And here is the definition of *Parens Patriae*

**PARENS PATRIÆ.** Father of his country; parent of the country. In England, the king. In the United States, the state, as a sovereign—referring to the sovereign power of guardianship over persons under disability; In re Turner, 145 P. 871, 872, 94 Kan. 115, Ann. Cas. 1916E, 1022; such as minors, and insane and incompetent persons; McIntosh v. Dill, 86 Okl. 1, 205 P. 917, 925.

"*Guardianship over persons under disability*" (in other words, Guardianship over those who are disqualified by law from "*the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights*"), such as insane and incompetent persons. You have to be crazy to get a Social Security Number.

Your new daddy loves you. Daddy decides every aspect of family life. Welcome home.

- California Supreme Court Roberts v. Roberts (1947), 81 C.A.2d. 871: "*The state is a party to every marriage contract of its own residents as well as the guardians of their morals*"
- Tillman v. Roberts, 108 So. 62: "*The primary control and custody of infants is with the government*"



### 4.11 Does getting an SSN change your citizenship?

Governments are created to protect rights. Do you have a right to take care of yourself or do you need to get government permissions (prescriptions to survive, permits to repair your back porch, licenses to contract with others, wage authorization number, etc)?

Before you can understand how getting "just a silly number" changed your citizenship, you must first understand the topics introduced in other chapters:

1. Individual Welfare is not a function of government except to save your life. Any other interpretation of the Constitution would be "subversive to the whole theory upon which the Union of these States is founded." According to President Pierce. And well after the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment President Cleveland insisted, "the government should not support the people". See the chapter Welfare Part 2.
2. Applying for a welfare program financed with federal funds under The Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II) (unstated: to save your life) is a confession that you cannot take care of yourself. They don't have to tell you that it is ONLY to save your life. Ignorance of the law is no excuse. You are presumed to know the law. By applying for a SSN, you falsified a federal document.
  - *Busser v. Snyder* "An Old Age Assistance Law is prohibited by a constitutional provision that no appropriation shall be made for charitable or benevolent purposes to any person.... The term 'poor,' as used by lawmakers, describes those who are destitute and helpless, unable to support themselves, and without means of support."

- *Edwards v. California* [314 U.S. 160](#) "...only persons who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them."

Congress relied on this narrow definition when they passed the Social Security Act. Anything else would have been unconstitutional. If this is not true about you, then you falsified a SS-5 application for a Social Security Card in order to qualify for programs funded in part by federal funds. This is covetousness, fraud, worship of an alternate lord/provider, theft from the treasury, and a confession that you cannot manage your own affairs. And most importantly -- **dependent** upon a Novus Ordo Seclorum for your **livelihood**. We will find that employment is not really employment, when we study the Social Security Act implications for **dependent** workers earning a **livelihood** (the highlighted words are used in *Schwing v. United States*, 165 F.2d. 518).

3. Once you beg for federal funds to save your life, there is created a constructive contract to manage your affairs for you -- You become a ward of the Federal government. *Kitchens v. Steel*: "A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government"
4. Rights come with responsibilities. If you cannot be responsible enough to take care of yourself, you lose your rights.
  - Once you have a SSN, you lose your religious beliefs to "overriding government interests" according to the Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Lee* (455 U.S. 252) (unstated: even if no longer necessary in order to save your life).
  - You lose your right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable. The Social Security Act Title VIII section 801, and Section 3101(a) of the Internal Revenue Code both use identical words to subject you to "other taxes". Hint: The constructive contract to manage the affairs of a ward prohibits the ward from enriching himself at the expense of others. You must now "pay your fair share" of socialism.
5. Socialists cannot be citizens. Never could. According to the Sauer case, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358.

The purpose of this chapter is to introduce the concept that citizenship is an allegiance to a world power, not a membership within a group of people. Once you are subject to outside jurisdiction, then you cannot complain.

Later we will learn that Social Security Numbers are not issued by any agency of the United States Government.

You first need to understand the overall plan. Here is the plan: Christians will judge angels according to 1 Corinthians 6:3. If Satan can get every self-called Christian to contract with him, then there will be no Christians, and Satan will have no judges.

CITIZENSHIP IS NOT WHAT IT USED TO BE. Once upon a time Citizens were people who created government, or inherited control of government from their predecessors (and have a duty to control their civil servants). CITIZENSHIP WAS CREATED BY PEOPLE. Now citizenship is a credential from a graven image. NOW CITIZENSHIP IS GOVERNMENT CREATED.

Family is the highest form of government. The family patriarch is the head of government. Society is created when one family is not large enough to contain everyone according to Locke and Rutherford. Neighbors then formed what were called "assemblies" to band together for mutual protection of their rights and to discuss affairs of state. People are members of the society they created. People are not members of a graven image. There was no such nonsense as citizenship in a subordinate artificial entity of the society you created. Nor was there any such nonsense as citizenship of a government meeting of representatives (that is, no citizenship of "The United States in Congress Assembled"). Societies then created county governments, which then created States. They created States by writing a Constitution then voting to ratify it.

Everyone had the right to execute murderers and child rapists and other crimes against nature. No one would create a graven image that could execute someone (possibly shedding innocent blood on their behalf -- although their greater moral dilemma was that government punishment was by the consent of the governed -- and no one had the authority to consent to suicide by judge) and people would never entrust their lives to the monster they created. So the right to execute murderers does not come from government, it comes from divine authority, and is delegated to the civil servants from their masters. As Blackstone so eloquently explained in his Book 4 introduction "*magistrates must bear the sword of justice by the consent of the whole community...*[even foreign diplomats could be executed if they violated the divine laws of nature]"

US Supreme Court in *Luther v. Borden*, 48 U.S. 1, 12 L.Ed. 581:  
 "...The sovereignty in every state resides in the people of the state and they may alter and change their form of government at their own pleasure."

Once you swear an oath, or raise your hand, then you become subservient to government civil servants. You become a third level of abstraction away from real power. And you cannot then delegate any authority upward.

After the State governments created the federal government as a subsidiary artificial entity, there were still no federal citizens, only state citizens. It does not make sense to have a U.S. federal citizenship, after all, people created government. People are not members of an artificially created subsidiary of the States they created. No one would ever think like that.

How could anyone be a member of a subordinate (self-made, graven) subsidiary you created? No one would think like that. Those who lived in the District of Columbia could not possibly be citizens. They did not create their government. No one would think like that. God creates people, people create State governments, State governments created a federal government. The federal government was to be controlled by a once a year meeting of your representatives in Congress. The Fourteenth Amendment used the color of law to create an artificial citizenship that the States had to honor. As discussed in an earlier chapter, there are now two citizenships; an artificial, juridical, government-created citizenship: citizenship of the United States; and the natural citizenship of a state... Now national citizenship stood on its own.

Yes, one can now be a member of a graven image and ignore what was once "natural citizenship" that had the Almighty lawgiver as the authority for your government.

But once you claim to be a U.S. Citizen, even if you are also a natural citizen,

You would owe allegiance to two governments.

#### **4.11.1 Natural birth does not create citizenship**

Many people think they are citizens by birth. This nonsense comes from a deliberate misconstruing of the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment.

If you have ever asked a Catholic if he is born again, you will understand that membership-by-birth is a Catholic fable.

<p>Fourteenth Amendment, first sentence of the first section</p>
<p>SECTION. 1. All persons<sup>1</sup> born<sup>2</sup> or naturalized in the United States<sup>3</sup> and subject to<sup>4</sup> the<sup>5</sup> jurisdiction thereof, are citizens<sup>6</sup> of the United States and of the State wherein<sup>7</sup> they reside<sup>8</sup>.</p>
<p>1. The word <a href="#">Persons</a> is plural. But the English language plural of the word person is <i>people</i>, not <i>persons</i>. This is because People are not persons. We the People created a government. Government did not create people. God creates people. (or as Blackstone so eloquently stated: “Neither could any other law possibly exist; for ... <b>we are all equal</b>, without any other superior but him who is the author of our being.”) Government creates persons. (two levels of abstraction inferior to the people who are masters of the Government they created). Government only deals with persons, not people.</p> <p>2. People suffer a biological birth, and are recorded in their father's family Bible. Persons are created by paperwork recorded in their author's records. A government birth certificate does not create a human child, but IT DOES create a person -- at least in the government's reasoning, but not in the English language. For example: corporations are "<i>persons born or naturalized in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof</i>"  <b>Corporations are "persons" as that word is used in the first clause of the XIVth Amendment; Covington &amp; L. Turnp. Co. v. Sandford, 17 S.Ct. 198, 164 U.S. 578, 41 L.Ed. 560; Smyth v. Ames, 18 S.Ct. 418, 169 U.S. 466, 42 L.Ed. 819; People v. Fire Ass'n, 92 N.Y. 311, 44 Am.Rep. 380; U. S. v. Supply Co., 30 S.Ct. 15, 215 U.S. 50, 54 L.Ed. 87;</b></p> <p>That's right. Corporations are government created persons, born in the United States. Your all capitalized name on your birth certificate and ID cards is not a proper noun. In the English language, it is not even the name of a person, place or thing. But it was born in the United States and subject to the jurisdiction thereof.</p> <p>3. "The United States" refers only to the District of Columbia and the territories according to the Supreme Court in <a href="#">Elk v. Wilkins</a>. Not the States according to the earlier quoted Supreme Court <a href="#">Slaughter-House Cases</a>, <a href="#">83 U.S. 36</a> (1873)</p> <p>4. You also have to be "and subject to the jurisdiction". See <a href="#">Elk v. Wilkins</a> <a href="#">112 U.S. 94</a>, for the extent to which you must be subject. (" not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but completely subject to...")  Keep in mind that even after the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment, people within the territories voted to become states in order free themselves from federal jurisdiction. Also keep in mind that after the Civil War, the Supreme Court in <a href="#">Ex Parte Milligan</a>, <a href="#">71 U.S. 2</a> said that state courts are available to protect their citizens from the federal government.</p> <p>5. The singular jurisdiction, not plural states' jurisdictions. Therefore birth within any state is not birth within this meaning of "the United States" as was explained in <a href="#">Elk</a></p> <p>6. The word <i>citizen</i> is always lower case in the five occurrences in the Fourteenth Amendment. Your Constitution has all eleven prior occurrences of <i>Citizen(s)</i> capitalized. Did congress forget the English language?</p> <p>7. There are three other problems with the theory that the Fourteenth Amendment somehow proves that birth establishes citizenship "of the State wherein they reside." First, this phrase refers to the State government venue that the person is in (or moved to) after his paperwork birth in the District of Columbia. And the second is that the Slaughter-House case, quoted earlier, proves a man may "<i>be a citizen of the United States without being a citizen of a state.</i>" And third is that State Citizenship is not established by birth. We know from the 1941 US Supreme Court in <a href="#">Edwards v. California</a> <a href="#">314 U.S. 160</a> at the bottom of page 183 "<i>birth within a state does not establish citizenship thereof.</i>"  You have to apply for federal citizenship.  Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383: "A <i>citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government</i>"</p>

8. A Resident has no Personal liberty.

Black's Law Dictionary, *first edition (published in 1891 long after the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment)* gives this definition of Resident: "RESIDENT: A tenant, who was obliged to reside on his lord's land, and not depart from the same, a resident may not be entitled to all the privileges or subject to all the duties of an inhabitant. 9 Wend. 11."

That's right! A resident is not allowed to leave his lord's land.

*Black's Law Dictionary*, first edition gives us the definition of personal liberty:

"Personal liberty consists in the power of locomotion, of changing situation, of removing one's person to whatever place one's inclination may direct, without imprisonment or restraint unless by due course of law. 1 Bl. Comm. 134"

An earlier definition of resident, in Vattel's Law of Nations, which is a classic book about international law, in Chapter 19, says that [residents are aliens](#) who do not enjoy the rights of citizenship.

As you can see, A RESIDENT IS SOMEONE WHO HAS NO LIBERTY. An earlier definition of resident, in Vattel's Law of Nations, which is a classic book about international law, in Chapter 19, says that [residents are aliens](#) who do not enjoy the rights of citizenship.

As you can see, the Fourteenth Amendment was not a scheme whereby civil servants created their own masters out of a piece of paper. It was a scheme whereby they created children out of a piece of paper. All they needed was an application to be born into the United States government and subject to its jurisdiction.

#### **4.11.2 Citizenship is allegiance to a government.**

John Locke's Second Treatise of government, which was the foundation for most of the Declaration of Independence, in his Chapter 6 "Paternal rights", says that a child is not subject to legislated laws until he is old enough to make binding contracts. He said in paragraph 57: "*for nobody can be under a law, which is not promulgated to him*" and later in paragraph 73 when children become 21 years old they can choose which government to place themselves under, and, according to paragraph 62, this cannot happen until they have the recognized right to take binding oaths of allegiance.

Applying for a passport presumes an oath of Allegiance Title 22 CFR §6-212. And now the [Real ID](#) driver licenses of most states do the same thing.

Allegiance is defined by Homeland Security in their [Title 8, Code of Federal Regulations, section 337](#) as a commitment

*"... I will perform work of national importance under civilian direction when required by the law; and that I take this obligation freely without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; so help me God"*

Is this prayer to the same God that freed the slaves from Pharaoh and Caesar? Or is this a reference to the Roman Gods that are glorified in the District of Columbia? -- If their words "so help me God" is the Biblical God and Jesus is Lord, then why do they want us to swear to the Biblical God that we will obey the lordship of ungodly civil-servants?

That's right, if you get a passport or Real ID driver license, then you have worshiped your new masters. You will perform unlimited hours of work for as long as they want you. Sounds like slavery. How harsh will be this "work of national importance" that you agreed to perform for 24 hours a day for the rest of your life? Even Compton's dictionary says that statute labor is often indistinguishable from slavery.

Communism is state ownership of the means of production. You are the means of production.

Real ID is a real nightmare. Real ID has nothing to do with keeping us safe from terrorists. It has everything to do with tattooing us with a number just like the Nazi's did to concentration camp inmates.

Thomas Jefferson, while he was Vice-President, in the Kentucky Resolves, reassured them that there are only three federal laws that apply within a state. The three criminal laws mentioned in your Constitution: piracy, treason, and counterfeiting. James Madison, in the Virginia Resolves also concluded that states had a right to interfere with the federal government's laws it considered unconstitutional.

US Supreme Court in Foley Brothers v. Filardo, 336 U.S. 281:

"It is a well established principle of law that all federal legislation applies only within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States unless a contrary intent appears"

Except for the original 13 states, federal territories became states in order to free themselves from federal jurisdiction. If you are subject to federal jurisdiction, then something must have changed. The only thing that changed was your allegiance.

And we know that The U.S. Supreme Court in Ex Parte Milligan, 71 U.S. 2, determined that States have a duty to protect their citizens from the federal government.

We know from the U.S. Supreme Court in Elk v. Wilkins in 1884 (112 U.S. 94) that Mr. Elk was not subject to federal jurisdiction even though he was native born and lived in Kansas.

YES, ONE CAN BE A CITIZEN OF A STATE BUT NOT A CITIZEN OF THE UNITED STATES.

The Maryland Supreme Court in 1966 ruled in Crosse v. Board of Supervisors of Elections, 221 A.2d. 431:

*"Both before and after the Fourteenth Amendment to the federal Constitution, it has not been necessary of a person to be a citizen of the United States in order to be a citizen of his state..."*

and at page 434 quotes a Wisconsin Supreme Court ruling:

*"Under our complex system of government, there may be a citizen of a state, who is not a citizen of the United States..."*

We know from Powe v. U.S., 109 F.2d. 147, 149 (1940) that the term 'citizen' in federal laws excludes State citizens:

*"... a construction is to be avoided, if possible, that would render the law unconstitutional, or raise grave doubts thereabout. In view of these rules it is held that 'citizen' means 'citizen of the United States,' and not a person generally, nor citizen of a State ..."*

We know from the first sentence of the Fourteenth Amendment that

*'all persons born or naturalized in the united states, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof.'*

became federal citizens. After all, the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment was intended to allow federal government **to provide benefits to the freed slaves that had no way to support themselves.** And there was no law that allowed this, so they had to ratify an amendment.

- The 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment did not provide federal protection to the freed slaves according to the Cruikshank decision, it only provided benefits. The Cruikshank decision was a federal Supreme Court case where they refused to protect the freed slave, insisting that it was a state issue.
- And we know that the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment did not provide state benefits to the new U.S. Citizens
- Tashiro v. Jordan, 256 P. 545, was later affirmed by U.S. Supreme Court in 278 U.S. 123: *"There is clear distinction between national and State Citizenship, U.S. Citizenship does not entitle citizen of the privileges and immunities of the Citizen of the State"*

This is TRUE Even though your Constitution Article 4, section 2 guarantees "privileges and immunities" to Citizens of each state. And even though the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment made them\* "citizens of the state wherein they reside"

\* "artificial, juridical, government-created citizenship: citizenship of the United States" according to *Slaughter-House Cases*, 83 U.S. 36 (1873).

### 4.11.3 Citizen birth is not natural birth

Let's learn more about the slaves freed after the Civil War, and see if they also - just like the rest of us - had to apply for federal citizenship, and not natural birth, to become "US Citizens".

Perhaps you too, can become a ward of the government in order to become subject to federal laws. After all, the Tax Regulations right in front of the first book (so you don't have to search through all 20 books) Title 26 CFR section 1.1-1 defines what kind of citizen they are talking about.

(c) *Who is a citizen.* Every person born or naturalized in the United States and subject to its jurisdiction is a citizen. For other rules governing the acquisition of citizenship, see chapters 1 and 2 of title III of the Immigration and Nationality Act (8 U.S.C. 1401-1459). For

As you can see, you have to be subject to its singular jurisdiction, NOT any of the plural states' jurisdictions.

By the way the application form for a Social Security Number is the SS-5 form. It is issued by the IRS, not by the Social Security Administration, and the IRS is not an agency of the United States Government.

Before the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment slaves were not subject to federal jurisdiction because:

- 1) The fourteenth amendment "the jurisdiction thereof" is singular referring to the federal jurisdiction.
- 2) Maryland was able to keep the District of Columbia from freeing the slaves (more about this later). DC is within the Maryland border.
- 3) The Emancipation Proclamation could only free the southern slaves. Northern slaves were not free. Even Ulysses Grant kept his slaves throughout the war.

The Supreme Court in the *Cruikshank* case, 92 U.S. 551, was a case about the murderer of freed slaves after the Civil War:

*"It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."*

Notice the words "voluntarily submitted." DID YOUR BIRTH VOLUNTARILY SUBMIT YOURSELF TO GOVERNMENT?

NOTE that natural birth does not voluntarily submit yourself to government. It just doesn't meet the Supreme Courts' criteria. But the other kind of birth (corporate birth, granted after an application) does.

The Native American Indian in *Elk v. Wilkins* was not a U.S. Citizen even though he was born here, because, according to the Supreme Court, he was not also subject to the jurisdiction thereof. Slaves were therefore not born in the [federal] united states and subject to the [singular] jurisdiction thereof. They had to apply to be a ward of the federal government in order to get their 40 acres and a mule.

And of course, once you become a ward of anyone, you waive most of your rights. Your labor is now owned by your benefactor. You no longer have the right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable.

Are you a slave who has no way to support yourself?

If you have a SSN, then the answer is yes !

#### 4.11.4 Warning

You can voluntarily submit yourself to federal law.

Not only did you confess, on a federal document under penalty of perjury, that you had no way to support yourself, you also waived all of your rights. A right cannot be taxed. Since you do not have a right to earn wages, your wages are taxable as a gift.

How did the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment allow the freed slaves to become U.S. citizens?

- Did they have to get naturalized?
- Were they somehow automatically "subject to the jurisdiction of the United States"?
- Or were they "born" into the U.S. government? After all, corporations are born by merely registering with the government.
- Does being born at a state automatically make you a U.S. citizen? It didn't happen to Mr. Elk (from Kansas) or to Mr. Edwards (from Oklahoma). Can it happen to you?

Or were freed slaves converted into U.S. citizens the same way you were converted. By applying for federal welfare benefits. Benefits that are not available to those who can manage their own lives.

The application for a Social Security Number is only available to applicants eligible for programs funded by federal funds.

The Social Security Act, Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), requires applicants for Social Security Numbers to be an “*applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*”

Socialism is unconstitutional. Various authorities (The Constitution, the Bible, the Law-of-the-land, moral values, laws against theft and fraud, perjury laws for the application form, and the U.S. Supreme Court) allow only indigent persons to be eligible for programs funded by federal funds.

U.S. Supreme Court in Edwards v. California, [314 U.S. 160](#) at 172: “...*only persons who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them.*”

Once you become a ward of the government, guess what?

Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383:

*“A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government and of the state in which he resides, and one possessing such double citizenship owes allegiance ...[to each]... jurisdiction he is subject.”*

Once you become a ward of the government, The Social Security Act Title VIII section 801 requires you to pay Social Security AND OTHER TAXES. This is also repeated word-for-word in Section 3101(a) of the Internal Revenue Code: “***In addition to other taxes, there is hereby imposed on the income of every individual a tax equal to the following percentages of the wages...***”

The Supreme Court in the Cruikshank case, 92 U.S. 551, said: "It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

The new citizen cannot complain.

#### 4.12 Socialism is not compatible with Christianity

If Social Security is not insurance or a trust fund, then what is it?

It is the theft of socialism. Social Security is socialism. Socialism is theft. Theft is a sin.

There was never a promise to pay benefits according to the Supreme Court.

It cannot be both ways. In order to be a socialist, you must become a ward of the government. In order to live free, you must not be a ward of the government.

Rights can only come from responsibilities. You won't understand this yet, but those who accept public benefits cannot have rights.

Federal funds are not available to ordinary persons. Only indigents can qualify to receive federal benefits. It is highly unlikely that you ever qualified for a Social Security Card. Section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II) of the Social Security Act allows government to assign Social Security Numbers to applicants for benefits financed with government funds. Unless you need federal benefits to survive, Social Security Cards are not available to you. You cannot qualify for a number. That's right! SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBERS ARE NOT AVAILABLE TO THOSE WHO CAN PROVIDE FOR THEMSELVES. If you can still provide for yourself, or if your family or church or state can support you, it would be fraud to apply for federal benefits.

In the 1941 Supreme Court case Edwards v. California at [314 US 160](#) at 172, the legal term "indigent person" was given a very limited scope

*"... must be taken to include only persons who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them."*

Busser v. Snyder, 37 ALR 1515: "An Old Age Assistance Law **is prohibited by a constitutional provision** that no appropriation shall be made for charitable or benevolent purposes to any person."

Let me repeat this essential fact is several ways, until you understand: The application for an SS Card (the SS5 form) is a form limited to a very specific purpose. It is only for indigents who need federal funds. People who can provide for themselves cannot be indigent. Social Security Cards cannot be issued to anyone until they qualify for federal benefits. The government cannot know who is destitute; they must wait for applicants desperate enough to apply for federal funds. It must be voluntary. Social Security has no trust fund; it is solely a handout. Limited to government wards. Only socialists can qualify for a card (As you will find out on the next page, socialists are not even eligible for citizenship). ONLY THOSE WHO CANNOT SUPPORT THEMSELVES AND ARE WILLING TO ACCEPT SOCIALISM AND WILLING TO SWEAR SO WITH A PERJURY OATH ON A PERMANENT IRREVOCABLE RECORD, CAN QUALIFY TO RECEIVE A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER.

To remain constitutional, only wards of the government can receive benefits. This is a vow of poverty. You exchanged your rights to all future wages for the false promise of future benefits. You did so voluntarily. I'll discuss labor rights and poverty vows and taxable wages in other chapters.

According to the legal definition of "Tacit Procuration", you grant them the power of attorney if you expect them to provide for you. You create a constructive contract. You asked them to provide for you - To steal for you. Government does not and cannot create wealth, it must tax in order to give. Government cannot provide benefits unless it takes them from someone else. Socialism is theft of your neighbor's money. Your new master will take money from your neighbors, against their will, and over their objections. These civil servants will eventually resort to the force of guns, on your behalf, to seize property from any neighbor who stubbornly and repeatedly refuses to hand over whatever is demanded. It is theft. They call it distraint. It is not insurance.



In Matt 20:25-27 and Mark 10:42-43 and Luke 22:25-27 Jesus tells us to not have dominion over others, but to serve. CHRISTIANS SERVE. CHRISTIANS DON'T LORD over those who are not under them. Not by force, not by vote, not by hiring a servant and then delegating to the servant an authority to steal - an authority that you don't have. Again: Christians don't have dominion over their neighbors. You cannot tax your neighbors to fund your retirement.

Since there is no trust fund (nor can there be one) - Only by the deepest commitment to covetousness can you force others to pay for your retirement (or pay your doctor bills, or pay to educate your children). You are coveting your neighbors' goods. You are forcing your dominion over those who are not subject to your authority, contrary to Christ's command.

Conversely, if your bank account and property can be seized to pay for your neighbor's retirement (or doctor bills or tuition), then you must have somehow lost your right to keep 'your' property or money. What do you suppose that you signed to waive any right to keep 'your' property?

Have you become surety? The security in Social Security is social. Look up "social insurance" in a law dictionary. You have become surety for your neighbor. Proverbs 11:15 "He that is surety for a stranger shall smart for it: and he that hateth suretyship is sure." Also: Proverbs 17:18

Only wards of the government (card carrying socialists) can receive the benefits of National Socialism.

SS is not a trust fund or insurance, it is an excise tax on the benefits of a limited citizenship (including the government granted privilege of earning wages). This tax revenue goes into the general fund. Authority for this taxation comes from the Buck Act, not the Internal Revenue Code. It is presumed, but not required, that congress will appropriate funds each year for maintenance of the government wards. The Supreme Court ruled in 1960 that Social Security benefits are not based on a fixed contract and therefore can change or be eliminated at any time. *Flemming v. Nestor*, 80 S.Ct. 1367. They ruled that Congress can adjust "to ever-changing conditions which it demands and which Congress probably had in mind when it expressly reserved the right to alter, amend or repeal any provision of the Act"

In the 1891 naturalization case of Mr. Sauer, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358 the court held that Mr. Sauer, although an industrious, law abiding man, could not become a citizen because he claimed to be a Socialist. SOCIALISTS COULD NOT BECOME CITIZENS. And they still cannot. I have another chapter that cites every court case where people were forced to get Social Security numbers. Every case is a welfare applicant. Social Security Numbers are only for socialists. Socialists cannot have rights. Read on the Government definition of "citizen" and prove to yourself that they have changed their citizenship and are not protected by the first eight amendments to your Constitution (*Twining v. New Jersey* and also the Hague case) and do not have the right to a trial by jury (*Colegate* case). If you want to loose your birthright just fill out a form claiming socialist benefits. If you think you still have a right to a trial by jury, read my chapter on your right to a trial by jury.

A Christian cannot be a socialist. Christians are not to associate with freeloaders, according to 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14:

2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6 (NIV): In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers, to keep away from every brother who is idle and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.

3:7 For you yourselves know how you ought to follow our example. We were not idle when we were with you,

3:8 nor did we eat anyone's food without paying for it. On the contrary, we worked night and day, laboring and toiling so that we would not be a burden to any of you.

3:9 We did this, not because we do not have the right to such help, but in order to make ourselves a model for you to follow.

3:10 For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "If a man will not work, he shall not eat."

I want to interject a note here: this isn't a snobbish threat to starve the poor, it is a fundamental Biblical principle. In the same sentence where God condemned us to die, he condemned us to work for food. That's right! To acknowledge socialism is to deny God's authority. Genesis 3:19 (KJV): "In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return." The socialists that want you to provide not only their food but also health care, deny God's authority to sentence us to hardships.

3:11 We hear that some among you are idle. They are not busy; they are busybodies.

3:12 Such people we command and urge in the Lord Jesus Christ to settle down and earn the bread they eat.

3:13 And as for you, brothers, never tire of doing what is right.

3:14 If anyone does not obey our instruction in this letter, take special note of him. Do not associate with him, in order that he may feel ashamed."

That the freeloader may feel ashamed. I've been told that I am too sarcastic just because I quote the Bible.

Do not confuse voluntary charity with forced socialism. Christians are often in need of charity, yet cannot accept socialism.

Does the Bible support the notion that socialism can provide for Christians? Let's take a closer look:

- 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 2:9 (NIV): " Surely you remember, brothers, our toil and hardship; we worked night and day in order not to be a burden to anyone ..."
- 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:11-12 "work with your hands...so that you will not be dependent on anybody."
- 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 4:11 (NIV): "To this very hour we go hungry and thirsty, we are in rags, we are brutally treated, we are homeless." [note: they were homeless but they were not freeloaders. Even Christ was homeless, Matt 8:20, Luke 9:58.]
- Proverbs 21:25 (KJV): "The desire of the slothful killeth him; for his hands refuse to labour."
- Ephesians 4:28 (NIV): "He who has been stealing must steal no longer, but must work, doing something useful with his own hands, that he may have something to share with those in need."
- Acts 14:22 (NIV) ..."We must go through many hardships to enter the kingdom of God," [You will understand this after you study the topic of citizenship]
- Luke 19:26 (NIV): "He replied, 'I tell you that to everyone who has, more will be given, but as for the one who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away.'"
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 11:9 (NIV) And when I was with you and needed something, I was not a burden to anyone,... I have kept myself from being a burden to you in any way, and will continue to do so.
- 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 7:2 (NIV) ... we have exploited no one.
- Jesus is quoted in Matthew 25:29-30 (KJV) For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
- Proverbs 13:4 (NIV) The sluggard craves and gets nothing, but the desires of the diligent are fully satisfied.
- Proverbs 20:4 (KJV) The sluggard will not plow by reason of the cold; therefore shall he beg in harvest, and have nothing.

If a Christian cannot be a socialist, then a Christian cannot have an ID card available only to socialists.

Theodore Roosevelt: "The first requisite of a citizen in this Republic of ours, is that he shall be able and willing to pull his own weight."

As further proof that socialists have never had rights, in my chapter on the government definition of citizenship read where the Articles of Confederation extended the rights of citizenship to inhabitants with the exceptions of paupers and vagabonds and fugitives. A vagrant is not a vagabond. Even Christ was homeless Matt (8:20, Luke 9:58). A vagabond is a homeless freeloader. A pauper is a person that must be supported at public expense. Social Security partakers are supported at public expense, therefore cannot have the rights of citizens anymore than a fugitive would have.

Conclusions so far: Socialists must become wards of their provider. The U.S. Government cannot constitutionally be a provider of benefits, but it can administer foreign funds as their agent. There is no Social Security trust fund, there is no insurance, and there is no pension. It is plunder. It is pure orthodox socialism. Socialists are not and cannot become citizens. Socialists cannot have rights. Never could, still can't. Christians cannot be socialists. Christians cannot have socialist ID. Did your government school teach you this?

Quote from Frederic Bastiat in 1850:

*"When plunder becomes a way of life for a group of men living together in a society, they create for themselves in the course of time, a legal system that authorizes it and a moral code that glorifies it."*

### 4.12.1 Public education

Karl Marx wrote the *Communist Manifesto* in 1848. Public schools is the 10<sup>th</sup> plank. As I said earlier: Those who accept public benefits cannot have rights. Rights can only come from responsibilities. You have no right to force others to pay your children's' tuition. Hillary's village will raise the children of those who forfeit their rights to their own children. Even the U.S. Supreme Court in *Meyer v. Nebraska*, 262 U.S. 390, concluded "it is the natural duty of the parent to give his children education suitable to their station in life..."

The U.S. Supreme Court in *Plyler v. Doe*, 457 U.S. 202, concluded,

- "...education is not a fundamental right..."
- "the Fourteenth Amendment's protection extends to anyone, citizen or stranger, who is subject to the laws of a State..."

US Congressman in the 1840's Robert Dale Owen, later known as the father of American socialism, believed that the Christian faith hindered man's evolution. An Owen associate wrote:

*"The great object was to get rid of Christianity and to convert our churches into halls of science... the plan was not to make open attacks upon religion – although we might belabor the clergy and bring them into contempt where we could ... but to establish a system of state – we said national – schools... from which all religion would be excluded and to which all parents were to be compelled by law to send their children."*

These views influenced John Dewey at the Columbia Teacher's College, and by 1900 a socialist system of compulsory schools, which exclude religion, became a reality.

Abraham Lincoln warned us:

*"The philosophy of the school room in one generation will be the philosophy of government in the next."*

Source: McDowell and Beliles *America's Providential History*, page 79

For further study on this topic, start with [www.sepschool.org](http://www.sepschool.org)

Another excellent web site is [www.hisholychurch.net/net/homeschool.htm](http://www.hisholychurch.net/net/homeschool.htm)

### 4.12.2 Summary

The seven-headed scarlet beast is a socialist confederation of beast powers that raised up from the sea. The sea symbolizes multitudes of people (Revelation 17:5). Seas of people (democracies) demand socialist benefits. These people received not the love of the truth that they might be saved. They want to be taken care of, but not by God. They won't accept the responsibility to take care of themselves, or suffer God's trials. They fabricated a counterfeit image of God to provide for them and protect them. They get their rights from their god that they created. They expect you to worship their counterfeit image of God. In their courts, your rights come from the god they created.

Abraham Lincoln, September 11, 1858, (years before the civil war):

*"Accustomed to trampling on the rights of others, you have lost the genius of your own independence and become the fit subjects of the first cunning tyrant who rises among you."*

### 4.13 Will the Lord punish someone for getting a Social Security Number?

- Why would those who are only obeying authority “be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb” per Revelation 14:10?
- Why would I be forced to drink God’s wrath, per Revelation 14:10-11 just for getting a number?
- Certainly, getting the Mark of the Beast must be some overt sin that all Christians would know to avoid. How can a Social Security Number be the Mark, it’s just a silly number?
- Getting the mark is tantamount to slapping God’s face, how can getting a silly number be even remotely similar to such a sin?

You will not understand the answers unless you are ready for the answers. It’s a lot like trying to explain that a just and loving God was wrathful against Adam and Eve, and us descendants, even though the fruit was just a silly fruit. It is not about the fruit, it is about mutiny against God. Mutiny, even if fraudulently induced by deception, is punishable by death. Before you can understand the answers to the above questions, you must first understand Lordship, authority, oaths, and worship.

And yes, taking a SS number is slapping God in the face. For many reasons.

- SSN application is by a perjury oath signature. Oaths are always a form of worship (violating the first commandment).
- Oaths also violate Matt 5:34, James 5:12. It is worship of a superior, Hebrews 6:16.
- Applying for SS number requires swearing, on a permanent irrevocable record, that Caesar is Lord.
- SS numbers are only issued to wards who need government funds (according to section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) of the Social Security Act), yet Christians cannot associate with freeloaders (according to 2 Thessalonians 3:5-15).
- If you didn’t need federal funds, then you had to falsify a federal application to get a number. Theft, covetousness, and false witness, even if you don’t count worship.
- Once you are a ward of whoever takes over the government, then you must obey their laws. Regardless of how abhorrent or repugnant. Regardless of how evil they become.
- You are no longer one of the (“We the People”) Christian masters who created government to secure rights endowed by The Creator. You are now sworn to allegiance to civil servants who have no respect for anything Christian.
- You have forever turned your back on the proper chain-of-command. Like Esau, you sold your birthright. God hated Esau. Once you get a SS number, you don’t even have the right to earn wages [thereby making your wages taxable as a gift].
- You participated in creating a host of providers and saviors to regulate your life, protect you, lord over you and insure you against God’s cataclysms. Certainly this qualifies as a man-made (graven) image.
- But your lords also demand worship. You were commanded to not bow down to them, nor worship them. And, you even give them the firstfruits of your labor (withholding).

#### LORDSHIP

Allow me to describe this lordship concept with several different terms: mastership, ruler, sovereign, protector, boss, your chain of command. You are under a government whether you like it or not, but only one government. You cannot serve two masters. Christ said “he that is not with me is against me” (Luke 11:23, Matt 12:30). You are to rely upon Him for your protection and welfare (Psalm 40:17, 118:8-9, Matthew 6:25-34, 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 9:8, Philippians 4:19, etc.) God’s first commandment prohibits you from having other Gods (Hebrew: *‘elohiyim*) before Him (= outrank Him).

Satan has a counterfeit authority for you to obey. You must choose which chain of command you are in. Satan’s counterfeit is very difficult to discern. When a state demands that it be recognized as the caretaker of the elderly, or educator of children, or judge of whatever abominations are to be morally acceptable, then it is demanding recognition as God.

Is your chain of command under Christ or under Satan? Even people tormented under Satan can be saved (1st Corinthians 5:5). As with any chain-of-command, the commanding officer is held responsible for the mistreatment of his prisoners and subordinates.

A closer look at translations would help explain this Lordship concept. By reading the English translations, you cannot tell if the word `Lord' refers to the Almighty or to a human boss. The word "LORD" is translated from several different words:

- H3050 *yahh*,
- H3069, *yehovih*,
- H136 *adonay*,
- H113 *adown* - meaning lord, master, owner, sovereign, or controller,
- H3068 *yehovah* or
- H430 *'elohiym* as in the first commandment which is also translated as god, mighty, gods, judges, goddess, angels and magistrate.

The reference numbers are from *Strong's Concordance*.

I repeat again: The first commandment prohibits you from having other rulers or judges as a higher authority than God.

In the Greek New Testament the word LORD is translated from

- G2962 *kurios*, meaning authority, master, God, Lord, or sir; and from
- G1203 *despot* - meaning Lord, absolute ruler or master.

These are the only two Lords in the New Testament, neither of which exclusively refers to the Lord Almighty, so you cannot be sure which kind of master the word LORD refers to.

Example: Christ said that you cannot serve two Lords (G2962 *kurios* in both Luke 16:13 and Matt 6:24). You cannot serve both God and mammon (mammon=G3126 wealth personified or greed).

The Greek word for God is *Theos*, which means "a magistrate." In Roman days you would address a judge as a god. Emperors were referred to as Apo Theos, creator of gods. This lordship continued down through the centuries with the kings claiming divine authority to rule. Feudal liege lords retained authority over their subjects. Even today the word *landlord* retains the lord suffix. In Canada today, judges are still addressed as "Your Worshipfulness." In court your plea is still called a "prayer." The painting on the ceiling of your Capitol dome is titled *Apotheos of George Wahsington*. He was the creator of your judge gods.

Does your "first citizen" still claim to have god powers? On May 14, 1998 Clinton released Executive Order Number 13083 entitled *Federalism*. The presidency claims "a Federal Government of supreme ... powers." And as for U.S. citizens, Federal law has the power "... to define the moral, political, and legal character of their lives."

Yes. Your god defines every moral, political and legal character of your life. The Roman Civil Law of today is a mirror image of the iron beast that trampled down the whole earth and broke it to pieces (as in Dan 7:23). Could this mirror image be the image of the beast brought to life in Revelation 13:15? Do they demand worship? Do they speak blasphemy? The answers seem so obvious to me; I don't understand why others cannot see this.

The law courts in the United States enforce and perpetuate the Roman Civil Law. Black's Law Dictionary says this is "*The system of jurisprudence held and administered in the Roman empire...as set forth in the compilation of Justinian and his successors...*" [side note so you don't get confused if you study this: ever since the Norman Conquest of 1066, English Law has been forced to conform]. [Another side note: the old Supreme Court chambers in the U.S. Capitol building, used prior to 1935, is engraved with a bust of Justinian]

Whom do you serve? Who takes care of you? Who's chain of command are you in? Protection draws subjection. Do you acknowledge that Jesus has been given all authority in heaven and earth? It is His will that you must obey, and you will be judged on the judgement day according to His will, not man's will. Masters (Lords) take care of their subordinates. If God is your Lord, and not the state, then He will provide for you, not the state. He will, perhaps through his church continuing "the perfect law of liberty," take care of widows and orphans (James 1:25,27). He will take care of the handicapped. He will (perhaps through the family, 1<sup>st</sup> Tim 5:8, or a church) take care of the elderly, not the state god. His church encourages the unemployed "to work with your hands ... so that you will not be dependent on anybody." 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:12 (NIV). He has promised not to forsake you.

Lords grant permission. Whoever you ask for permission to do something is your lord. Permission to get married, permission to buy medications, permission to travel, and, of course the very reason you got a number in the first place: permission to sell “your” labor. Later on, I will show you that you grant the power of attorney to anyone who you allow to manage your affairs because it can be presumed that you cannot manage yourself.

You have created a host of Lords to regulate your life, be your savior, accept your worship, and lord over you. Shame.

Judges 10:14 (KJV) "Go and cry unto the gods which ye have chosen; let them deliver you in the time of your tribulation."

YES, GETTING A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER IS SLAPPING GOD’S FACE. HOW CAN YOU INSIST THESE SINS WILL GO UNPUNISHED? (And yes, I confess. I did slap God’s face. When I was 16 years old I was told to get an SS Card in order to qualify for employment. I dutifully bowed down to the mighty god they had created.)

Now to answer the question as to why God would punish someone for getting a number. Since you are presumed to have the Commandments in your forehead and on your right hand; Any of these Commandments (laws) would suffice:

*Acknowledging the name (authority) of false saviors, worshiping (taking oaths to or saluting) false gods, covetousness, swearing, taking God's authority in vain, serving graven images, or committing the theft of socialism.*

And that’s just from the commandments. My list didn’t even include falsifying the application form, or firstfruits offering (withholding) to fund abominations, or violating God’s work ethic during retirement, or undermining the family’s responsibility to care for their elderly, or creating a host of bureaucrats (benefactors, Luke 22:25) to rule over you, or creating judges (‘elohiyim) who demand worship.

Zechariah 5:3 "... every thief will be banished, ... everyone who swears falsely will be banished."

Jesus said “swear not.” - Matthew 5:34 and also see James 5:12. All oaths are oaths of allegiance to higher authority. Hebrews 6:16 - Men swear by someone greater than themselves. It is perfectly acceptable to take your oaths to the Lord. The Lord is your lawgiver. But if you swear an oath to other gods, just once, then you forsake your lawgiver and acknowledge another power as your higher authority. You have other gods before you. You have bowed down to them. You have used the Almighty’s name in vain.

Do not put your faith in man made laws. If your rights and protections come from a constitution, then you are worshiping created things, not the Creator. If the state is your paternal provider and protector, then you are worshiping an idol. The first commandment says Thou shall have no other God before me. Does the state provide for your welfare, old age care, safety, and even protection from barking dogs? Does it force others to pay for your unemployment benefits, pension, worker’s compensation, medical insurance? If so, then you are worshiping a socialist god.

The Lord himself will give you strong delusion in proportion to the idols that you worship. Ezekiel 14: 4 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:11.

In Revelation 14:9-11 a divine messenger tell us that those who receive the mark are damned. The very next verse contrasts those who are damned with those who kept the commandments. Revelation 14:12 (KJV) "Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus." Apparently, those who keep the commandments will know enough to avoid deception.

Adam and Eve had a duty to avoid deception. They and you too, had to suffer the consequences of falling for deception. Christ told his disciples to “take heed that no man deceive you.” We too, can avoid deception by obeying the commandments. If we are deceived then we will learn the hard way that we should have obeyed.

For alternate explanations go to

[www.mercyseat.net/BROCHURES/ssnarticle.htm](http://www.mercyseat.net/BROCHURES/ssnarticle.htm) or to  
<http://presys.com/~ekkleisia/chvca.htm> and to  
<http://presys.com/~ekkleisia/eve.htm>

1<sup>st</sup> John 3:4 (KJV) ...for sin is the transgression of the law.

### 4.13.1 Who then can be saved?

This is the same question asked by the disciples. I cannot answer it. Only the sovereign Judge can pronounce the verdict. As it was when the disciples questioned their salvation, you also cannot foreknow your salvation until the Judge pronounces your verdict.

I cannot answer the question, but

- I can tell you that narrow is the way that leads unto life, and there are few who find it (Matthew 7:14).
- And I can tell you that the men of Nineveh never heard the gospel of salvation by the blood of Christ, yet Christ himself said they will rise up on the judgment day to condemn us (Matthew 12:41).
- And I can tell you that Christians will obey Jesus. And those who call him Lord, Lord and do not the things which he says (Luke 6:46) must accept the consequences.
- And I can tell you that the saints at Philippi had to work out their salvation with fear and trembling. (Philippians 2:12)
- And Christ told you that those who endure until the end shall be saved (Matt 24:13 and Mark 13:13 and Matt 10:22)
- And the righteous shall scarcely be saved. (1 Peter 4:18)

### 4.13.2 Commandments

Some people say that it is legalism to obey the Ten Commandments and we should not even attempt it. But when Jesus was asked what to do to inherit eternal life in Matthew 19:17 he responded that we should keep the commandments, then he listed most of the commandments from Exodus 20. Those who love the Lord will obey him.

In Revelation 14:9-11 the third angel discusses punishment of those who worship the beast and have the mark. Revelation 14:12 then changes the subject abruptly. It contrasts those who receive the mark with those who obey the commandments. Apparently the end-time avoidance of the mark will involve keeping the commandments. Perhaps even leading to victory over the mark mentioned in the very next chapter at Revelation 15:2.

The Commandments present problems to people who believe in easy salvation. People don't want to believe that they will drink God's wrath and be tormented with fire and brimstone, and have no rest, day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receives the mark.

- Rickerberry translation of Revelation 14:9 if anyone does homage to the beast and **its** image
- Rickerberry translation of Revelation 14:11 and the smoke of their torment goes up to ages of ages, and they have no respite day and night who do homage to the beast and **its** image
- Revelation 14:11 Tyndale translation "... and they have no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the **print** of his name."

I've added this chapter because people expect me to have advice on how to cancel their Social Security Number. People accuse me of damning them, with no hope of salvation. I've been accused of being paranoid, fearful, negative, indignant, and not having the joy of Jesus.

People say that having a Social Security card cannot damn them because they are Christian; they are saved by grace; Christ's blood paid the penalty for their sin. I cannot respond to these statements because I am not your sovereign. I can only tell you what Christ said. Christ warned that the men of Nineveh—who never heard the gospel – would rise up on the judgment day to condemn us (Matthew 12:41). All us sinners will NOT be saved. It seems to be very arrogant for any sinner to insist that "God will save me just because I call myself a Christian." (as in Luke 18:14).

Jesus is our only hope for salvation; no one can save himself or herself. All I do is quote from the Bible and reference some verifiable facts. Your assignment is to decide whether or not to live in the fear of God's wrath. Christ warned you to fear him who can slam you into hell (Matthew 10:28 and Luke 12:5) You get to decide whether or not to obey the Ten Commandments. I'm just a shouting watchman warning people to the dangers of false authority. Have I become your enemy because I tell the truth?



You must decide between beast worship to buy/sell and Christ worship. Christ says if your right hand offends you, cut it off. I'm sure that He was using a metaphor to say that this is not going to be easy.

Some people believe in easy salvation based upon Romans 10:9: confess that Jesus is Lord and was raised from the dead and you WILL BE saved.

- In my way of thinking, the words "Jesus is Lord" is not a chant to command The Eternal Lord to open heaven's gate, but it is an oath of allegiance to obey your Lord, to the exclusion of all other gods (per the 1<sup>st</sup> commandment). You will not force The Almighty to save you by chanting a mystical incantation.
- Matthew 7:21 (NIV) "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven."
- My paraphrase of Romans 10:9: confess by your actions, not just words, that Jesus is your government and you will be saved. (More about this government of Jesus in my chapter on the purpose of civil government).
- In the previous chapter I already covered the other easy-believer "whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved" in Acts 2:21 and Romans 10:13 and 1John 5:13.

Do we have assurance of easy salvation? This topic seems to irritate some people. They say that my message ignores that Christ died to save us. The following comments are intended to instill the fear of God.

- the saints at Philippi were told to work out their salvation with fear and trembling (Philippians 2:12 should be a strong hint that there is no easy salvation).
- Christ told the truth in Matthew 7:21 (NIV) "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven." [I've underlined the word enter, so that you can confirm that it still matches today's definition of voluntary citizenship].
- If you don't obey the will of the Father, then what? Peter asked the same question. 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 4:17 (KJV) "... what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?" Peter's answer in verse 18 is that THE RIGHTEOUS WILL SCARCELY BE SAVED.
- Paul, while encouraging the saints in Acts 14:22, told them "... we must through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God."
- Romans 9:27 only a remnant will be saved
- Luke 13:23-24 (KJV) "Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able." [contrast with Revelation 21:25 for those who are saved]
- Matthew 7:22-23 (KJV) "Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, ... And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity."
- Matthew 8:12 (KJV) "But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."
- Matthew 22:14 (KJV) "For many are called, but few are chosen."
- Romans 2:7-8 God grants immortality to those who actively seek it
- When a rich man who had obeyed all the commandments asked how he could be saved, Jesus told him to sell everything and follow Him.  
Matthew 19:25,27 (KJV): "When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?" ... "Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?"

Do you sense how astonished Peter was at this news? He questioned his salvation. Do you have the same question? Then pay attention.

Aside #1: I've been told that this story proves the awesome forgiveness of God's grace is so great that He would save someone who worships money. I don't see this as a love-of-money story, I see this for what it says it is; Those who do the will of God (obey the commandments) must still leave everything and follow Christ to be saved.

Aside #2: I've also been told the opposite; that this story equates those who covet riches, as being the thorns in Matthew 13:7 in the parable about thorns that choked the seedlings. They will burn in Matthew 13:30.

- When the amazed disciples asked Jesus "who then can be saved" (Matt 19:25, Mark 10:26, Luke 18:26) Jesus responded "with God all things are possible," Jesus then, AFTER confirming that the disciples had left everything to

follow him, confirmed that their salvation was assured. If there were an easy salvation they would not have been so amazed. Salvation involves more than just obeying commandments; You must leave all to follow Jesus. Luke 6:46 **“Why call me “Lord Lord” and do not the things which I say?”**

- Once you put your hands to the plow, you cannot look back (Luke 9:62 referring to those who make the decision to follow Jesus). I see this as another “leave everything to follow Christ” message. [I’ve been told that this isn’t a leave-everything message, but that those called do not need to look back at their previous lifestyle.]
- Christ told the truth in Matt 7:13-14: narrow is the gate that leads to life and few will find it. Suppose, just suppose, that by the term “few”, Christ meant that only 144,000 would have His Father’s name (Greek *onoma* = authority) written in their forehead (throughout the Bible, foreheads refer to authority or subordination to authority) and that these are the only ones to be redeemed from the earth (Revelation 14:3). 144,000 would be less than a thousandth of one percent of those, living and dead, who claimed to be Christian. It’s far less than one person per church.
- Christ said that we will be persecuted, and that those who endure until the end shall be saved (Matt 24:13 and Mark 13:13 and Matt 10:22).
- Those who fear the Lord are close to salvation (Psalm 85:9, Isaiah 33:6).

Participating in socialist benefits is violation of the Ten Commandments. Theft and Covetousness. Even if you don’t include worship, oaths, and falsifying federal documents. And yes, those who refuse a socialist security number can be victorious over the beast, just as if it were the mark of Revelation 15:2. Nor will they be funding vile abominations with their taxes.

1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 7:21 (NIV) “Were you a slave when you were called? Don’t let it trouble you--although if you can gain your freedom, do so.”

If??? Don’t let it trouble you??? How does a permanent slave regain his freedom if he cannot purchase it? Answer: He can’t. He must suffer the consequences. Just like an enlisted serviceman cannot change his own status. Repenting doesn’t change your status. Wanting to get back into God’s chain of command will not change your status. What then can you do, and what are the consequences?

Since you cannot change your slave status, there are still a few things you can do when you decide you want citizenship under God’s chain of command. But you will be an AWOL runaway slave. You must forevermore be a fugitive, and rely upon the grace of your sovereign to protect you. The same sovereign who said you must endure persecution, also said that some will have victory over the mark (Revelation 15:2). Onesimus voluntarily returned to his owner, but then again, he could still serve the one Master, because his owner was an authority ordained of God. But he still had to suffer punishment from his owner.

I can give you some crumbs of comfort, and reasons for the faith that lies within. But, if you want legal advice consult your lawgiver.

- The apostles were joyful when they were persecuted and in jail. Government jail. They had fear and trembling, and much tribulation, as I’ve just quoted. They enjoyed the same persecution that we now suffer under the very same brutal Roman civil law.
- “They that understand among the people shall instruct many; yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, many days.” (Daniel 11:33)
- Repent. If King David can be a man after God’s own heart after what he did, then there is hope for all repentant sinners.
- You can still be rescued from the dominion of darkness and brought into the kingdom of the Son in whom you have forgiveness. Colossians 1:13-14.
- If you never qualified for a Social Security number, then repent (never use it again). This is a good time to witness to others. This will also cause persecution, unemployment, and homelessness and perhaps be jailed by corrupt officials who expect you to be numbered. The disciples were joyful when they were persecuted. I am NOT telling you to be a homeless beggar, I’m telling you that the beast’s intent is to causeth all to receive a mark, that as many as would not worship the beast would be abolished – to deny you necessities of life without a mark (wages and housing and prescription medication and.)
- Render unto Caesar that which is Caesar’s, and never again embrace socialism.
- Never swear an oath to a state god (as the term god is used in 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 4:4).

- Note that there are two different ways to receive the mark, only one of which condemns. The damnation of anyone in Revelation 14:9&11 who “receives” (Greek *lambano* in both verses = to take, accept, obtain) the mark is altogether different from taking the mark in Revelation 13:16 that the beast causeth all to “receive” (Greek *didomi* = bestow, deliver, grant, offer, put, strike with the palm of the hand, take). In Revelation 20:4 those who did not “receive” (Greek *lambano*) the mark will rule with Christ for a thousand years.
- In Revelation 14 those who receive the mark will drink God’s wrath and be tormented with fire and brimstone. The term “receives,” (Greek *lambano*) in Revelation 14:9,11; whosoever receives the mark of his name (the word “name” is the Greek *onoma* which means authority), may mean much more than merely having a mark. It may refer to those who embrace an evil system, who knowingly worship the beast to receive the benefits, who force numbers on others, to plunder their neighbors. Verse 12 then contrasts against verse 11: “... here are they that keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus” - as if to emphasize that attaining the mark violates the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.
- Furthermore, even today’s legal definition of the term “receives” means acquiring control, and not merely possession, of the item. *Black’s Law Dictionary* even cites a court case that defines the crime of “receiving stolen property” as excluding mere possession. Hopefully we will find out on the judgement day that we haven’t received the mark-name-number if we have refused to use it.
- Those who endure to the end shall be saved. Hebrews 4:16 (KJV) "Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need."

### 4.13.3 Obey the ten commandments?

Did Paul tell us not to obey the law?

Many people tell me that Christians need not obey the Ten Commandments. They say that Christians are not under the law, and trying to obey the Ten Commandments is works-righteousness, and that only Christ could obey the law. They twist dozens of scriptures to try to prove it. Consider these issues:

- The “everlasting covenant” is everlasting.
- Matthew 24:20, was spoken by Christ himself to his disciples about future Christian behavior. Christ asks us to pray that our flight not be on a Sabbath. Did Christ understand that future Christians ,after the abomination of desolation, would not be under this law?
- Revelation 14:12 was written by the apostle John (well into the Christian era, and likely after the AD70 destruction of Jerusalem, after receiving revelations by Christ himself), concerning future Christian behavior after the Mark of the Beast is available. Did John understand that the law had already been abolished? Or that Christians do not need to obey the commandments?
- Luke 16:17, 29-31, It is easier for heaven and earth to disappear than for one tittle of the law to fail. Moses and the prophets were sufficient warning. Did Christ lie? [Note that He was not referring to the Law of Moses. He had already confirmed that the Law of Moses was not inspired. Christ confirmed the Law of Moses was not so since the beginning.] Why would you bet your soul that Christ is a liar?
- Paul’s discussions about Christians being delivered from the law in Romans chapter 7, ends his chapter with his conclusion that he serves the law of God. Is it honest to claim that his own words are clear proof that the law he serves is dead?
- Paul in Romans 4 tells the gentile Romans who had never had the law, that justification without works is possible. He cites Psalm 32 Blessed is the man whom the Lord will impute righteousness without works. Does this prove that salvation is only by faith alone, contrary to James 2 and 1st John 2?
- The Bereans (Acts 17:11) studied the Old Testament daily to prove the New Testament was true. Did they come to the conclusion that law was abolished?
- 1<sup>st</sup> John 3:4 has a definition of sin. Sin is transgression of the law. If the law has been abolished then there is no sin. Has sin been abolished? How can you receive grace if you have not transgressed the law?
- How can you claim to love God, if you make excuses to disobey him?

### 4.13.4 What about the teachings of paul?

William Tyndale translated Martin Luther’s commentaries on Romans. This was published in Tyndale’s 1534 translation of the Bible:

*“Forasmuch as this epistle is the principal and most excellent part of the new testament...*

*I will therefore bestow my labour and diligence, through this little preface or prologue, to prepare a way in thereunto... that it may be the better understood of every man, for it hath been hitherto evil darkened with glosses and wonderful dreams of sophisters, that no man could spy out the intent and meaning of it, which nevertheless of itself is a bright light, and sufficient to give light unto all the scripture.*

*First we must mark diligently the manner of speaking of the apostle, and above all things know what Paul meaneth by these words, the law, sin, grace, faith, righteousness, flesh, spirit and such like, or else read thou it never so oft, thou shalt but lose thy labor. This word law may not be understood here after the common manner, and to use Paul's term, after the manner of men or after man's ways, that thou wouldest say the law here in this place were nothing but learning which teacheth what ought to be done and what ought not to be done, as it goeth with man's law where the law is fulfilled with outward works only, though the heart be never so far off. ...*

I will leave you to your study of law, but remember: Christ warned that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twofold damned. Matthew 23:15

People say that this is legalism, or that the Ten Commandments were nailed to the cross. My reply is that these are the weightier matters of the law which should not be neglected. In fact, sin is defined in the New Testament in 1 John 3:4. Sin is transgression of the law. If, somehow, the law was done away with, then there is no sin. I assure you that not one jot or tittle will fall from the law until all is fulfilled. The commandments were written in stone by the finger of an unchanging God (Deuteronomy 9:10, Ex 31:18). God established his law to last forever, Psalm 119:152. Those who love God will obey the commandments. (Matthew 19:17, John 14:15 & 15:10, 1<sup>st</sup> John 2:3-5, & 3:22-24 & 5:2-3, 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 12:14, etc.) Christ blessed those who obey the commandments Luke 11:28. Christ told you, in Matthew 23:15, that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twofold damned. So pay attention.

Also read my Answers to Skeptics chapter at the end of this section. I address the "once saved always saved" theory.

If you think the Ten Commandments are not important, then stop reading and go back to your buying and selling.

#### 4.14 Work without a SSN?

- Can a right be taxed?
- Do you have a right to sell your labor, or is selling labor a government granted privilege? (I use the term 'government granted privilege' loosely, it is actually a contract with the people who own the IRS).
- Can you receive benefits without being a ward of your provider?
- As a socialist who receives benefits of your provider, are you forced against your will, to contribute your fair share?
- Social Security Cards remain property of the IRS. Every custodian of a card has strict responsibility to use the card for legal purposes only. It is illegal to falsify a government form under penalty of perjury. It is illegal to convert private property into public use without complying with the Fifth Amendment (except for gifts to the government). It is illegal to conspire with others to convert private property to public use without complying with the requirements of the Fifth Amendment.
- By signing a W-4 form, you are certifying that your [wages are subject to a gift and estate tax](#). The IRS will rely on your statement and enforce the gift giving.
- BUT if you are not subject to a federal gift and estate tax, then there are serious consequences. The IRS will then rely on your false statement -- using force, duress and seizure if necessary -- to convert private property to government use without just compensation. If someone tricks you into committing the crime, you can still be punished. It is up to you to avoid deception.

Nothing here is legal advice. Every situation is different. Every employer's response will be different. These are questions about some situations that might develop. And questions to ask employers and IRS about their confusing policies. If a court will get involved, it should help your case to have facts in writing. I will not write letters for you. If you want to pay someone to help with letter writing, I recommend [www.prolettersink.com](http://www.prolettersink.com)

Lawyers will not help, their duty is to drag you into their system.

Avoid the following:

- I strongly urge you to NOT file an "exempt" W-4 form. The Form W-4 is only for taxpayers who are subject to a gift and estate tax. It is a confession that will be used against you in court.
- I urge you to NOT claim to be a resident alien. Aliens pay income tax and are subject to withholding ([until they become citizens](#)). Citizens do not pay income tax unless they are engaged in specific revenue taxable activities (or leave the country).
- Note: Internal Revenue Code, section 3401(p) is for a voluntary withholding agreement with employers. It is available only to taxpayers who are subject to withholding.
- Note: SSA Form 521 is only to withdraw a previous claim for a benefit. Not for withdrawing an SSN application.

Trying to get employed seldom works, even with all this knowledge. Their Lawyers take over and [attorn you back to the feudal system](#).

Consider contract employment:

- When everything fails, you can propose contract employment as an independent contractor. There are contract agencies like [www.preferredservices.org](http://www.preferredservices.org), or contract with a like minded business to handle the affairs. No longer available: [www.contractamerica.com](http://www.contractamerica.com) was shut down by an iron fist.
- As an individual contractor you will be forced to meet the [SS-8](#) requirements to some extent. (Even though we are all endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights to contract, the days of your God-given right to sell labor are long gone.)

Many of the larger employers have a Human Resources department to comply with all the regulations that are too complex for hiring managers to deal with. We once called them Personnel departments. But now everyone seems to be a "Human Resource" provided by the government.

Most objections to SSNs are religious objections.

Not so long ago, official letters simply told us to write "religious objector" in the space for SSNs. [Examples](#) (first and last letter). [And also see.](#) [Also see that employment cannot be denied.](#)

BUT there are now court precedents -- by people with bad lawyers or who represented themselves poorly -- showing that a SSN somehow trumps religious objections (see reference #1 at the end of this chapter), even though SSNs are not required by law or for employment purposes. Nor is SSN disclosure required by law.

Even the Amish, who are normally exempt, and who don't normally get SSNs because it is proof that you don't trust God -- [www.amishnews.com/amisharticles/amishss.htm](http://www.amishnews.com/amisharticles/amishss.htm) -- lose their religious liberty if they get an SSN. They waive their religious rights to this "overriding governmental interest" according to the Supreme Court in U.S. v. Lee (455 U.S. 252). Corban (the Roman version of forced welfare contributions -- now called FICA) makes the word of God of no effect. At least according to Jesus. There are two famous cases where people have used religious objections to SSNs and have successfully been employed without numbers.

- The [Bruce Hanson EEOC case](#). BUT the EEOC will no longer hear cases involving religious objections to SSNs.
- And the [Arthur Thomas - Taco Bell case](#). This was never a court case. The corporate lawyers finally agreed out of court to let him keep his job, (after hundreds of pages of legal work)

Do you have a right to contract<sup>2</sup> or do you need government permission to work in the United States? (Hint: no one has a right to work in a government that has the same name. Any such work arrangement would require government approved eligibility.)

After the employer tells you that you have a *bona fide* offer of employment, will you be bold enough to ask why you do not have a right to contract?

A right cannot be charged a fee<sup>3</sup>. Did your new employer demand to see credentials that are only available if you pay a fee driver License\* fee or travel license (passport)\* fee or birth certificate fee?

\* [Murdock v. Pennsylvania](#), 319 U.S. 105 "A state may not, through a license tax, impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal Constitution."

Read the information that explains Income tax at <http://www.originalintent.org/edu/fedincometax.php>

And read the book *The Biggest Tax Loophole of All* by Otto Skinner and learn to avoid the 18 flawed arguments that can land you in jail. Example: It is a mistake to say that you are non-taxpayer, and yet a non-taxpayer has no standing in court to argue tax law.

Did the job application ask for a SSN? If so then the application must also contain a proper privacy act statement required by The Privacy Act of 1974 section 7(b) which, by the way, is not codified in the law books and no longer available from government sources. ([Click here](#) page 1). If the proper Privacy Act statement is missing, then this is the first evidence of bad faith on the part of the employer. Note that the law mentions only government agencies, but the Legislative History of the Privacy Act says they intended it to also apply to private employers. ([Click here](#) page 2).

Did the W-4 Form request for SSN comply with [Title 5 U.S.C. §552a](#) section (e)(3)(A) by using the word *mandatory* or the word *voluntary*? Or comply with Paperwork Reduction Act (Public Law 96-511) ([44 U.S.C. §3506\(c\)\(1\)\(B\)\(iii\)\(IV\)](#)) by using the word *mandatory* or the word *voluntary*?

Mr. (HR dept) asked for a government number on government forms and implied that it was for a government function. It turned out that a [W-4 Form](#) is only for a gift and estate tax, not for an income tax.

If you write some nice letters to the IRS (by certified mail so that you can prove to your new employer that you are expecting a response, in good faith) and enclose copies of IRS documents proving that their [Form W-4 is only for tax class](#)

[5 \(gift and estate tax\)](#) rather than tax class 2 (income tax), Perhaps the local and district IRS offices can provide the employer with the proper "withholding exemption certificate" that is required by law for income tax. (hint: you will have a long wait, there is none).

Note that the IRS does not have an Inspector General, but the Treasury Inspector General for Tax Administration handles corrupt IRS employees. Did Mr. (HR dept) confess to acting as a government agent to get government numbers on government forms for purported but non-existent fraudulent purposes, in order to make as a condition of employment the obtaining of a SSN that the Legislative History of the Privacy Act prohibits? (fraud, extortion, impersonating a government officer, and perhaps mail fraud. And later I will prove that it is racketeering conspiracy).

Perhaps you can report your employer's abuse of improper/incorrect forms on IRS [Form 3949A](#) (I don't know what category applies, but there is a check box for false documents and another one for organized crime) Perhaps you could add a statement that you suspect they will convert your wages to public use without complying with the Fifth Amendment. Perhaps you could add a statement that you requested a "clear and unequivocal language" of a law that made your wages taxable and they failed to provide it. Perhaps Mr. (HR dept) will want a copy, so he will know that you know that the IRS knows. Full disclosure is always important. Perhaps they will start acting in good faith.

Perhaps your State Attorney General would want to know about Mr. (HR dept)'s scheme to deny the State the plenary authority to control all taxation within the state. Can such an employer be trusted with a State business license?

*U.S. Supreme Court ruling in [Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky](#), [309 U.S. 83](#) (1940) "In the states, there reposes the sovereignty to manage their own affairs except only as the requirements of the Constitution otherwise provide. Within these constitutional limits the power of the state over taxation is plenary."*

If you have proof of bad faith, then ask more questions.

#### Questions need to be asked.

"He who contracts knows, or ought to know, the quality of the person with whom he contracts, otherwise he is not excusable." This is a maxim of law perpetuated to us today as the law-of-the-land received from the English Colonies. Qui cum alio contrahit, vel est, vel debet esse non ignarus conditio ejus. Dig. 50,17,19;2 Hagg.Consist.Rep.61.

There is nothing wrong with asking questions. The average so-called "law-abiding" American now commits [three felonies a day](#) and you want to make sure you are not one of them.

You can even ask, just like Bill Clinton did, what the meaning of IS is, and they should tell you. Don't let them accuse you of obstructing just because you ask questions. After all, you cannot be expected to know more than a high profile lawyer like Bill Clinton. Good faith requires them to answer your questions. A denial disproves nothing.

Did Mr. (HR Dept) show you the "clear and unequivocal language" of a law that makes your wages taxable, or provide some other determination that your employment was a revenue taxable activity?

Your labor rights are your private property. See footnote 2, below.

- U.S. Supreme Court in *Butcher's Union v. Crescent City*, 111 U.S. 746:

*"The property which every man has in his own labor, as it is the original foundation of all other property, so it is the most sacred and inviolable. ..."*

Are they expecting you to conspire with them to convert your private property to public use? You don't want to risk breaking the law just because someone told you to. And you are a conscientious worker who pays attention to details.

Is Mr. (HR dept) impersonating a government agent in order to commit a federal crime such as [42 U.S.C. §408\(a\)\(8\)](#) or [18 U.S.C. §§241](#), or [242](#), extortion, or [Subornation of perjury](#)? Also Note that a pattern of racketeering is two acts of extortion [18 U.S.C. §1961\(5\)](#)

You are required to report crimes. It is a crime to not report crimes. [Misprision](#).

When an employer asks you to fill out a government form that is only for taxpayers, you must first determine if your labor is a government privilege that can be taxed. Then you must determine if it is the correct form. Read the information that explains Income tax

<http://www.originalintent.org/edu/fedincometax.php>

### Don't rely on unauthorized representations

The IRS knows that it can lie and get away with it. Employers do not.

U.S. v. Tallmadge, 829 F.2d. 767: "... One who relies on a legal interpretation by a government official assumes the risk that it is in error... it has also been held or said that `the government could scarcely function if it were bound by its employees unauthorized representations'" Goldberg v. Weinberger, 546 F.2d. 477.

Caterpillar Tractor Company v. U.S., 589 F.2d. 1040 (also see GEHL Co. v. C.I.R. 795 F.2d. 1324): "Informal publications of IRS all the way up to revenue rulings are simply guides to taxpayers and taxpayer relies on them at his peril."

United States Supreme Court Federal Crop Insurance Corp. v. Merrill, 332 U.S. 380 (1947): "... Anyone entering into an arrangement with the government takes the risk of having accurately ascertained that he who purports to act for the government stays within the bounds of his authority ... and this is so even though, as here, the agent himself may have been unaware of the limitations upon his authority."

U.S. v. Stewart, 234 F.Supp. 94 (1964): "United States Government officer may be sued only if he acts in excess of his statutory authority or in violation of the Constitution for then he ceases to represent government."

Did Mr. (HR dept) "make as a condition of employment" the obtaining of a SSN? Yes or No?

Is Mr. (HR dept) trying to circumvent laws prohibiting SSNs from being a condition of employment? Consider this:

Intent of Privacy Act as explained in the Legislative History of the Privacy Act section 201(h) is that employers cannot "make as a condition of employment the securing by any individual of any information which may be obtained through the exercise of any right secured under the provisions of section 201." ([Click here](#) page 2)

The Legislative History of the Privacy Act, Public Law 93-579, section 201 continues on page 6982...

*"this subsection provides a right against such coercion which is enforceable in the Federal District Court in a civil action... This subsection is not intended to prevent an individual from seeking and obtaining rights under section 201, but is designed to provide a legal remedy from what are believed to be unreasonable and coercive pressures on that person sufficient to state a cause of action before a Federal judge."*

Did Mr. (HR dept) put in writing

- that the W-4 was mandatory?
- that he instructed you to fill it out?
- That it was a condition of employment?
- That you had to sign an I-9 form as a condition of employment even though you don't want to falsify an inappropriate government form that does not apply to you? All you want is a right to contract.
- That you don't have a right to contract until you first contract with a known racketeering enterprise -- as the term *racketeering enterprise* is defined in their own [18 U.S.C. §1961\(4\)](#) ?
- That your employment was a federally taxable activity?
- That your employment was a federal privilege?
- Did he specifically state what law makes your labor taxable?

Can you get him to confess that falsifying a federal document is a condition of employment?



The Privacy Act requires the use of the word *voluntary* or the word *mandatory*. Did you see any valid privacy act statement anywhere at any time on any paper or form presented to you?

Every dictionary or encyclopedia defines an oath as a religious ritual. Therefore, Perjury oath signatures are religious rituals. And we know that an [oath](#) is an affirmation. Did Mr. (HR dept) tell you that you must swear an oath or affirmation? (If you believe that we are all created equal, but that taking a perjury oath or affirmation places you lower than someone else's civil servants, and that you will be condemned for taking an oath (James 5:12, Matthew 5:34) then in extreme circumstances you might want to consider, after stating that you are competent to be a witness, taking an oath to God (allowed by Hebrews 6:16) something like: "facts stated herein are true and correct under God's penalty of bearing false witness, so help me God.")

Did Mr. (HR dept) determine that your employment was a revenue taxable activity, without showing you clear and unequivocal language of a statute?

- U.S. Supreme Court in [Spreckels Sugar Ref. Co. v. Mclain](#), 24 S.Ct. 382 (1904): "the citizen is exempt from taxation unless the same is imposed by clear and unequivocal language".
- [Long v. Ramussen](#), 281 F 236, 238 (1922):
- "The revenue laws are a code or system in regulation of tax assessment and collection. They relate to taxpayers, and not to non-taxpayers. The later are without their scope. No procedure is prescribed for non-taxpayers, and no attempt is made to annul any of their rights and remedies in due course of law. With them Congress does not assume to deal, and they are neither of the subject nor of the object of the revenue law." Reaffirmed in [Gerth v. U.S.](#), 132 F.Supp. 894 (1955) and in [Economy Heating Co. v. U.S.](#), 470 F.2d. 585 (1972)
- [Regal Drug Co v. Wardell](#), 260 U.S. 386: "Congress may not, under the taxing power, assert a power not delegated to it by the Constitution."
- Taxation Key, West 53 - The legislature cannot name something to be a taxable privilege unless it is first a privilege.
- Taxation Key, West 933 - The Right to receive income or earnings is a right belonging to every person and realization and receipts of income is therefore not a "privilege that can be taxed".

Footnote 2. A right to contract is within the definitions of liberty.

Got liberty?

Have you ever seen liberty?

Have you ever lived in a free country?

U.S. Supreme Court [Hale v. Henkel](#), 201 U.S. 43, at page 74:

*"The individual may stand upon his constitutional rights as a citizen. He is entitled to carry on his private business in his own way. His power to contract is unlimited. He owes no duty to the state, or to his neighbors to divulge his business, or to open his doors to an investigation, so far as it may tend to incriminate him."*

U.S. Supreme Court in [Butcher's Union Co. v. Crescent City Co.](#), 111 U.S. 746:

*"The property that every man has is his own labor, as it is the original foundation of all other property so it is the most sacred and inviolable...to hinder his employing [it]...in what manner he thinks proper, without injury to his neighbor, is a plain violation of the most sacred property".*

Definition of liberty in U.S. Supreme Court, [Coppage v. Kansas](#), 236 U.S. 1

*"Included in the right of personal liberty...is the right to make contracts for the acquisition of property. Chief among such contracts is that of personal employment, by which labor and other services are exchanged for money and other forms of property".*

U.S. Supreme Court Definition of liberty in [Meyer v. Nebraska](#), [262 U.S. 390](#), at page 399.

*The term Liberty "... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience... the established doctrine is that this liberty may not be interfered with under the guise of protecting public interest, by legislative action which is arbitrary or without reasonable relation to some purpose within the competency of the state to effect."*

By the way: loss of liberty is worth \$1000 per minute according to a 1984 federal case from Florida.

Trezevant v. Tampa, 741 F.2d. 336 determined that damages to liberty in 1984 accrued at a rate of more than \$1000 per minute, which is more than 1½ million dollars per day.

- As was the case in Trezevant, there is no requirement that there be an arrest
- As was the case in Trezevant, official policy or custom is the "moving force of the constitutional violation"
- As was the case in Trezevant, governments are liable for any unconstitutional deprivation of liberty caused by government "custom" even if such custom has not received formal approval through governing body's official decision making channels
- As was the case in Trezevant, there is no requirement that the policy itself be unlawful
- Your State's definition of Kidnapping does not require any element of physical restraint, nor does your State definition of "Unlawful imprisonment". Both are violations of liberty. The US Supreme Court defined liberty in Meyer.

And, as in Trezevant, such award is not excessive.

Footnote 3: A right cannot be taxed.

Please see the tax cases cited in the chapters

[You waived your right to earn wages.](#)

[Are unalienable Rights granted by government?](#)

#### 4.14.1 IRS Authority

Income tax is the second plank of the Communist Manifesto. People never thought Communism could happen here. After all, our Constitution only allows direct taxes to be apportioned among the states. And only three federal laws were ever intended to apply to state citizens. And the Sixteenth Amendment was ratified by the states only on the repeated assurance that [salaries would not be taxed](#). Communism is un-American.

The Internal Revenue Service is not an agency of the United States Government. ([source](#)). ([another source](#) response #4).

The Commissioner had nothing to do with the creation of the IRS. The IRS was created by the Secretary of the Treasury on July 7, 1953 from the Bureau of Internal Revenue of Puerto Rico, which was enforcing the Alcohol tax (after it was moved offshore by the Carlisle Act because the Supreme Court shut it down on Aug 29, 1935) The BIR was also collecting the Voluntary Victory Tax during WW2, but kept sending out 1040 forms after the war.

Title 31 Code of Federal Regulations chapter 3 lists the departments within the Treasury, but the IRS is not on the list. The IRS is so conspicuously absent, that they don't even publish this part of the regulation anymore. And I have not been able to get it through a FOIA request.

The IRS has a difficult time trying to prove that they exist as a government agency.

- Their official story ([source](#)) is that the act of March 3, 1863 somehow proves that Congress thought that they had created the Bureau of Internal Revenue, because according to the story "*By common parlance and understanding of the time, an office of the importance of the Office of Commissioner of Internal Revenue was a bureau*".
- Although there was a Bureau of Internal Revenue that was created in 1862 by the Commissioner (and does not have to pay postage) (and perhaps only as a two man office)-- The IRS was really created from the Puerto Rico Bureau of Internal Revenue in 1953.
- Does your IRS pay postage?
- If you live in a city where the IRS has it's own building, do they pay property tax on the land?
- Their official story is "*that the framers of the Constitution believed for sometime that the principal, if not sole, support of the new Federal Government would be derived from customs duties and taxes connected with shipping and importations. Internal taxation would not be resorted to except infrequently, and for special reasons.*" But by 1862 somehow "*... the establishment of an internal revenue system, not exclusively dependent upon the supplies of foreign commerce, was permanent.*"
- The constitution still [Requires a Balanced Budget](#). Beware of alternative tax schemes proposed by congress.

The Income Tax Amendment was ratified by the States only upon repeated assurance that it would not tax salaries. As for example: New York Times August 3, 1909 front page article on Alabama's House of Representatives passing the Amendment. And the Congressional Record August 28, 1913 Congressional Debates page 3843.

The current income tax law has been amended over the years, but it all started with one sentence written by congress to implement the Income Tax Amendment. This is the first paragraph of the 1913 Income Tax law 38 Stat 166. This is the ONLY law that the government says applies to you. It is only one sentence. The rest of the 37 pages are for income tax of corporations. As you study this sentence, remember that Congressmen cannot and do not impose direct taxation contrary to the Constitution Article 1, Section 9 -- which did not change with the 16<sup>th</sup> Amendment -- "*... the 16th amendment conferred no new powers of taxation*" *Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co.* 240 US 103 (1915).

" That there shall be levied, assessed, collected and paid annually upon the entire net income arising or accruing from all sources in the preceding calendar year to every citizen of the United States , whether residing at home or abroad, and to every person residing in the United States , though not a citizen thereof , a tax of 1 per centum per annum upon such income, EXCEPT as herein after provided; and a like tax shall be assessed, levied, collected, and paid annually upon the entire net income from all property owned and of every business, trade or profession carried on in the United States by persons residing elsewhere."

#### 4.14.2 Employment is not employment.

Employment is not Employment.

Their "employment" is not employment at all. It is a government welfare scheme<sup>1</sup>.

Their definition of Employment is NOT employment of your labor. Their Employment is the use of government owned labor:

1. When an employer asks for a government wage authorization number, he wants to hire government owned labor, not labor that you thought that you owned. He has to ask because he is regulated as a federally registered (EIN) employer.
2. Those who have SSNs have waived their right to earn wages.
3. Those who have SSNs have confessed that they cannot manage their own affairs, and must be managed by their guardians.
4. Government labor can be taxed.
5. Government benefits reduce an ungrateful free man to slavery.
6. Government benefits, listed below, can impair the obligation of contracts

Article 1, Section 10 of the U.S. Constitution says:

*"No State shall... pass any ... Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts..."*

Their employment IS impairment of contracts. Just look at all the workplace posters boldly declaring that your contract is impaired (unemployment insurance, minimum wage, fair labor standards act, family leave, safety standards, disability benefits, equal employment opportunity, "Bona Fide Occupational Qualification (BFOQ) Regulations", polygraph protection act, overtime pay, etc). How can anyone look at these postings and even suggest that your contract for wages remains an unimpaired constitutional right?

No one has a right to this kind of employment in the United States. It is a government privilege that requires government eligibility, AND GOVERNMENT REGULATION.

A right cannot be taxed. How can anyone look at the seized amounts from a pay stub and suggest that there is still a right to contract?

Luke 10:7 **the laborer is worthy of his hire.** ("**workman**" in Matthew 10:10) This is the only kind of employment that you seek.

Did you want to live in a free country?

1. Maxim of law: "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt.*

Numbered persons have no rights. Employment with government mandated benefits is a welfare scheme to take care of government wards who cannot take care of themselves. Their form of "employment" IS impairment of contracts.

Employment is not employment.

An employee, similar to an indentured servant, has no rights to his own labor. He gave up rights to his labor in exchange for care and protection. His provider/master/lord owns his labor rights. An employer buys labor from the provider/master/lord, (sends in the provider's share quarterly), and is expected to give the remaining amount (paycheck after withholding the providers' share) to the employee as a living allowance. By April 15, employees are allowed, but not required, to square up with their provider/master/lord for unaccounted "internal revenue". The provider's share can be raised to 100% or more by a simple majority vote of the employees' representatives who administer this foreign program. Employee has no say in what his living allowance is to be. The only persons liable for income tax on wages, according to the Internal Revenue Code, are Withholding Agents.

The legal definition of ‘employee’ seems somewhat convoluted but it uses the original meanings of the word “use” and the word “assured” and the word “business”. If you want to study this start with Clark’s *Summary of American Law* index entry for “Employees”. Then find a reprint of a dictionary from the 1800’s and look up the words “hire” and “occupation”.

The term “business” in the legal definition of "employee" is the usury of labor. According to Walter Lipmann in his 1929 book *A Preface to Morals*: “The early Christian writer looked upon business as a peril to the soul” (Walter Lipmann was a journalist who’s book *Public Opinion* exposed how the elite manipulated the media to create World War I).

To understand why we cannot make a profit, I suggest that you read the Mennonite Encyclopedia entry for the word “Business”. It is available online at [www.gameo.org](http://www.gameo.org) and read why “Business activity on the part of Christians has created some of the greatest concern for the church.”

If early Christians "looked upon business as a peril to the soul" and if Mennonites knew that business was of the greatest concern for the church, and if Lucifer was condemned for commerce (Ezekiel 28:16) and for traffic on trade-routes (Ezekiel 28:18 and Revelation 18), and if Starr Chambers were created to enforce commercial contracts, what are the chances that their term "employment" really refers to "a workman worthy of his hire"? One is a God-given right, the other is a government licensed privilege. (Do I dare call it a Satan-given right?). The term *Business* in 1 Thessalonians 4:11 refers to working quietly with your own hands (not someone else's).

**STARR, or STARRA.** The old term for contract or obligation among the Jews, being a corruption from the Hebrew word “shetar,” a covenant. By an ordinance of Richard I., no starr was allowed to be valid, unless deposited in one of certain repositories established by law, the most considerable of which was in the king’s exchequer at Westminster; and Blackstone conjectures that the room in which these chests were kept was thence called the “starr-chamber.” 4 Bl. Comm. 266, 267, note a.

This was the Black Law Dictionary definition of Starr from the First Edition, 1891.

The term “use” in the legal definition of "employee" means usury, the employer is using rights to your labor. Direct-to-you monetary compensation for work (that you thought you had a right to sell) is not the same as buying slave labor from a third party who owns the labor rights (your owner decides how much he wants to deduct from the paycheck, and the remainder is your living allowance).

Yet, for real people, directly selling labor for a paycheck has never been taxable according to the courts (see the chapter on your right to earn wages).

Don’t think that privately owned employers are private organizations. They are agents of the IRS (or whoever owns the IRS). When they ask for your IRS number, they are performing an IRS function. Corporations are incorporated into the government.

To employ means to equitably convert. Once you get an employee identification number you have been converted to their use. Corporations then may USE you for their purpose. IRS can then collect the usury of your labor. Employers must also pay for this government granted privilege. And, you must pay usury (income tax) whenever you profit from labor rights that you no longer own. The IRS gets wealth from the USE of labor rights that they own. This is usury.

Business does not purchase labor, they employ the labor owned by whoever owns the IRS. It is, of course, taxable by them.

The Social Security Act is intended for employees, not for contractors or small business owners.

Schwing v. United States, 165 F.2d. 518:

*“The Social Security Act protects workers whose livelihood depends upon another rather than upon the public at large.”*

In other words, SS is a form of welfare. It is a government privilege. It can be taxed. And most importantly: the confession "livelihood depends" shows that it is a life-or-death safety net established by government, for those who worshiped government in order to get their mark.

Hint: Revelation 13:15 those without a mark are to be abolished (without this safety net, without necessities of life mentioned in the Edwards case, and without access to prescription medications).

Notice that the federal court used the term "depends". Numbered workers are dependents. They do not have a right to contract. Just look at all the workplace posters giving legal notice of benefits and protections.

Whereas unnumbered contract workers are equal parties to a contract. The constitution prohibits government from impairing contracts. Contract workers do not get the government benefits or protections (of any welfare application with the government).

Usury comparisons to show what happens when you sell labor rights:

Bank interest payments	Employer wage payments
The bank can make a profit off your deposit without splitting the profit, you do not have a “beneficial right” to its use. You sold all rights to profit from “your” deposited money.	An employer can make a profit off your labor without splitting the profit. You gave up “beneficial rights” to your labor when you signed a financing statement pursuant to UCC 9-302.
interest is not your share of the profit made from your money. Even if the bank makes bad investments, it must still pay you for the rights you sold. It is income derived from capital according to the Supreme Court case of Eisner v. Macomber.	wages are not compensation for the direct sale of your labor. It is payment for the rights you sold. It is income derived from labor according to the Supreme Court case of Eisner v. Macomber.
While your money is on deposit, you cannot sell it to someone else.	While your labor is on deposit, you do not have a right to sell your labor to another employer.
I repeat: <b>you are not an owner</b> of ‘your’ deposited money; you cannot receive any profits, or be liable for losses incurred, with ‘your’ money because you contracted away your beneficial right to the money.	If you signed a financing statement (to deposit your labor into the socialist trough as collateral for future benefits), then <b>you are not an owner</b> of ‘your’ labor.
The Interest you receive is payment for selling the beneficial rights to use your money.	Taxes paid to the Department of the Treasury, like interest, are the employer’s payments to buy the beneficial rights to your labor. The paycheck is the living allowance your owner pays, through their agent (your employer), to provide for their slaves.
Some banks’ contracts let you withdraw your money.	However, your Social Security Card is a permanent irrevocable Certificate of Deposit.
Usury is an abomination, Ezekiel 18:13.	Usury is an abomination, Ezekiel 18:13.

If it is still confusing, or if you don’t believe me, then read the court cases in the chapter on your right to earn wages.

You may still be confused about the distinction between a direct sale of labor and the sale of labor rights. Your IRS bureaucrats are not confused. They know exactly when to avoid imprisonment for theft, and when to boldly attack anyone who profits from labor that is owned by whoever owns the IRS.

Your Constitution, in Article 1 section 10, prohibits any state from impairing the obligation of contracts. This means the supreme law of the land prohibits the state from interfering or regulating any contract between a real (unnumbered) worker

and those who pay him for his labor. The state and Federal governments have a duty to protect unnumbered people from any impairment, such as tax or regulation, on their labor. And they have always protected this right (see the chapter on your right to earn wages). But Employment is not a contract with you as a worker, it is a contract with those who own your labor rights.

The obligation of contracts cannot be impaired. If your employment was a contract between you and your employer, it could not be impaired or regulated. Yet your employer:

- must be sued for your mistakes,
- cannot sue you (the assured) for performing your duties improperly
- Must still pay you for work he rejects,
- is forced to pay minimum wage
- is forced to pay half of your FICA contributions, [by the way Communists are exempt from paying FICA taxes according to Section 3121(b) of the Internal Revenue Code, exception number 17 because they don't have to pay their fair share.]
- is forced to pay Unemployment insurance,
- is forced to pay Workman's Compensation insurance
- is forced take a portion of your pay and send it to your master/lord/owner.
- is forced to make accounting records and submit them to your master/lord/owner

How can these impairment of contracts possibly be Constitutional unless there is a written waiver of rights? What did you sign that might have waived your rights?

Bureaucrats who can be put in prison for 10 years if they deny you a right (Title 18, sections 241 & 242) will boldly impair the obligation of most labor contracts. How can they be so certain? Simply: numbered persons have no labor rights.

Go get a copy of IRS form SS-8 and prove to yourself whether or not you have a right to contract your own labor. An employee does not have a right to benefit from (share the profits from) his own labor. The people who own the IRS also own your labor rights, and you have waived your right to sell your labor. When you applied for a worker authorization number you voluntarily entered into an equitable conversion of your future labor (as explained on the next page). You no longer have a right to benefit from your labor. You waived your right to earn wages.

Now for the question: If you receive benefits of your provider, are you forced, against your will, to contribute your fair share?

Answer: Withholding is authorized by the Federal Insurance Contributions Act. The word *Federal* is not in your Constitution, it refers to the operation of the foreign receivership that operates the federal corporation for the benefit of the creditors. This word *Insurance* refers to orthodox socialism. Prove it to yourself: Now that you know that the Constitution prohibits direct welfare, and that the poor laws create government wards, and that the foreign bankruptcy began their federal operation in 1933, go look up the term "social insurance" in any Law Dictionary. The word *Contribution*: "Right of one who has discharged a common liability to recover of another also liable, the aliquot portion which he ought to pay or bear... a partition by which the creditors of an insolvent debtor divide among themselves the proceeds of his property proportionally to the amount of their respective credits." Hint: you agreed to be the proceeds when you signed a financing statement pursuant to Uniform Commercial Code (U.C.C.) §9-302.

Rights are absolute. We are endowed by our creator with unalienable rights. Your rights cannot be taken away except in punishment of a crime according to the Supreme Court in *Butcher's Union v. Crescent City*, 111 U.S. 746.

If you had a right to something, you would have a 100% unalienable right. If something can be legally taken from you, or regulated, or a portion taxed from you, then you cannot say that you had a right to it. If someone can legally take 1% of your wages, it has to be because you gave up your rights to your wages. You gave up ALL rights to your wages.

There are several possibilities to explain why you work without full pay.

1. It could be a simple contract where you agreed that others could take your wages. This would be illegal conversion of your labor unless there is a contract. Did you sign something?

A simple contract without consideration is theft; therefore the courts must presume that you paid something valuable in exchange for benefits. Perhaps you paid something very valuable.

Even without a contract, you are obligated to pay for your benefits. According to *Black's Law Dictionary*: "constructive contract rests upon the equitable principle that a person shall not be allowed to enrich himself unjustly at the expense of another, and is not in fact a contract, but an obligation, which the law creates in the absence of any agreement."

I suspect that it is more than just a simple contract because congress wasn't sure that the Social Security Act was legal. I've been looking for the book "The Development of the Social Security Act" by Edwin E. Witte. I found an article with this excerpt from the book attributed to Frances Perkins Secretary of Labor 1933-1945: "This was a new type of legislation --- nothing of the sort had ever come before congress of the United States before, it took much explaining and much patience."

I'm also looking for another book: "The Formative Years of Social Security" by Arthur J. Altmeyer. Let me know if you find it.

2. Another possibility is that it is a binding contract where you purchased a promise of protection by exchanging all rights to your future wages. As with other forms of equitable conversion: you get to hold legal title to your labor, but only as a security for the balance of the protection you purchased.

This means that you get to keep "full" legal title to your labor. In a moment, I'll explain what this deceptive term means.

3. A third possibility is the medieval system of corvee labor. This requires some forced labor as a tax payment to the lord of the manor. If your tribute is taken before you are paid, then you have performed some corvee labor without pay. You authorized your employer to accept this labor by a card in your right hand, or by a number from your forehead.

This is nothing new. The Hebrew word *mac* (*Strong's* H4522) is used 23 times in the Old Testament referring to a system of forced labor as a tax to a feudal lord, a king, or a foreign ruler. Moses lived in such a system. This is the corvee system. If you want to see how history repeats itself, try to find the *Book of Jasher* and read chapter 65, verses 19-34. The *Book of Jasher* is mentioned in the Bible in Joshua 10:13 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Samuel 1:18).

4. The fourth and most likely possibility is that Social Security is a *Cestui Que* trust. It is a trust structured like a vow of poverty. You contracted for a trust whereby you conveyed to the trustee the beneficial interest in all your future labor in exchange for your benefits. You are left with legal title to your labor.

Go to a law dictionary and look up the definition of Legal Title:

*"... the apparent right of ownership and possession, but which carries no beneficial interest in the property, ... it may also mean appearance of title as distinguished from complete title.... Apparent right of ownership with beneficial or equitable title in another."*

The trust contract was executed through the Secretary of the Treasury who is an agent for the trustee, as I will show later.

Having taken a vow of poverty, you of course would be a government ward. As with other vows of poverty, you are dependent upon the system that supports you. Does this sound Catholic to you? Perhaps there is a reason for this.

The trustee's agent is the Secretary of the Treasury. Perhaps his role as trustee is outside his governmental duties. If so, this would explain a lot. More about this later. The *Cestui Que* trust would be a private trust and enforceable in any court. Now that the Social Security Administration is an independent agency, there is much speculation about the real nature of the trust.

In *Flemming v. Nestor* your U.S. Supreme Court ruled that Social Security Benefits are noncontractual and can be eliminated at any time by Congress. They also stated (at 80 S.Ct. page 1379):

*"The people covered by this Act are now able to rely with complete assurance on the fact that they will be compelled to contribute regularly to this fund whenever each contribution falls due."*



If you want to do some research, try to figure out the inconsistency. How can the Supreme Court call it a fund, when there is no trust fund.

By the way, withholding is voluntary. Resident Aliens who become U.S. Citizens are not subject to withholding according to Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 1.1441-5 entitled "Claiming to be a person not subject to withholding." [Although this section was recently repealed, the Tax Court rulings cited in the section remain as precedent].

Internal Revenue Code, section 6109(a)(3) requires employers to REQUEST the "identifying number as may be prescribed for securing proper identification of such other person."

I know from my own experience in trying to keep my status as an independent contractor - to avoid being classified as an employee - that anyone who can be controlled by a government licensed employer is considered to be a ward of the government. Employers are absolutely required (over their objections and contrary to pre-existing contracts) to pay government forced benefits (Workers Compensation and Unemployment Insurance and FICA) for the government wards called "employees". If someone can take care of you, you are a ward. Luke 22:25 (KJV) "And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors."

I have now come to realize that numbered employees are collateral for the national debt. Ever since the federal bankruptcy of 1933, they require their collateral to be protected and taken care of. This is the chain of command that you volunteered into.

Go to [www.w4nomore.com](http://www.w4nomore.com) and download their free report entitled "The Truth Behind Payroll Tax Withholding"

According to an old website that is no longer valid [www.informamerica.com](http://www.informamerica.com) "Taxpayer identification numbers (SSN and EIN) are required by law of FOREIGNERS ONLY (see 42 USC 405(c)(2)(B)(i)(1) and 26 CFR 301.6109-1 for starters)."

I did more research and found out why. The Constitution gives States the exclusive authority for ALL taxation within its border. Only aliens pay federal income tax. The Constitution gives each State full and exclusive control over taxation within its borders.

Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, [309 U.S. 83](#) (1940)

*"In the states, there reposes the sovereignty to manage their own affairs except only as the requirements of the Constitution otherwise provide. Within these constitutional limits the power of the state over taxation is plenary."*

That's right. The federal government (or any other foreign authority) cannot tax state citizens, unless they voluntarily subject themselves to federal tax. Therefore State citizens pay gift tax, not income tax -- **only aliens pay income tax** [Source](#). Consistent with Matthew 17:25.

Employment without a number is possible according to two official sources:  
Appellate court finding in the David Alan Carmichael case <http://law.justia.com/cases/federal/appellate-courts/F3/298/1367/643105/>  
EEOC determination in the Bruce Hanson vs Information Systems Consulting case. [Link...](#)

Employment without a number is still possible according to two articles that are no longer available on the internet:

<http://founding.hsnc.com/SSN/employ.htm>

<http://founding.hsnc.com/SSN/default.htm>

The Supreme Court keeps ruling over and over again that a right cannot be taxed. There are still a few people in America that have kept their right to earn wages. The courts must protect their right to untaxed wages. Those who have waived their right to earn wages have agreed that their wages can be taxed. This agreement will be upheld in courts. Why is this so hard to understand?

The W4 withholding allowance certificate is an IRS form for tax class 5 (gift and estate tax) not for tax class 2 (income tax). Yet employers keep pretending it is for withholding of wages for an income tax.

#### SUMMARY

Numbered persons have waived the equitable rights to their labor, and no longer have the right to benefit from their labor, thereby making their labor taxable. These people are called “employees”. Except for civil servants, only indigent avowed socialists can fall into the government’s hidden definition of an ‘employee’.

Bureaucrats can tax this labor without risking imprisonment, because they have evidence of a sworn affidavit, sworn contrary to scripture, that the numbered employee is an indigent avowed socialist who has equitably converted his labor. An indigent so desperate (unable to support himself and not supported by family, church or state) that he applied for federal funds in order to survive, knowing that the Constitution does not provide welfare to anyone other than government owned slaves.

The rights to the indigent’s labor belong to whoever owns the IRS and these labor rights are administered by the Secretary of the Treasury. More about this later, but you won’t like it.

“Enemies” have been captured, vanquished and subdued and PUT INTO PERPETUAL SLAVERY. This has been the stated intent of the Catholic church ever since the Papal Bull *Doctrine of Discovery* in 1452. It seems as though their web has snared many. Is this entrapment? Just like a police sting operation, their web traps only those who are predisposed to become their enemies.

If you want to get out of withholding, here are some resources to investigate.

- Go to <http://web.nossn.com> page down to the bottom and click on “freedom materials”
- Go to [www.taxfreedom101.com/library/social\\_security.htm](http://www.taxfreedom101.com/library/social_security.htm) and read about the male nurse who was able to get his withholding refunded.
- Go to [www.taxfreedom101.com/library/social\\_security.htm](http://www.taxfreedom101.com/library/social_security.htm) for the National Workers Rights Committee

### 4.14.3 Employee's I-9 and W-4 forms

And as for the I-9 form, the form's Instructions say

*Providing the Social Security number is voluntary, except for employees hired by employers participating in the USCIS Electronic Employment Eligibility Verification Program*

Note that the E-Verify program's disclosure is not mandatory. It is based entirely on a good-faith response, and employers are not using good faith.

There is no penalty for not securing a Social Security Number on the form, and the Department of Homeland Security [Employers Bulletin 102](#) even says the SSN disclosure is voluntary.

**NOTE: An employee is not required to include his or her social security number in Section 1 of the Form I-9, nor can the employee be required to do so by the employer.** This information block is optional. However, there is one exception: when the employee is hired by an employer participating in the voluntary automated employment eligibility confirmation pilot program. Therefore, an employer cannot require an employee to include his or her social security number **unless** the employer is participating in the voluntary automated employment eligibility confirmation pilot program.<sup>6</sup>

The failure of an employee to include a social security number in section 1 of the Form I-9 does not subject an employer to civil money penalties. Such an omission is neither a substantive, technical, or procedural failure to comply with the Form I-9 requirements.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>6</sup> While the Department of Homeland Security has the authority pursuant to section 264(f) of the Immigration and Nationality Act, 8 USC 1304(f), to require aliens to provide their social security account number on any alien record that it maintains, its authority does not extend to the Form I-9, except for individuals hired by employers participating in the voluntary automated employment eligibility confirmation pilot programs. See IIRIRA § 403(a)(1)(A).

<sup>7</sup> See 63 Fed. Reg. 16909 (April 7, 1998) (implementing the good faith provision of section 411 of IIRIRA).

#### I-9 Form

I-9 Form [Employer's Bulletin 102](#)

Employers (not employees) have a duty to complete the form I-9.

But Employers are instructed in Bulletin 102 " If a given employee refuses to provide his/her signature or attestation, there is no reason for the employer to proceed to complete Section 2, and the employer should not continue to employ the individual."

This instruction conflicts with the multiple warnings that after they know you are eligible, they cannot discriminate.

Your state will have a law the makes it a crime to obtain a signature by deception. If you have religious objections to the different types of perjury [oath](#) signatures, perhaps you could memorize the state crime's code number and write it on the signature line. Words like "without prejudice" or "under protest" are also important to judges who want to see proof that you are serious about your beliefs. These words are "explicit reservation of rights" according to UCC 1-207.

Should you allow them to discriminate based on your refusal to falsify a federal document, or should you raise religious objections? Do you want to phrase your objections as moral objections? Do you want to settle your dispute in small claims court every paycheck?

The I-9 form is for Seasonal Agricultural workers (Title 8 Code of Federal Regulations 274a.2 and [29 U.S. Code section 1802](#)), and the I-9 form Social Security Number section is voluntary (according to Department of Homeland Security [Employer's Bulletin 102](#)).

E-verify is only a good faith exception to the general rule that employers cannot force a SSN from a new employee. See [IIRIRA](#) § 403(a)(1)(A). Do you already have proof that they are acting in bad faith ? for such things as [depending on your situation]. Refusal to provide proper Privacy Act statement, refusal to show " clear and unequivocal language" of a tax statute, making a SSN a condition of employment, discrimination against religion, refusal to reasonably accommodate religious beliefs, demanding worship, extortion, attempted [genocide](#).

E-verify does not require you to get a SSN if you don't have one. But it does force you to conform to their perverted definition of citizenship. Perhaps you need to establish a record of citizenship through an Administrative hearing 5 USC 556?

The Immigration law IIRIRA section 403(a)(1) says:

*(1) PROVISION OF ADDITIONAL INFORMATION.—The person or entity shall obtain from the individual (and the individual shall provide) and shall record on the I-9 or similar form—*  
*(A) the individual's social security account number, if the individual has been issued such a number, and*  
*(B) if the individual does not attest to United States citizenship under section 274A(b)(2), such identification or authorization number established by the Immigration and Naturalization Service for the alien as the Attorney General shall specify,*

They can say that because the word *shall* can mean *may*.

The I-9 authority comes from 8 U.S.C. §1324a according to its Privacy Act Statement. Yet 8 USC 1324a says it is enforcing the "Migrant and Seasonal Agricultural Worker Protection Act." It is irrelevant that you do not seek protection under this act. Will you falsify federal forms just because someone wants you to? The implementing regulations in 8 CFR 274a.2(a) say the I-9 form is for Migrant and Seasonal Agricultural Workers under Title 29 USC 1802. And 8 CFR 274a2(b)(4) Limitations of use of [Form I-9](#) states that the form is limited ONLY for enforcement of the Act.

Also read: Form I-9 rebuttal <http://www.originalintent.org/edu/i-9.php>

Aside: There is a long history of IRS relationship to Agriculture. The wheat staff on the IRS emblem, the mural on the ceiling of the Capitol dome, and most importantly: the IRS payroll is paid by the Department of Agriculture, not by Treasury Department. See <http://notfooledbygovernement.com/essays/kings-earth-take-tribute/>

The I-9 authority comes from 8 U.S.C. §1324a according to its Privacy Act Statement. Yet 8 U.S.C. §1324a says it is enforcing the "Migrant and Seasonal Agricultural Worker Protection Act." Do you seek protection under this act? Will you falsify federal forms just because someone wants you to? The implementing regulations in 8 CFR §274a.2(a) say the I-9 form is only for Migrant and Seasonal Agricultural Workers under Title 29 U.S.C. §1802. And 8 CFR §274a2(b)(4) [Limitations of use of Form I-9](#) states that the form is limited ONLY for enforcement of the Act

The I-9 form is for Seasonal Agricultural workers (Title 8 Code of Federal Regulations 274a.2 and 29 U.S. Code section 1802), and the I-9 form Social Security Number section is voluntary (according to Department of Homeland Security Employer Bulletin 102).

Can you provide proof of eligibility to work in the United States?

What a question. Right on the application form you have proof of their intent to discriminate.

The civil rights law [42 U.S.C. §1981](#) entitled "Equal rights under the law", in section (a) states that "All persons" (which I presume includes undocumented non-citizens) have a right to contract equal to that of a white citizen.

Since there is such a discrepancy in terminology, now is a good time to ask them to define the terms on the application in such a way as to allow Equal Employment Opportunity and also "eligibility to work in the United States"

You cannot even answer their question until they give you a good definition. And don't accept "these are I-9 requirements" as a definition. No one should pay money (buy credentials) to buy a right.

The W-4 form "Employee's Withholding Certificate" is voluntary (Title 26 U.S. Code, section 3402p)

The W-4 form is for Tax Class 5 (gift and estate tax). According to

- Internal Revenue Manual 3(27)(68)4.3 and
- Law Enforcement Manual III page LEM 3(27)(68)0-42

There is no Employee's Withholding Certificate for tax class 2 (income tax)

Go ahead, ask the IRS for one.

And, of course, the federal government's definition of employee includes only federal employees. See Title 5 U.S. Code 2105. The definition of "employee" in Title 26 U.S. Code, section 3401(c), which is the withholding laws, say that employees includes only "an officer, employee, or elected official of the United States, a State, or any political subdivision thereof..." And the definition of "employee" in the Internal Revenue Code 7701(a)(20) make it sound as if insurance salesmen are the only employees.

And the tax code definition of employer 26 U.S. Code 3401(d) uses confusing language to define that employers are those who pay wages, with exceptions and exceptions to exceptions. If you want to try to figure it out keep in mind that the a trade or business includes only "the performance of the functions of a public office" according to 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(26)

#### Privacy Act

The 1974 Privacy Act has an uncodified section 7(a)(1) "It shall be unlawful for any Federal, State or local government agency to deny to any individual any right, benefit, or privilege provided by law because of such individual's refusal to disclose his social security account number." And then lists a big exception "7(a)(2) the provisions of paragraph (1) of this subsection shall not apply with respect to-- (A) any disclosure which is required by Federal Statute, or"

And we know that the term "government agency" was intended to apply to private employers because the Legislative History says so.

7(b) "Any Federal, State, or local government agency which requests an individual to disclose his social security account number shall inform that individual whether that disclosure is mandatory or voluntary, by what statutory or other authority such number is solicited, and what uses will be made of it."

And we can speculate that a "withholding exemption certificate" might be required in some situations, but the law never says that a SSN is required. And we know that a W-4 withholding exemption certificate is for tax class 5 (gift and estate tax), not for tax class 2 (income tax).

This uncodified text is no longer available from the government printing office. In other words, you cannot purchase a copy that is admissible in court. But you can still find the text on the internet at [http://epic.org/privacy/laws/privacy\\_act.html](http://epic.org/privacy/laws/privacy_act.html)

Background check?

Nowhere in the Fair Credit Reporting Act are disclosure of SSNs mandatory. They will tell you that they need it for identification. The only problem with that theory is that identification is only needed for USERS of the data that the credit reporting agency sells the data to.

## Employers duty to ask for TIN

[Title 26 U.S. Code, section 6109\(a\)\(3\)](#)

*Any person required under the authority of this title to make a return, statement, or other document with respect to another person shall request from such other person, and shall include in any such return, statement, or other document, such identifying number as may be prescribed for securing proper identification of such other person.*

If they are an employer (as defined in federal statutes), and If they are required to make a return with your number, and if they asked, then they fulfilled the law.

At no time did you ask them to violate any law.

If it is true that they are required to make a return to report your wages, then they risk a \$50 fine for not asking. (even though [Wages are not income](#), but that is another argument that you shouldn't make.)

Title 26USC6011(a) When required by regulations prescribed by the Secretary any person made liable for any tax imposed by this title, or with respect to the collection thereof, shall make a return or statement according to the forms and regulations...

Ask: What law taxes my wages? They will probably say section 6001 or 6011, but these do not make you liable for tax.

They have procedures on what to do when TINs are missing.

[IRS Pub 1586](#) for missing or incorrect TINs with advice on how to avoid penalties.

Again: At no time did you ask them to violate any law.

If your wages are taxable, then [26 U.S.C. §6109\(a\)\(3\)](#) requires employers to furnish employee TIN to the IRS if they know it. There are regulations on what to do to avoid a \$50 penalty. And [Section 3406](#) requires Backup withholding for missing numbers.

Implementing regulations in 26 Code of Federal Regulations [§301.6109-1](#) Identifying numbers.

(b)..... A U.S. person whose number must be included on a document filed by another person must give the taxpayer identifying number so required to the other person on request. For penalties for failure to supply taxpayer identifying numbers, see sections 6721 through 6724. For provisions dealing specifically with the duty of employees with respect to their social security numbers, see § 31.6011(b)-2 (a) and (b) of this chapter (Employment Tax Regulations). For provisions dealing specifically with the duty of employers with respect to employer identification numbers, see § 31.6011(b)-1 of this chapter (Employment Tax Regulations).

Also see

[http://edocket.access.gpo.gov/cfr\\_2009/aprqr/pdf/26cfr601.401.pdf](http://edocket.access.gpo.gov/cfr_2009/aprqr/pdf/26cfr601.401.pdf)

(b)(2) Employees' account numbers

S.M. note: in my own case, my wages were taxable due to erroneous codes on my IRS computer files (The [IMF and AMDISA](#) files). The 16<sup>th</sup> Amendment allows them to collect taxes "from whatever source derived". My wages were a source from which money was derived, but the tax was for --unknown to me-- operating an underground coalmine in the Virgin Islands. Which is of course, a legitimate federal taxable activity. It turns out that when I filed a 1040 form for the first time, even just to get a refund, they presumed that I was a taxpayer and assigned me an arbitrary activity code -- after all, I signed under penalty of perjury that their income tax laws applied to me, so they had to take my word for it. (The OMB number on the 1040 form is also for form 2555 As if the 1040 is a schedule to be stapled to a form 2555) Since I did not attach my 1040 to a [Form 2555](#) to identify my --unknown to me--foreign earned income, they had to pick any arbitrary taxable activity. It then became an administrative record admissible in court.

As you can see, it is the employers' scam that the IRS relies upon to enslave us. Conspiracy to racketeering laws are found at [18 U.S.C. §1962\(d\)](#)

And don't confuse salary with income. (Wages are [not income](#), although government wages are taxable). This is another claim that you shouldn't make.

It seems that history has come around full circle. Lincoln was the first Republican President. The Republican party was created to promote economic alternatives to slavery, while the Democrat party had [an alternate history](#). But this time around, we are all slaves. I recommend the 2016 movie Hillary's America.

In Lincoln's second Inaugural Address, he questioned why any moral man would want his bread provided by the labor of others. Today's welfare society is just as immoral as slavery. Welfare and slavery are the same thing. It is using government laws to force others to provide for you. If you expect others to provide for you, you are as corrupt as a slave owner.

The 1040 form started as a bond during the Civil War -- you would be paid for government use of your money. By the way, Lincoln died on April 15<sup>th</sup>. John Wilkes Booth had strong ties to the British banks.

<http://www.abovetopsecret.com/forum/thread561620/pg1>

Abraham Lincoln:

*"Accustomed to trampling on the rights of others you have lost the genius of your own independence and become the fit subjects of the first cunning tyrant who rises among you."*  
September 11, 1858

Employers' duty to withhold.

26 U.S.C. §3402(a) Except as otherwise provided... every [unstated: federal] employer making payment of wages shall deduct and withhold....

There is way too much tax law to study. And what you don't know can harm you.

Are you effectively connected with the performance of a trade or business of the United States?

Are you a United States person?

Is the word "includes" inclusive, such that it means everything that is included is on the list, and anything else not mentioned is excluded? [Example: A state includes Washington, D.C. Another Example: the term "trade or business" includes the functions of a public office.]

Employee to provide "withholding exemption certificate"?

26 U.S.C. §3402(f)(1) An employee receiving wages shall on any day be entitled to the following withholding exemptions...

26 U.S.C. §3402(f)(2)(A) On or before the date of the commencement of employment with an employer, the employee shall furnish the employer with a signed withholding exemption certificate...

Nowhere does it say the withholding exemption certificate is a W-4. There is no penalty to the employee for not providing it.

## Employee duty to provide number

26 U.S.C. §6109(a)(2) Any person with respect to whom a return, statement, or other document is required under the authority of this title to be made by another...

If they cannot show you the law that makes your wages taxable, then they are acting in bad faith again.

U.S. Supreme Court in Spreckels Sugar Ref. Co. v. McClain, 24 S.Ct. 382 (1904): "the citizen is exempt from taxation unless the same is imposed by clear and unequivocal language".

## What Social Security Number?

[26 U.S.C. § 6109](#) Identifying numbers

(d) Use of social security account number

The social security account number issued to an individual for purposes of section 205(c)(2)(A) of the Social Security Act shall, except as shall otherwise be specified under regulations of the Secretary, be used as the identifying number for such individual for purposes of this title.

The only kind of SSN you can use is the kind "issued to an individual for purposes of section 205(c)(2)(A) of the Social Security Act".

There is a big problem with this. Most Americans can never qualify for such a number.

SSNs are only available to federal welfare recipients (unstated: who are unable to take care of themselves) according to the [Social Security Act section 205](#)(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), and to aliens after 1972.

The constitution prohibits welfare to individuals with one exception. Only when absolutely necessary to save a life. This is the "overriding governmental interest" spoken of in U.S. v. Lee where even the Amish who have SSNs give up their religious liberty.

<http://notfooledbygovernment.com/essays/welfare/>

## 2. Christ confronted lawyers.

Christ and Paul spoke bluntly. They risked stoning when they confronted those who twist morality. They did not "speak the truth in love" to their opponents. They spoke such things as: *Woe unto you, You hypocrites!* (spoken directly to them 7 times in Matthew 23) *Ye shall receive the greater damnation. You vipers, how can you escape the damnation of hell?* (Matthew 23:33) *Woe unto you lawyers, for you have taken away the key of knowledge* (Luke 11:52) *Ye are of your father the Devil* (John 8:44). Agitators should be castrated (Galatians 5:12). They spoke plain truth. You are to love society by driving out evil. Speaking plain truths means that you understand your Bible. 1st Timothy 5:20 *"Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear."* You have a duty to warn sinners, Ezekiel 3:18-21.

3. [Federal Rule of Civil Procedure \(F.R.C.P.\) 27](#) A Rule 27 lawsuit will certainly stir thing up. And they must answer your questions.

## 4. Additional references

- Employment tax rebuttal <http://www.originalintent.org/edu/empltax.php>



Sutton v. Providence

The case does not support employer's arguments. The case proves that Sutton's lawyer was incompetent. Sutton failed to rebut the erroneous statement "Defendant is required by law to obtain Plaintiff's social security number." nor did Sutton question the erroneous use of the word "employee"

Even though employers are required to request a number (if the employment is taxable), employees are not required to provide a number. Employers pretend that disclosure is mandatory.

Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 301.6109-1(c), titled "Requirement to furnish another's number":

- 26 CFR §31.3402(f)(2)-1, withholding regulations ("employer is required to request...but if the employee fails to furnish..."), and
- 26 CFR §301.6724-1(e) Reasonable Cause, and
- Title 26 U.S. Code, section 3402(p)(3) titled "Authority for other voluntary withholding"

So even if they were required to request, they are still not required to obtain worker SSNs. Not even from employees that meet the federal definition. Nor can they be punished for failing to obtain such numbers. Also note that 26 U.S.C. §3402(p) requires that YOU give your voluntary agreement to withhold. The [IRS Publication 1586](#) "Backup Withholding On Missing and Incorrect TINs" gives advice on how to avoid penalties, although not law, also supports this. The determination in EEOC v. Information Systems Consulting is also supports this. And as for the I-9 form, 8 CFR §274(a)(4) also shows that employers cannot be punished if the alien employee exercises his right to refuse to witness against himself. All these, if obtained under discovery, can be admissible under rules of evidence, rule 902, to refute the Sutton argument.

Please explain how anyone is compelled to witness against himself. What evidence shows that you have waived equal protection and due process rights? What evidence shows that employer is required to obtain a Social Security Number?

Seaworth v. Pearson, 203 F.3d. 1056 ruled that "Requiring defendants to violate the Internal Revenue Code and subject themselves to potential penalties by not providing Seaworth's social security number on information returns results in undue hardship"

Undue hardship?

Undue hardship even though there is no law requiring them to obtain a SSN?

Undue hardship when their only reporting requirement is to state that they requested the number?

*Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 301.6109-1(c)*

*"... If the person making the return, statement, or other document does not know the taxpayer identifying number of the other person... such person must request the other person's number. The request should state that the identifying number is required to be furnished under authority of law. When the person making the return, statement, or other document does not know the number of the other person, and has complied with the request provision of this paragraph (c), such person must sign an affidavit on the transmittal document forwarding such returns, statements, or other documents to the Internal Revenue Service, so stating."*

Undue hardship in a nation where the 6<sup>th</sup> Amendment can compel witnesses? Has the Bill of Rights become an undue hardship to those who have sworn an oath to uphold it?

Undue hardship?

Luke 11:46 Woe unto ye lawyers, for ye lade men with burdens [=hardship] grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

Equal Employment Opportunity Commission v. Allendale Nursing Center, 996 F Supp 712 rejected plaintiff's "attempt to transform a section ...which allows an employer to likely avoid certain penalties if it takes certain steps into a requirement that the employer must take these steps in order to accommodate the employee who caused the penalty in the first place".

The \$50 penalty exists to make sure the employer ASKS all employees for SSNs. The penalty is not caused by employees, it is caused by employers. Employees do not cause employers to neglect the law. The law itself makes section 26 USC 6724(a) a requirement by providing additional penalties "in case of intentional disregard" by employers NOT employees.

Even the regulation states that the employer must take these steps.

Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 301.6109-1(c)

"... If the person making the return, statement, or other document does not know the taxpayer identifying number of the other person... such person must request the other person's number. The request should state that the identifying number is required to be furnished under authority of law. When the person making the return, statement, or other document does not know the number of the other person, and has complied with the request provision of this paragraph (c), such person must sign an affidavit on the transmittal document forwarding such returns, statements, or other documents to the Internal Revenue Service, so stating."

Baltgalvis v. Newport News Shipbuilding Inc, 1132 F.Supp. 2d 414 found that the IRS \$50 penalty defendant may face for not providing a SSN, and the burden of applying for a waiver each constitute a hardship.

There is no provision for applying for a waiver. There is no waiver to apply for. There is no application. There is no application form. There is no waiver. There is no waiver that needs to be obtained. There is no law that indicates that the employer needs to obtain any waiver.

The defendant may face a \$50 penalty for willfully neglecting to provide a SSN. If employer wants to be protected from the fine, the law 26 CFR §301.6109-1(c) allows him to provide a statement that he asked for a SSN, but that none was provided.

Undue hardship?

Courts should provide fair impartial trials. Why are these courts proving the employers' cases? It is up to the employer to prove to a jury that it cannot accommodate the employees' religious beliefs. The EEOC and the Civil Rights Act agree that if "the employee proves a prima facie case of discrimination, the burden shifts to the employer to show either that it initiated good faith efforts to accommodate reasonably the employee's religious practices or that it could not reasonably accommodate the employee without undue hardship."

#### 4.15 Citizens do not pay income tax

Only Aliens pay income tax (until they become citizens). Citizens voluntarily pay a gift tax. Citizens, for the most part, do not pay federal income tax (unless they leave the country).

The reason citizens do not pay federal income tax, unless they voluntarily perform a federal taxable activity, is because only states can control ALL taxation within their borders.

Supreme Court in Madden v. Commonwealth of Kentucky, [309 U.S. 83](#) (1940):

*"In the states, there reposes the sovereignty to manage their own affairs except only as the requirements of the Constitution otherwise provide. Within these constitutional limits the power of the state over taxation is plenary."*

For many decades IRS Publication 515 Withholding for Resident Aliens had a statement that when the Alien becomes a citizen, all withholding stops.

*"If an individual gives you a written statement that he or she is a citizen ... you do not have to withhold tax..."*

Then, all of a sudden, in the 2001 edition, it was removed. It's as if they were trying to hide something.

Resident Aliens who become U.S. Citizens are not subject to withholding according to the recently repealed Title 26 Code of Federal Regulations, section 1.1441-5 entitled "Claiming to be a person not subject to withholding." [Citizens were not subject to withholding.](#)

Strangers pay tribute:

Matthew 17:25 (KJV)

*Jesus prevented him, saying, **What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?***

Don't be a stranger, be a citizen

Ephesians 2:19 "Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;"

What is the chance that you are alien to those who overthrew your government, therefore they can tax you?

#### 4.16 Federal ownership of slaves

Who owns the labor of a government ward? After all, wards are disqualified by law from "the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights." and there are legal maxims that

- Protection draws subjection.
- "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" which is found in the Law Dictionary under the Latin phrase *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt*.
- "He who derives a benefit from a thing, ought to feel the disadvantages attending it."
- "No one can unjustly enrich himself at the expense of others" (this creates an enforceable constructive contract).

In other words, It is perfectly legal to sell your birthright for a future bowl of stew. But you cannot have it both ways. You don't get to keep your birthright.

In 1870 it took an amendment to the Constitution to give welfare recipients 40 acres and a mule so that they could survive. For the first time, it became Constitutional to divert Treasury funds to private use. The benefit was distributed as a single handout from federal funds. There were no repeat handouts to freeloaders, you had to earn your bread from the sweat of your face (Genesis 3:19). No harness for the mule, no plow, no food, clothing or shelter, no transportation to the 40 acres, no seeds. And if the mule died because it wasn't fed, there was no replacement mule. Rights only come with responsibilities. You were expected to take care of yourself. No medical care, no unemployment benefits, no minimum wage, no retirement FICA, no health and safety regulations, no protection from your neighbor's smoke or disease.

By 1897, welfare was still not recognized as Constitutional. President Grover Cleveland vetoed an appropriation to provide disaster aid to victims of a Texas drought. His veto stated: "I feel obliged to withhold my approval of the plan to indulge in benevolent and charitable sentiment through the appropriation of public funds... I find no warrant for such an appropriation in the Constitution. The lesson should be constantly enforced that though the people should support the government, the government should not support the people."

It was not until the 1930s that national socialists in America realized that welfare was constitutional for the poor who were near death and could not take care of themselves and, according to the Supreme Court, "...who are presently destitute of property and without resources to obtain the necessities of life, and who have no relatives or friends able and willing to support them." -- but they had to become wards and give up their rights. Rights only come with responsibilities. If you cannot be responsible to take care of yourself (with or without land and a mule) then you cannot have rights.

After the socialists created the Great Depression it was easy to get people to give up all their rights and sign up for Social Security in order to survive. They became government wards. Socialist guardians now took care of them. No longer did they need to take care of themselves. No rights. No responsibilities. Repetitive handouts to freeloaders were now the law of the land. Treasury funds could now be plundered for private use by socialists -- all they had to do was to falsify that they qualified for "benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds".

It is irrelevant that falsifying federal documents is not what you agreed to.

- Acting and consenting partners are liable to the same punishment.
- Ignorance of the law is no excuse.
- Example of what happens when you conspire with government: *Washington v. Berry*, 93 P.2d. 782 at page 783: "A person who commits a crime at the suggestion or instigation of another is as guilty as if the design had originated with him, and it is not material in this respect that the suggestion was made by a police officer."

While the national socialists were overtaking Europe in the 1930s, so also was America overtaken by the exceedingly dreadful Beast that consumed and trampled down the whole earth (Daniel 7:23).

Social Security changed America. THE ONLY FREEDOM THAT WE HAVE TODAY IS FREEDOM FROM RESPONSIBILITY. The only responsibility we have today is to conform your behavior to the will of your guardian (*benefactor* was the Biblical word). -- "It shall not be so among you" (Matthew 20:26) was the warning from Christ

himself. As Blackstone put this rule of law: "a state of dependence will inevitably oblige the inferior to take the will of him, on whom he depends, as the rule of his conduct "

Is it too difficult to predict that the 10 owners of the Federal Reserve Bank will want their collateral? The smoke of your torment shall rise for ever and ever in the presence of the Lamb, whosoever worships the Beast and receives his mark. You are bound by your oath. What part don't you understand?

Can the labor of a ward be hypothecated as collateral for the national debt?

- The financial word *Hypothecate* means to pledge property as security to a lender without transferring ownership. The collateral can be owned by a third party. Your representatives in Congress put up your future labor as collateral for the national debt in order to give you what you demanded.
- Congress represents you and decides for you. 1795 US Supreme Court in *Penhallow v. Doane*, 3 U.S. 55 at page 94: "*representatives shall be chosen to act on the part of the whole. But when they do so, they decide for the whole, and not for themselves only.*"
- The Federal Reserve Act, 38 Stat. 251, Section 14(a) (Title 12 US code chapter 6) allows the foreign lender the right to sell hypothecated property in event of default.

The term *hypothecation* is defined as:

"1. Banking. Offer of stocks, bonds, or other assets owned by a party other than the borrower as collateral for a loan, without transferring title. If the borrower turns the property over to the lender who holds it for safekeeping, the action is referred to as a pledge. If the borrower retains possession, but gives the lender the right to sell the property in event of default, it is a true hypothecation.

2. Securities. The pledging of negotiable securities to collateralize a broker's margin loan. The broker pledges the same securities to a bank as collateral for a broker's loan, the process is referred to as re-hypothecation." (Dictionary of Banking Terms, Fitch pg. 228 (1997).

As seen from the definitions, in hypothecations there is an equitable risk to the actual owner.

Section 16 of the current Federal Reserve Act, which is codified at 12 USC 411, declares that "Federal Reserve Notes" are "obligations of the United States. Therefore, the "full faith and credit" of the United States: which is the substance of the American citizenry; their real property, wealth, assets and productivity that belongs to them, is hypothecated and re-hypothecated by the United States to its obligations as well as to the Federal Reserve for the issuance and backing of Federal Reserve Notes as legal tender "for all taxes, customs and other public dues."

- The U.S. went bankrupt in 1933
- The U.S. Supreme Court in *U.S. v. Kozminski*, 487 U.S. 931, has recently confirmed that it is perfectly lawful to hold slaves to unpaid forced labor. Because it is voluntary. -- Well guess what? You volunteered when you applied to your guardian to become a ward.
- The GATT treaty now requires the U.S. to assign SSNs to infants.
- According to the Supreme Court in *Ashwander v. TVA* anyone who "avails himself of a benefit" cannot then question the Constitutionality of the law that he benefited from. The Supreme Court WILL NOT consider the case.

Just what are the chances that getting a Social Security Number waives your right to earn wages, thereby making your wages taxable? After all, **If you had a right to sell your labor, it would not be taxed.**

A right cannot be taxed. A right must be protected. Government exists to protect rights. The purpose of the U.S. government is to protect rights. The Declaration of Independence says: "That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among men..."

It is not a governmental function to take your rights, or infringe your rights (except to save a life), or regulate your rights.

A right cannot be taxed. If your wages are taxed, it is because you do not have a right to earn wages. It should be obvious that you somehow waived your right to earn wages. So, just who owns your labor? How is your labor provided to an employer (the payer of wages) and is the employer's use of your federally owned labor really "*the performance of the functions of a public office*" as mentioned in [Title 26 U.S. Code, section 7701\(a\)\(26\)](#)?

The Thirteenth Amendment did away with involuntary servitude. Voluntary servitude remains entirely constitutional. Ownership of slaves remains with us today. By volunteering to be resident on the feudal manor you become subject to the lord of the manor, to whom you owe absolute allegiance. Your lord has the right to use whatever force is necessary to enforce compliance. This is perfectly Biblical. It is voluntary servitude because you volunteered. Even the Supreme Court (92 US@551) said: "*The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government.*"

The U.S. Constitution Article I section 10 prohibits states from impairing the obligation of contracts. But if you walk into any place of employment you will see mandatory postings boldly declaring that your employment is impaired (unemployment insurance, minimum wage, family leave, safety standards, disability benefits, equal employment opportunity, polygraph protection act, overtime pay, etc). How can anyone look at these posting and even suggest that your contract for wages remains unimpaired?

BEFORE the Roosevelt Socialists crammed Social Security down our throats, they tried forcing employers to give benefits to employees. The US Supreme Court in *Railroad Retirement Board v. Alton Railroad Co.*, 295 U.S. 330:

*"The catalog of means and actions which might be imposed upon an employer in any business, tending to the satisfaction and comfort of his employees, seems endless. Provision for free medical attendance, nursing, clothing, food, housing, and education of children, and a hundred other matters might with equal propriety be proposed as tending to relieve the employee of mental strain and worry. Can it fairly be said that the power of Congress to regulate interstate commerce extends to the prescription of any or all of these things? Is it not apparent that they are really and essentially related solely to the social welfare of the worker, and therefore remote from any regulation of commerce as such? We think the answer is plain. These matters obviously lie outside the orbit of congressional power."* [May 6, 1935]

Read that again. There are no mandated benefits. The welfare of workers cannot be regulated. Benefits for "*the social welfare of the worker*" cannot be "*imposed upon an employer in any business.*" No Unemployment Insurance, no Worker's Compensation, no minimum wage, no mandatory disability insurance, first-aid, health or safety (OSHA) regulation, no health care benefits, no forced Social Security contributions.

That's right. In a free country, people manage their own affairs. If you are not managing your own affairs, isn't it obvious that wards are disqualified by law from "*the full enjoyment of ordinary legal rights.*" If others are managing your own affairs, and you do not interfere to prevent it, guess what? They become your "attorney in fact". Here is the Law Dictionary definition of Tacit Procuration.

**PROCURATION.** Agency; proxy; the act of constituting another one's attorney in fact. The act by which one person gives power to another to act in his place, as he could do himself. *Clinton v. Hibb's Ex'x*, 202 Ky. 304, 259 S. W. 356, 358, 35 A. L. R. 462. Action under a power of attorney or other constitution of agency. Indorsing a bill or note "by procuration" is doing it as proxy for another or by his authority. The use of the word procuration (usually, *per procuracione*, or abbreviated to *per proc.* or *p. p.*) on a promissory note by an agent is notice that the agent has but a limited authority to sign. Neg. Instr. Act § 21.

An *express* procuration is one made by the express consent of the parties. An *implied* or *tacit* procuration takes place when an individual sees another managing his affairs and does not interfere to prevent it. Dig. 17, 1, 6, 2; 50, 17, 60; Code 7, 32, 2. Procurations are also divided into those which contain absolute power, or a general authority, and those which give only a limited power. Dig. 3, 3, 58; 17, 1, 60, 4.

Also, the act or offence of procuring women for lewd purposes. See Odgers, C. L. 214.

From Black's Law Dictionary, 1933 Third Edition. Notice that a "*tacit procuration takes place when an individual sees another managing his affairs and does not interfere to prevent it.*"

Can you be a slave and not know it? I'll give you a few hints:

- *Compton's Encyclopedia* article Slavery and Serfdom: "Other forms of servitude related to slavery, and sometimes indistinguishable from it, are serfdom, debt bondage, indentured service, peonage, and corvee (statute labor)."
- *Elwell Evangelical Dictionary*: "Roman laws were passed to protect slaves and to allow rights, even of private possessions..."
- Civil Rights Lawyer Gerry Spence: "People have not yet discovered they have been disenfranchised. Even lawyers can't stand to admit it."
- Clark's *Summary of American Law* index entry for "Employees" is "see Master and Servant"
- When there was seven years of famine under Pharaoh, people who wanted to survive sold all their land, their cattle and all their possessions to Pharaoh in exchange for food. The next year they had nothing, so they sold themselves into slavery. In Genesis 47:21-26 SLAVES OWNED BY PHARAOH HAD A 20% INCOME TAX and were allowed to keep 80%. This was during a time of national emergency when they were recovering from a famine. IF YOU PAY MORE THAN 20% TAX, THEN YOU ARE WORSE OFF THAN A SLAVE. Or stated more correctly, if your living allowance (paycheck) is less than 80% then you are worse off than a slave. Today's expenditure of federal, state and local governments is 50% of the gross national product. If you think you are below the 50% tax bracket, you didn't add all the hidden taxes and don't forget to count your share of the increase in the national debt.

Notice from the *Compton's Encyclopedia* article cited above, debt bondage is sometimes indistinguishable from slavery. I have an honest question. At what point did you agree to pay your share of the National Debt? And where in your employment "contract" did you agree that they don't have to pay you the money they take out for SS "insurance", unemployment "insurance", disability "insurance" and all the other forced socialism that is contrary to the reason your government was created? Could it be The Social Security Act Title VIII section 801 words "*In addition to other taxes, there is hereby imposed on the income of every individual...*"

The writers of your Constitution, in Article 1, section 8, delegated to their servants the authority to borrow money; therefore they were liable for the debts that their servants incurred on their behalf. They knew that they owed the debt and that their property was the collateral. At what point did you become liable for your share? Was it by being born? Was it by registering to vote? By voluntarily paying a tax? Or was it by agreeing to be a ward on the federal plantation? Your

share of the National Debt is now \$118,000 per family. This is far more than the net worth of all private property. How do you intend to pay this obligation?

Answer: You agreed that you are the collateral! The Social Security Act section 801 makes you liable for Social Security payments that are imposed in addition to other taxes.

Unfortunately for you, Satan and his demons have every right, under God, to capture, vanquish and subdue enemies of Christ, and bring them into their faith, "... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."

Before I continue, you need to understand some basics about what government is, what a republic is and what an all capitalized PERSON is. Satan has a counterfeit authority for you to obey. Your legitimate government went bankrupt in 1933, and was substituted with a multinational bankruptcy receivership. Details are covered in depth elsewhere. Here are the basics:

Original State Governments	Bankrupt federal Government as turned over to creditors
Republic (libera res publica =free from things Public), private	Public
Proper noun State = original government set up by Christians as a Church. Instituted among men to secure those rights, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed.	all capitalized STATE = name of a foreign corporation run by military democracy. Their state is still their church, it enforces their rituals, such as oath swearing. There is however, separation of your church from their state. You consented to be governed.
The Constitution was written to control government. We the People are masters of the state civil servants.	Federal Servants of your state servants are now forced to obey their creditors.
Judicial power can not enforce legislated laws: 1- Because servants do not write laws to control their masters (legislated laws do not apply to the common man) and 2- because there must be a separation of powers between the legislative and judicial. Thomas Jefferson wrote: "To consider the judges as the ultimate arbiters of all constitutional questions is a very dangerous doctrine indeed, and one which would place us under the despotism of an oligarchy. " (full quote cited later)	There is no Judicial power. Courts obey their chain of command: must enforce legislated laws
people cease to be private if they register as Public, or profit from things public.	Government can only do business with registered PERSONS (as articles in commerce). This is why they ask for ID identification proof that you are government property. They cannot spend appropriated funds, including their labor, dealing with non-government (private, free-from-things-public) people.
Private people cannot receive public credit or pay interest or receive interest	public PERSONS can receive interest as a public "right" (The Supreme Court says it is now an unpunishable crime, German Alliance Insurance Co. v. Kansas, 233 U.S. 389)
Can protect society by hanging a murderer without appeal. Must respect your right to duel to the death (because servants cannot settle their masters' disputes). Andrew Jackson survived three duels BEFORE we elected him president. What would happen to someone today who was man enough to settle his own disputes?	Everything must be done in commerce. Only the all capitalized PERSONS can be charged with a crime.



Wages are taxable only by apportionment. Article 1, section 2 of your Constitution.	National debt is secured by all future wages. Wage tax pays the interest first.
real State governments are only available to unregistered people. The moment someone accepts a public benefit, their benefactor protects them from their original church government. The Supreme Court in <u>Ex Parte Milligan</u> , 71 U.S. 2, determined that States have a duty to protect their citizens from the federal government.	Protection requires subjection. Law dictionary: “protection ... by government is on condition of his submission to the laws, and such submission ... entitles the individual to the protection of the government”

Perhaps you now have a hint that you voluntarily subjected yourself to (are under a legal incapacity to) foreign creditors.

Now, imagine a legal system so diabolical that:

- a doctor (licensed by the state and acting as the state’s agent), by signing a birth certificate, pledges the future earnings of the baby as collateral for the national debt. This is also a financing statement pursuant to UCC 9-302.
- a couple, by getting a marriage certificate from their owner, agree that their vows to the state god can be cancelled by their owner’s divorce court, and agree that their babies belong to their owner.
- only the all capitalized names that you see on government IDs can open a bank account or drive or cash a check or pay a utility bill or travel by airline or inherit property. On the other hand, only the all capitalized name can be accused of a crime, or pay a tax or be drafted.
- where people could cancel the obligations of their contracts (bankruptcy)
- where “your” assets are returned to their rightful owner upon death, by probate (heirs can be custodians of the state property if they pay fees)
- Where the payment of a tax not owed creates an obligation to make future payments.
- Where the U.S. Supreme Court in U.S. v. Kozminski, 487 U.S. 931, confirmed that it is perfectly lawful to hold slaves to unpaid forced labor.
- In a land, prior to the Civil War, anyone could be a prosecutor (and control their courts) and now only government attorneys can be prosecutors.
- Where prior to 1906 government attorneys could NOT talk to a grand jury, for fear of influencing them, as for example in U.S. v. Rosenthal, 121 Fed. 862, and now grand juries are controlled by government attorneys.
- Where the Supreme Court determined in Briscoe v. Lahue, 460 U.S. 325 that police cannot be punished for giving perjured testimony that convicts someone.
- Where the Head of the Harvard Law School, Alan Dershowitz, testifies to Congress that there is overwhelming evidence that police and prosecutors perjure themselves regularly in order to convict the innocent. [www.house.gov/judiciary/101308.htm](http://www.house.gov/judiciary/101308.htm)
- where “Federal prosecutors were clearly entitled to immunity for initiating prosecution, whether or not charges were false, and whether or not prosecutors knew charges were false...” (Martinez v. Winner, 771 F.2d. 424)
- where “Judicial immunity is not waived even though actions on part of judge were grievously erroneous or prompted by malice or corruption” (Patterson v. Aiken, 628 F.Supp. 1068)
- where “Judge is immune from civil damage suits ... immunity extends even to malicious or corrupt acts.” (Bryant v. O’Connor, 671 F.Supp. 1279)
- where “Absolute immunity shelters prosecutors even when they act maliciously, wantonly, or negligently.” (Rykers v. Alford, 832 F.2d. 895)
- where the Supreme Court in 1972 Mitchum v. Foster, 407 U.S. 225, 242 ruled that a citizen injured by a government officer and seeking injunctive relief needed an act of Congress.

Aside: I can go on and on, but you get the picture. Your servants are now out of your control. We have gone from a nation that must punish corrupt officials, to one that must not punish corrupt officials. In fact, up until the early 1900’s there was a judicial doctrine that “Unclean hands shall never pollute the pure fountain of justice.” It is obvious that the supreme power (jura summi imperii) no longer resides in the people. You have lost the nation. As for myself, the troublesome part is where the Hebrew word “gods” *’elohiyim* that is in the first commandment “Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.” refers to judges or magistrates. I’m beginning to think that legitimate government is the restrainer in 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:7 that has been taken out of the way. This might just reveal ourselves to be the man of lawlessness. The word “man” in the phrase “man of lawlessness” is the Greek “*anthropos*,” meaning all of mankind not just an individual. It is not the Greek word “*aner*” which is used for an individual.

The doctrine of immunity also protects bureaucrats who deny you your rights when you fail to disclose your Social Security Number. Even though you have a clearly established right to refuse to disclose a number, bureaucrats cannot be punished unless they are aware of this right. Doyle v. Wilson, 529 F.Supp. 1343. Mr. Doyle could not get his money refunded by a clerk unless he gave a SSN. The bureaucrats could keep his money until he gave a number, because they did not know he had a right to refuse to give a number. Theft became legal. You now have to prove to bureaucrats that you have a right to refuse disclosure, and you have to do this before they punish you!

ATTORNEYS ARE NOT LAWYERS. An attorney is one who entraps slaves for his master. An attorney has the duty to turn your allegiance over to his lord. The word attorney comes from the word “attornment” which means to twist (no surprise here) or to turn over. This originally referred to the transfer of feudal land where the attorney is hired to make sure that all serfs turn over to the new owner with the sale, such that none were freed. This is the same today. Again: Ownership of slaves remains with us today. Later, I will prove that you have already been turned over to the new owners of the federal government.

Oxford English Dictionary 1999, ATTORN: “Turn over to another; transfer, assign... Transfer one’s tenancy or... homage or allegiance to another; formally acknowledge such transfer.”

Webster’s 1828 Dictionary: ATTORNMENT: “The act of a feudatory, vassal or tenant, by which he consents, upon the alienation of an estate, to receive a new lord or superior, and transfers to him his homage and service.”

I’ll start out with examples of legal incapacity. Being under incapacity, you cannot speak for yourself in any legal sense and must be represented, in much the same way that parents must ratify a child’s contract (more about this later). In much the same way that an attorney must represent corporations.

Your government has distinct definitions for different categories of people. Example: The U.S. Supreme Court in Logan v. US, 12 S.Ct. 617, 626: “... it was decided that the word ‘citizen’ ... was used in its political sense, and not as synonymous with ‘resident’, ‘inhabitant’, or ‘person’ ...”

If you are confused by the above quoted terms, then its time to study their deceptive vocabulary.

- Some people have direct allegiance similar to any enlisted military person.
- Others have signed a contract that subjects them to punishment by their masters.
- Still others are responsible for using a government granted status, which subjects them to an *in rem* jurisdiction.
- Paupers (those supported at public expense), children, mentally incompetent,
- those who have sworn a vow of poverty

At what point does ownership of a slave begin and waiver of rights end? It is a very vague distinction. Somewhere in the gray area, you must mark your line in the sand. At what point will you divide asunder civic duty from duty to a master? At what point will you confess that you are a slave? Let’s take a closer look.

#### 4.16.1 Non-persons

First, a simple definition so that you may understand your chain of command.

Law: The expressed will of the sovereign. Also called the Law of Nature.

If we are all created equal then there is only one Sovereign, and He will judge you on the judgement day. But, from the government’s point of view, those who created government, and their posterity, are their sovereigns. Civil servants must do two things: obey their masters and control their subjects. Your government only writes laws for their subjects. They call their subjects by the term “persons”. Government does not write laws to control their masters. Your government calls their masters non-persons. “Persons” are people who are under the government. “Non-persons” are people who are above the laws of their servants. They are above the government they control. LAW COMES FROM NON-PERSONS. Read the chapter on your government’s definition of the word “person”.

The Lord is the Christian’s lawgiver (James 4:12, Isa 33:22). Christian’s founded this country. Christians created Christian State governments, not pagan state governments. The Original State is the Church. An association of representatives of Christian States in a convention created your federal government. Congress could only assemble for the

17 reasons mentioned in Article 1, section 8 of the Constitution. The United States was at one time subordinate to the representatives of your Christian States' civil servants.

In the chapter on the definition of persons I have cited many proofs that non-persons exist and have rights. You are under the Almighty Sovereign's chain of command and He expects you to properly represent this authority.

According to Daniel Garcia's Law Brief, a Sovereign person retains all liberties. He is not part of a nation or state. Garcia claims that Alexander Hamilton was a sovereign non-Citizen. I have no reason to doubt it. Alexander Hamilton was foreign born and could never be president. He was the first Secretary of the Treasury and as such he could not have been a citizen. His duties are to the Arch-treasurer of the United States (presuming, of course, that the United States has a right to exist). The borrower is a slave to the lender (Proverbs 22:7).

- A non-citizen, such as Alexander Hamilton, keeps all his natural rights, but has no political rights. He is above man's government. A congressman does not represent him. A non-citizen cannot pay taxes or vote (as in the Supreme Court's Elk v. Wilkins case concerning a native American Indian). I repeat: A NON-CITIZEN HAS MORE RIGHTS THAN A CITIZEN.
- A state citizen gives up some natural rights in exchange for political privileges. I'll discuss citizenship below, and in the chapter on the definition of persons. Only state citizens can have access to the state's judicial powers, but this is almost extinct because there are so few left of this dwindling remnant still qualified to exercise this right.
- there is no such thing as a U.S. citizen with political rights. **Why would voters in Territories want to become States?** Answer: to avoid federal laws. As you will see, a U.S. citizen is not above government, he is of [of = belonging to] government. "A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government..." (Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383). For further proof, read your Constitution. Only state citizens can become President. No one from Washington DC can become President. No one from Washington DC can have political rights.
- If you understand this logic so far, you now understand why a non-citizen cannot have a right to work in the US. A non-citizen has more rights than a citizen of any state, but no one has a right to work within the Federal U.S. government. The right to work in the U.S. government is a government granted privilege. Any form that asks if you work in the US, such as an employer's I-9 form, is asking if you are working within the U.S. government. Federal Congress makes laws for federal persons, they do not make laws for state citizens.

#### 4.16.2 Resident

*Black's Law Dictionary*, First Edition (published in 1891 long after the 13<sup>th</sup> Amendment) cites the definition of Resident:

Black's Law Dictionary, First Edition, definition of Resident

**RESIDENT. One who has his residence in a place.**

"Resident" and "inhabitant" are distinguishable in meaning. The word "inhabitant" implies a more fixed and permanent abode than does "resident;" and a resident may not be entitled to all the privileges or subject to all the duties of an inhabitant. 19 Wend. 11.

Also a tenant, who was obliged to reside on his lord's land, and not to depart from the same; called, also, "*homme levant et couchant*," and in Normandy, "*resseant du fief*."

A resident is not entitled to all the privileges as an inhabitant. Your constitution Article 1 requires Congressmen and Senators to not be inhabitants of the States that elect them. And Article 2 requires Presidents to be Residents of the United States.

In English Law lords grant fiefdoms to vassals in exchange for fealty. Why should it be different just because the kings granted some amount of self-rule to the locals?

*"RESIDENT: A tenant, who was obliged to reside on his lord's land, and not depart from the same" .."a resident may not be entitled to all the privileges or subject to all the duties of an inhabitant. 9 Wend. 11."*

That's right! A resident is a slave on the plantation. And is not allowed to leave. An earlier definition of resident, in Vattel's Law of Nations Chapter 19, says that [residents are aliens](#) who do not enjoy the rights of citizenship.

A Resident has no Personal liberty. *Black's Law Dictionary*, First Edition gives us the definition of personal liberty:

*"Personal liberty consists in the power of locomotion, of changing situation, of removing one's person to whatever place one's inclination may direct, without imprisonment or restraint unless by due course of law. 1 Bl. Comm. 134"*

As you can see, A RESIDENT IS SOMEONE WHO HAS NO LIBERTY.

Caution: only a resident can get a driver's license. If you apply for a license, you are confessing that you are obliged to reside on your lord's land, and not depart from the same, and are not entitled to all the privileges of an inhabitant. Further Proof: the Supreme Court keeps saying that states cannot regulate the right to travel. [U.S. v. Wheeler, 254 U.S. 281, 293 in 1920 and in U.S. v. Guest, 383 U.S. 745 in 1966. and an interstate welfare case Shipiro v. Thompson 394 U.S. 618 in 1969] The right to travel is so basic that it is not even mentioned in your Constitution. If your right to travel is regulated, it is probably because you asked for permission to travel. There are hundreds of cases that prove this. I recommend the book *The Right to Travel* by Charles Weisman. If you want a simple 12 page brief on the subject, I recommend you buy a copy of the *Aid and Abet* newsletter for lawmen, issue No. 11 entitled "U.S. Courts Confirm Driving a Motor Vehicle is a Right Not Government Privilege." (Available from Aid and Abet, P.O. Box 8787, Phoenix, Arizona 85066).

U.S. Supreme Court *APTHEKER v. SECRETARY OF STATE*, 378 U.S. 500 (1964)

*"Free movement by the citizen is of course as dangerous to a tyrant as free expression of ideas or the right of assembly and it is therefore controlled in most countries in the interests of security. That is why riding boxcars carries extreme penalties in Communist lands. That is why the ticketing of people and the use of identification papers are routine matters under totalitarian regimes, yet **abhorrent** in the United States."*

You are the one that has to decide whether you want to live in a nation that protects your right to travel, or one that resorts to brutal force to regulate your travel. If they can regulate such a basic right, they can easily regulate buying and selling. If you actually WANT them to regulate travel, then I remind you "he that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity." If you are bold enough to believe, as does the Supreme Court, that your Creator endows you with an inalienable right to travel, then you will constantly be put in jail by a confederation of beast powers. If this is enough to wear out the saints, then you cannot dismiss this evidence.

Caution: only a resident can register to vote. If you register to vote you are confessing that you are obliged to reside on your lord's land, and not depart from the same, and are not entitled to all the privileges of an inhabitant. If this sounds like you are the secured collateral for a bond issue, there is a reason for this.

Caution: Before you go claiming that you are an inhabitant, know that the modern legal definition of inhabitant implies "a more fixed and permanent abode" than a resident. This is contrary to the use of this word in both the Articles of Confederation and in your Constitution. It is contrary to the use of the term "inhabitants" that is inscribed on the Liberty Bell. More about this, later. According to your Constitution, Presidents must be residents of their state, whereas Congressmen must NOT be inhabitants of their state.

The definition of resident may also imply that there is an *in rem* duty to manage something belonging to the government. More about this when we study the Constitutions use of the term "resident".

Numbers 23:9 Do not count yourself as a resident.

### 4.16.3 Citizen

Basic citizenship, non-citizenship, and forced citizenship:

- Citizens are those who enter into a political society. They voluntarily give up some of their natural liberties in exchange for political privileges. They become subject to private law enforcement. They can be forced into court to settle disputes. They agree to a lien on their property to pay for any damages they cause. They agree to accept service of legal process.
- A non-citizen has not entered into a political society. Like Alexander Hamilton, they must resort to “on-street remedies” to settle disputes.
- Citizenship by birth forces, involuntarily, someone into a political society. If this sounds too Catholic to you, there is probably a reason.
- If you live in one of the 20 states that still has your state borders defined by your state constitution [yes, there is a plot to systematically eliminate all states], then you will notice that your state constitution gives the judicial power of your state the authority to naturalize citizens. This is how naturalization happened for the first 100 years of your once great nation. Yet you cannot get your judicial courts to recognize this duty today. Apparently real state governments do not exist today, they were replaced by federal corporations masquerading as states.

There are two types of citizenship, state and federal:

- Representatives of State Citizens created your federal government, and they are responsible for controlling their creature. State Citizens are above your federal government. They are the masters of your federal government. Your federal government must obey its masters. State Citizens are the lords of their public servants. A representative takes an oath of office as worship to his lords. This is why your federal government has been systematically eliminating their masters. [There is interesting evidence that the original lordship still exists: the Mace of the United States must be present whenever Congress is in session. The Mace is an ornamented rack with 13 sticks, by which you could whip your insubordinate representatives.]
- US citizens, give up all natural rights in exchange for “civil” rights. All political authority is relinquished to politicians who will regulate citizens’ travel, marriage, banking, medications, housing, occupations, guns, education, commerce, etc.
- Prior to the Fourteenth Amendment, there was no such thing as a federal citizen.

In the chapter on the definition of citizenship, I show that 14th amendment citizenship in your Federal government is not the same as state citizenship. According to the Supreme Court, federal citizens cannot have protections from the first eight amendments. And I repeat: no one from Washington DC can have political rights or even run for President. Are you from Washington DC? You are if you checked a “US citizen” box on any form, or if you are a resident with a federal zip code address.

The U.S. Supreme Court decision in *The Slaughter-House Cases*, [83 U.S. 36](#) (1873):

*“... It had been said by eminent judges that no man was a citizen of the United States except as he was a citizen of one of the states composing the Union. Those, therefore, who had been born and resided always in the District of Columbia or in the territories, though within the United States, were not citizens”*

At the end of the Civil War a lawful method had to be created in order to care for the four million freed slaves who needed a way to survive. Since your Constitution has never allowed the government to give entitlements to people, Federal ownership was just one of the alternatives being considered for the “freed” slaves. Another alternative was a treaty whereby freed slaves would live in America as citizens of Liberia. Five hundred black families moved to Africa and established the country of Liberia, with the assurance of making a treaty with the U.S. so that everyone could live free. Their constitution is almost identical to yours, except that only blacks can become citizens. They even named their Capital after an American president. In this ultimate battle between good and evil, the treaty never happened and Federal ownership is what we ended up with, where eventually no one could live free. Did your government school teach you this?

#### 4.16.4 Person

King George in the Treaty of Paris granted sovereignty to all Americans (while retaining title as Arch Treasurer). Those who submit to the laws of congress give up their sovereignty in exchange for a personage.

Are you above the laws legislated by your servants? Persons are those who submit to legislated law. Later, I will show that the judicial branch of state government protects state citizens from legislated law.

Throughout history, those who ignore God are taken into captivity. You were tricked into becoming a person when you applied for a Social Security number.

#### 4.16.5 Enfranchised citizens

In the olden days, enfranchised persons received rights and protections from a ruler to whom they owe allegiance. This hasn't changed. Enfranchised citizens are slaves on the federal plantation to whom they owe allegiance.

*Black's Law Dictionary* defines the legal maxim that Protection Draws Subjection:

*"The protection of an individual by government is on condition of his submission to the laws, and such submission on the other hand entitles the individual to the protection of the government."*

That's right! If you cannot agree to their perverted, licentious laws then don't take their protection. You qualify for benefits by agreeing that they are your protector/master/lord/benefactor. If you take their benefits, you must submit whether you like it or not. No matter how evil they become. No matter how much they demand. If you take their benefits, they make your rules. They determine what is right and what is wrong. Your moral values are now dictated from your benefactor. This maxim has always existed. Slaves submit to their lords. Slaves must be provided for. Children must submit to parents. Wives submit to husbands. The law of coverture is a part of this legal doctrine. Christians submit to Christ. What chain of command are you in?

Further proof of this legal maxim is in the *Black's Law Dictionary* definition of Allegiance:

*"Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives. U.S. v. Kuhn, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp. 407, 414"*

Conclusion: Applying for benefits subjects you to "obligation of fidelity and obedience" to a worldly master.

Now that you know what allegiance means, and now that you know the red beast of Revelation is socialism, and now that you know that a Russian general will always be in command of the UN military, perhaps you can now understand that the senior George Bush correctly stated "It is those sacred principles enshrined in the UN Charter to which we must henceforth pledge our allegiance." Biblical principles remain true. Americans have sold their birthright. According to Jesus: Benefactors exercise authority.

Benefactors exercise authority. This is evident in the legal definitions that your government uses. The legal definition of 'enfranchisement' makes it seem that God-given rights come from benefactors. Notice how the following legal definitions focus on benefits without mentioning the obligations attached to accepting the benefits. Notice how some of the government granted benefits are counterfeits of the rights that free people would have. According to *Black's Law Dictionary* today's lawyer definitions of 'enfranchisement' include:

- "The act of making free (as from slavery)"
- "investiture with privileges or capacities of freedom, or municipal or political liberty"
- "Conferring the privilege of voting upon classes of persons who have not previously possessed such."
- "See also Franchise"

Franchise includes the following definitions:

- "A special privilege to do certain things conferred by government on individual or corporation, and which does not belong to citizens generally of common right... "
- In England it is defined to be a royal privilege in the hands of a subject."

Again: Notice how these are government granted privileges that allow the person to exercise some of the rights of free people. But, like any privilege granted by government, they can be revoked.

I will also show you later that civil rights must be regulated, and that natural rights cannot be regulated. Real rights do not come from government. Government cannot grant rights, although they often refer to their privileges as rights.

You can read between the lines. These lawyer definitions use freedom and voting as examples of government granted "rights". At the risk of seeming too cynical: Livestock has owner granted rights also. Just because your current owner can be nice to you, doesn't mean you are free, nor does it mean you won't be sold. Just because you can vote for President, doesn't mean you are free. In fact, it is proof that you are a slave. Even the U.S. Supreme Court says "the Constitution of the United States has not conferred the right of suffrage upon any one". (*Minor v. Happersett* and in *U.S. v. Cruikshank*).

The courts have ruled that the Buck Act defines "an individual entity" as franchised persons of government. *Springfield v. Kenny*, 104 N.E.2d. 65 and *Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox*, 298 U.S. 193. Social Security and welfare are available only to federal citizens. Federal citizens cannot have rights. Social Security benefits are not available to state citizens. A state Citizen cannot obtain a Social Security Number without first obtaining a dual citizenship acknowledged by your federal government. By getting a number, you change your citizenship. (See definitions chapter on this topic). By registering for the benefits available only to enfranchised persons, you become an enfranchised person. Only those persons receiving government benefits are required to have a social security number. No one else has ever been required to get a SSN.

WARD - "Guarding, caring, protecting." - "A person ... placed by a court under the care and supervision of a guardian or conservator."

Again, protection draws subjection. You are under the care of the legislature, from whom you get your `rights' and protections in exchange for your submission.

I can prove that an attorney is your court appointed guardian, and is considered competent to manage your affairs, whereas you are considered incompetent to manage your own affairs.

Go to the Law Library and find the legal encyclopedia entitled "Corpus Juris Secundum". Look up "Attorney & Client" section 4 in Volume 7 and read: "His first duty is to the courts and the public, not to the client".

That's right: he represents the public, therefore he cannot represent you.

(And don't be deceived by the word `public.' It means `government'. Examples: public office, public housing, public roads, public library, public school, public law, and public records. And furthermore, as I digress further, the word republic comes from a Latin idiom `Libera res publica' which means free from government things. This is from the *Collin's Latin Dictionary*. Even *Webster's 1828 Dictionary* says a Republic has only titular governmental powers. This is because they can only legislate to those who volunteer into their jurisdiction. Later, I will quote the Supreme Court's Meyer case to show that liberty is freedom from arbitrary regulations.

Then look up `client':

*"A client is one who applies to a lawyer or counselor for advice and direction in a question of law, or commits his cause to his management... one who communicates facts to an attorney expecting professional advice. Clients are also called "wards of the court" in regard to their relationship with their attorneys."*

To find out what it means to be a Ward of the Court, go to *Black's Law Dictionary*. There is only one definition, so you can't possibly get it wrong. Wards of the court are "Infants and persons of unsound mind... under the care of a guardian."

That's right! You must be crazy to talk to an attorney. You are not competent to manage your own affairs. Even asking "... for advice and direction in a question of law..." or "expecting professional advice" proves that you cannot manage your own affairs. You do not have the law in your right hand and forehead.

You volunteered into an evil system that has absolute contempt for any timid soul who is too faint-hearted to resist his oppressors. This is the evil world we live in. Yet in Matthew 5:39 Christ requires you to tolerate attacks from evil people and turn the other cheek. These bullies will have absolute contempt for this behavior. They don't understand that you are obeying a higher authority.

#### 4.16.6 Accepting benefits

Christ was correct that benefactors gain authority over you (Luke 22:25, but compare to Matt 20:25, Mark 10:42). Rights come only from responsibilities. If you cannot be responsible for providing for yourself, then don't expect any rights.

Did you pledge allegiance to your new lord? Here is what pledge means according to *Strong's Concordance* from the four words that are translated into the KJV word 'pledge':

- H6162. (in the sense of exchange) a pawn given as security.
- H2258. a pawn (as security for debt)
- H2254. to wind tightly (as a rope), i.e. to bind; specifically by a pledge; figuratively to pervert, destroy; also to writhe in pain
- H6161. in the sense of a bargain or exchange; something given as security, i.e. (lit.) a token (of safety) or (metaphor) a bondsman:--pledge, surety.

If you want their benefit, you must pay whatever price they ask. They have asked you to give yourself as collateral. You and all your future labor are held as collateral until the national debt is paid. Later, I will show that there is a strong link between the U.S. Treasury and foreign authorities, including the Holy Roman Empire. Also be aware that there are foreign owners of your Federal Reserve Bank.

The Act to Strengthen Public Credit, signed into law by Ulysses Grant on March 18, 1869, pledged every American citizen as collateral for the repayment of all government obligations, including the national debt. Your federal government did not own anything, the states and the people owned all the wealth. In order to get the central banks to print money, the banks wanted collateral. You are that collateral. A classic book on this topic is [The Coming Battle](#) by Martin W. Walbert, published in 1899.

Supreme Court Justice Samuel Miller said:

*"The power of taxation is the power to destroy. No man who is endowed with a modest sum of intelligence would advocate a transfer of this immense power to a private corporation for its gain. It would amount to the self-destruction of the nation. No sane man would advocate the delegation of this high attribute of sovereignty to a corporation for its individual gain and such transfer of power would inevitably result in frightful oppression."*

Here are some more details for those who are doing homework: Hypothecation is a banking term. Hypothecation is defined in section 14(a) of the Federal Reserve Act as an offer of assets owned by a party other than the borrower as collateral for a loan, without transferring title. The United States is the borrower. You are the party other than the borrower. On your behalf, and with your consent, your representatives borrow most of your national debt from the Federal Reserve Bank. Section 16 of the Federal Reserve Act (12 U.S.C. §411) says that Federal Reserve Notes are obligations of the United States. This is true even if the Federal Reserve is not a government agency, because the government has promised to repay the loans to this privately owned corporation. Federal Reserve Notes are backed by the full faith and credit of hypothecated assets (such as your future labor). According to the Legislative History of Public Law 94-564 "The U.S. commitment to redeem international dollars for gold became a physical impossibility." That's right! Your bankrupt government cannot repay Foreign lenders their gold. They will soon claim their collateral. You are the collateral.

The following quote should answer any doubt that you have regarding the legitimacy of the chains attached to receiving benefits. U.S. Supreme Court in *Murdock v. Pennsylvania*, [319 U.S. 105](#) at page 140:

*"The ultimate question in determining the constitutionality of a tax measure is -- has the state given something for which it can ask a return?"*

Let's review the legal maxims. Protection draws subjection. The very definition of allegiance means you are obligated to obedience if you accept protection. The state has given something for which it can ask a return. A pledge of allegiance binds (*Strong's* H2254.) you as collateral. You grant the power of attorney if you allow them to manage your affairs because it is presumed that you cannot manage yourself. Christ said that benefactors exercise authority. You agree to obey your benefactors, no matter how evil they become. While you are in their house, you obey their rules. If you cannot govern yourself, others will govern you. No matter how much they demand. Whether you like it or not.

Now you understand that a pledge of allegiance binds you, and allegiance is an obligation to government in exchange for benefits, and that government was created (fabricated as an image) and receives worship and is a benefactor/provider. Perhaps you've worshiped the wrong provider.



#### **4.16.7 State citizen**

State citizens ratified your Constitution to create your federal government. They are responsible for managing their creation. The legislature cannot and does not write laws for their masters (Matt 10:24, and John 15:20). Never could, still can't. You won't understand this yet, but State Citizens are not subject to the laws written by congress (see chapter on the government definition of persons). According to your Supreme Court in the Milligan case, 71 U.S. 2, state courts must protect you from federal laws.

If you can be tricked into applying for benefits, you then become subject to their statutes. Whether you like it or not. No matter how evil they become.

The difference in citizenship is distinguished by whichever law of the land applies to you. State constitutions are founded on Christian principles. But, according to a Treaty signed by President Adams "... the government of the United States is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion...." More about this, later.

#### **4.16.8 Employee**

An employee is someone (as is an indentured servant) who gives up legal rights to his labor in exchange for care and protection. The same people who own the IRS own his labor rights.

More about this later. But you won't like it.

Colossians 2:8 (NIV): "See to it that no one takes you captive through hollow and deceptive philosophy, which depends on human tradition and the basic principles of this world rather than on Christ."

#### 4.17 Conclusions of law

1. By asking for a Social Security Number, you agree to all that socialism provides.

By asking for a SSN, you request to become a lifetime permanent ward of a foreign program administered by your federal government. You've given them the power of attorney under the doctrine of Tacit Procuration. By confessing that you cannot provide for your own retirement, you've stated that you expect others to take care of you. And indeed, you are not taking care of yourself; or depositing funds into a trust fund. Social Security is not a trust fund, nor insurance, nor an earned pension.

Under the doctrine of Tacit Procuration, if you do not stop them from managing some small affair, it is presumed that you are asking for them to handle ALL your life's affairs for you. Whether they handle your affairs contrary to your wishes, or even fail to give you any benefits at all (the Supreme Court in *Flemming v. Nestor* allows government to deny Social Security benefits), is irrelevant; you've given them absolute authority to act on your behalf. You asked, in writing, on a permanent irrevocable record, to be treated as their ward.

You become internal to the government. You have accepted appointment to a government office. The office of "Person". Your Constitution was written to control government, not people. And, you've enlisted into the government. You can now expect to be regulated. And, just like other forms of enlistment, you can expect to be treated harshly. Those who hold this government office are now required to sign forms under the penalty of perjury.

Although I haven't been able to find this document, I've been told that those who have a social security number are federal employees according to the 1935 Emergency Relief Act Publication Resolution #11, 74th Congress, Session One, Chapter 48, Section 2, of April 8, 1935.

Those who have Social Security Numbers are required to pay taxes on their wages pursuant to section 801 of the Social Security Act. This is in the Internal Revenue code in Section 3101(a). All you have to read is the first five words of this law, which I've quoted in the chapter on your right to earn wages.

You do not have legal rights to yourself. Your owners have "beneficial" rights to your person, which include all future labor. Also see *Christiansen v. Department of Social Security*, 131 P2d 189, 191 for the difference between beneficial rights and legal rights.

You are registering to take public money that you did not earn (As I have shown - it is not insurance or a trust fund, it is theft unless you are a permanent welfare case). You are not responsible enough to rely upon the Lord (who gives and takes away). Or family (1<sup>st</sup> Tim 5:8). Or Christian charity. Or the fruits of your own labor ("...so that you will not be dependent on anybody." 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:11-12). 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:10.

A contract is not valid without consideration. Unless you are offered a gift, you cannot take something without agreeing to the strings attached. There is a maxim of law: "No one is obliged to accept a benefit against his consent." You cannot agree with socialism without agreeing to provide to the communal fund. If you ever have a chance to study the Pilgrim's first winter, you will see that socialism has never worked in America. Half of them died that year, because they tried socialism.

Thou shalt not steal. Exodus 20:15 was written in stone by the finger of an unchanging God (Deuteronomy 9:10, Ex 31:18). If you think Christians don't have to do as Christ commanded, see 1<sup>st</sup> John 2:4. A thief that was being executed in Luke 23:41 said that he deserved to be executed for the crime of theft. You too should regret your sin.

You have confessed that you need federal funds (such as those that provide for your retirement). You did this knowingly and with full knowledge that your Constitution does not allow this. State citizens can keep most of their rights, but you rejected state government.

2. You reject state government and request federal protection.

The U.S. Supreme Court's decision in *Ex Parte Milligan*, 71 U.S. 2, determined that STATES HAVE A DUTY TO PROTECT THEIR CITIZENS FROM THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT.

Once you become a resident in your federal government; your state can no longer protect you from your federal government. You accepted dual citizenship. You cannot complain According to the Supreme Court, 92 U.S. 551:

*"It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."*

Once you become a resident in your federal government; you subject yourself to federal laws. (The term `resident' does not mean inhabitant. For proof, read your Constitution: Presidents must be residents, whereas congressmen must not be inhabitants. To understand why this is so, you must know that a resident is someone who owes a duty to remain available to manage something belonging to the government - anything - such as property, a trust, a corporation, an individual, a motor vehicle, or an entire agency. (By the way, even a bastard child belongs to the government and must have a government appointed custodian). Since the President is the chief servant, the Constitution requires someone with servile experience, and since legislators represent the will of the people; we don't require - and probably don't want - servile attitudes.

More proof: Physical presence within borders does not prove residence. Never did. Example: In John 17:14-15 Christ states that his disciples, although physically present, were not of the world. Christ also said that His Kingdom was not of this world, even though The Kingdom was at hand). Your federal government can now trespass across your state's border and use "the long arm of the law" to enforce its laws on its residents, which would otherwise be unconstitutional within your state. Prove it to yourself: Direct taxes must be Constitutionally apportioned to your State by the proportion of your State's representation (Art.1, Sect.2, Clause3 & Art1, Sect.9, Clause4). -- And, NO. The 16th amendment did not change this, the 16th amendment did not alter, add or remove any words from the original constitution, and the U.S. Supreme Court confirmed in *Stanton v. Baltic Mining Co.*, 240 U.S. 103 (1915) that "... the 16th amendment conferred no new powers of taxation" - That's right! There is no such thing as an unapportioned tax on the earnings of state citizens. Indirect excise tax on the privileges of limited citizenship (such as the federal privilege of earning wages) does not have to be apportioned. Alternatively, real people, according to the Fifth Amendment, cannot have earnings or property "taken for public use, without just compensation." Which are you?

Why did federal territories become states? The "organic" inhabitants of federal territories (who were, by the way, unregistered voters) became states in order to free themselves from your federal government. That's right! BY BECOMING A FEDERAL CITIZEN YOU'VE NULLIFIED THE REASON FOR YOUR STATE TO EXIST. You've spit on the graves of your state's founders just because some banker or employer lied to you by telling you that you must get a Social Security Number.

### 3 By getting a SSN you change your citizenship

Did you waive your right to citizenship?

- In the 1891 naturalization case of Mr. Sauer, Title 81 Federal Reporter page 358 the court held that Mr. Sauer, although an industrious, law abiding man, could not become a citizen because he claimed to hold Socialist beliefs.
- A pauper is one supported by public funds. According to the Articles of Confederation, a pauper cannot have rights of citizenship.
- John Locke's Second Treatise of Government Chapter 15 asks the question "For what compact can be made with a man that is not master of his own life?"

You change your citizenship by getting a number, you are now a citizen of the District of Columbia, or any multi-national world order that has a legitimate claim to the District. The newer application forms for a SSN now have a box to check for those who want to claim U.S. Citizenship. The older forms did not need this box.

Proof: You can now vote for president and senators even though state citizens cannot (Hint for those who are actually checking up on this: Amendment 17 does not override the last clause of Article 5, and Amendment 17 was only ratified by 36 states, even if you include Ohio).

Proof: you can be subjected to a trial by government (see chapter on your right to a trial by jury) because you lost your right to a trial by jury (see the *Colgate* case in the chapter on citizenship).

Proof: State citizens are not U.S. citizens (see chapter on citizenship).

4. You agree to be regulated.

You submit yourself to the acts of Congress. You request congress to determine your moral values for you. Congress determines what rights you have, if any. You've consented to be governed. Protection draws subjection. Allegiance is the "Obligation of fidelity and obedience to government in consideration for protection that government gives. U.S. v. Kuhn, D.C.N.Y., 49 F.Supp. 407, 414"

5. A Christian should have known better than to get a Social Security Number.

A Christian will not swear. You've sworn an oath to obey man under penalty of perjury. Perjury is an oath, and an oath is always a religious ceremony (see chapter on oaths) - but this time it is an oath to your new god. You've openly, knowingly, and voluntarily, on a permanent record, violated the first commandment, Matt 5:34, James 5:12, and Hebrews 6:16.

A Christian cannot be a freeloader, 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 3:6-14, yet Social Security numbers can only be assigned to those who need federal benefits per section 205(c)(2)(B)(i) of the Social Security Act.

A servant is never greater than his master (Matt 10:24, and John 15:20). You've just confessed to public servants that they are not your servant and you are not their master. A Christian would know that if you offer yourself to someone to obey them as a slave then you are a slave to the one you obey (Romans 6:16). A Christian would never obey a stranger (John 10:5). And no Christian can serve two masters (Matt 6:24, Luke 16:13). A Christian will serve God only (Matt 4:10, Acts 5:29). No Christian would want to be a thief, or register (with an ungodly oath) to partake of dishonest benefits. No able bodied Christian will falsely confess that he is unable to take care of himself in order to fraudulently qualify for future monetary benefits.

You must now obey your new masters (Ephesians 6:5, Colossians 3:22, Titus 2:9, 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:18).

6 SSNs Waive ALL rights

The government cannot interfere with a right. Bear with me as I repeat this essential precept in several different ways so that you might understand: Rights do not come from civil government. We are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights. According to the Declaration of Independence, the ONLY reason government exists, it uses the phrase "instituted among men," is to protect rights. You cannot be granted rights you already have. The word "Unalienable" means it cannot be taken from you. If something can be lawfully taken from you, then you didn't have a right to it. Government must protect rights not regulate them. Governments are instituted among men to secure those rights. Rights are above government. The exercise of a right cannot be infringed. A right cannot be taxed. The exercise of a right cannot be taxed. The power to tax is the power to destroy. You cannot delegate to your civil servants the power to regulate the inalienable rights of others. The enumeration in your Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny others retained by the people. Nor shall private property be taken for public use without just compensation. And again, A RIGHT CANNOT BE TAXED. (See chapter on the right to earn wages).

The Supreme Court in [Murdock v. Penn.](#) 319 U.S. 105 determined that no state can convert a right into a privilege and then charge a fee. The Supreme Court ruled in *Hale v. Henkel*, 201 U.S. 43, at page 74, that you can carry on your own business without regulation, and you owe no duty to the state if you receive nothing except protection, and you have no duty to divulge your business on government forms, and you owe nothing to the public so long as you do not trespass upon their rights.

The U.S. Supreme Court in *Hale v. Henkel*, 201 U.S. 43, 74:

*"The individual may stand upon his constitutional rights as a citizen. He is entitled to carry on his private business in his own way. His power to contract is unlimited. He owes no duty to the state, or to his neighbors to divulge his business, or to open his doors to an investigation, so far as it may tend to incriminate him. He owes no such duty to the state, since he receives nothing therefrom, beyond the protection of his life and property. His rights are such as existed by the law of the land long antecedent to the organization of the state, and can only be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long*

*as he does not trespass upon their rights... An individual may lawfully refuse to answer incriminating questions unless protected by an immunity statute."*

You waive ALL of your rights by getting a number. You have no right to own property. You have no beneficial right to yourself. You have NO right to keep any wages. Congress is nice enough to let you keep some of their money, but whenever they want they can raise the tax to more than 100% by a simple majority vote. IRS Commissioner T. Coleman Andrews, in a press interview when he resigned, back in 1956, stated "Congress can take 100% of our income anytime it wants to."

This is the socialism that you agreed to. Any employee with a SS number is subject to the FICA Employment tax. Section 3101(a) of the Internal Revenue Code imposes FICA tax in addition to OTHER undisclosed taxes. Later, I will show you later that ALL of your future labor has already been traded to multinational financial networks as collateral for the National debt.

If you want to do some research, try to find out exactly what kind of protection draws subjection, as the Hale case seems to allow protection without subjection.

7. By getting a number, you become responsible for government funds.

Government officers can be forced to account for money they are entrusted with, whereas ordinary people cannot be forced to sign confessions. Not even a tax return. The Supreme Court has twice ruled that tax returns must be voluntary in order to be admissible in court: *Garner v. U.S.*, 424 U.S. 648 and *U.S. v. Sullivan*, 274 U.S. 259.

In the 1975 *Garner* case, Mr. Garner was tried for the crime of gambling. The prosecutor admitted into evidence his tax return where he had claimed gambling profits. He objected and claimed that this evidence is not admissible because it was compelled testimony. He appealed all the way to the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court confirmed that compelled testimony is indeed inadmissible, and that he should have refused to answer the questions on his tax return. His tax return was admissible in court because it was NOT in any way compelled or coerced.

In a more recent tax decision, August 7, 1996, the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals ruled that a California man, Loren Troescher, could refuse to answer questions or turn over documents. The court ruled: "We need not consider how or in what manner the Fifth Amendment may be invoked as a defense to a prosecution for failure to file tax returns." See *U.S. v. Troescher*, No. 95-55609. D.C. No. CV93-5736SVW.

By getting a Social Security Number, you volunteer to collect excise tax from yourself and turn it over to your master. Failing to turn over, with signed paperwork, the tax you've assessed yourself, is a crime. It's as much a crime as a Customs officer failing to turn over, or account for, the excise tax he has collected. This is because you have accepted an appointment as a federal officer: the office of "Person". See details in that chapter.

8. You are subject to, and protected by, your lord of the manor

By getting a number: You agree that you are a subject of the government. And you agree that you are not a citizen (one of We the people who created government) and do not have any rights (see the case cites in the chapter on citizenship: *K Tashiro v. Jordan*, 256 P. 545, and *Hague v. CIO*, 307 U.S. 496, 520), and that your Constitution does not directly protect you against the government. You are a member of the "citizenship" (uncapitalized in the 14th amendment, but capitalized everywhere else in your Constitution) created by congress rather than a true Citizen. You are therefore only protected against the government to the extent which your masters allow you access to your Constitution. Government derives its just powers from the consent of the Governed - and you've consented to be governed.

Here is an analogy: those who voluntarily enlist in the military, with an oath, know that they are waiving their unalienable rights and will be subject to regulations that can be very harsh. You too, with an oath, knowingly volunteered to be a subject for the remainder of your enlistment. And you are presumed to know the laws that you volunteered into. Ignorance of the law is no excuse.

By being a subject of the government, you are protected by your masters in congress to whatever extent that they want to protect you. Example: you are protected against the consequences of your own acts by bankruptcy laws. You can pray to a courthouse priest that he cancel your vows to God with divorce laws. Your masters protect you from unemployment,

injury comp, consumer protection, OSHA, pollution, bank failures, retirement, barking dogs, unlicensed barbers, paint fumes, etc. Unlicensed barbers? Here in a nation where the constitution prohibits government from impairing the obligations of contracts -- a Wall Street Journal 2-7-2011 report on excessiveness of state regulation noted that even though everyone washes hair, those who want a license to apply shampoo in Texas need 150 hours of training, with 100 hours in "theory and practice of shampooing," including a study of "neck anatomy." The Wall Street Journal report highlighted California's year-long training to be a barber, Alabama's 750-hour schooling standard for a manicurist's license, and Michigan's 500 practice hours for performing massages. (By contrast, many less-tightly regulated states seem not to suffer. Connecticut, without licensing, had only six complaints last year against manicurists -- four of which involved disputes over gift cards.) Next up for licensing, perhaps: cat groomers in Ohio.

You are "protected" by a building inspector's fines if you don't get a permit to repair your back porch. I recently read about someone who was fined \$30,000 for building a backyard deck that would cast a shadow onto a wetland. This is in the same nation where our great great grandfathers, without permission from their servants, bridged wetlands and blasted through mountain ranges to build railroads from sea to shining sea. Your grandfathers had birthrights as sovereigns (see chapter on the definition of "persons"). But you, like Esau, sold that birthright for a future bowl of stew. You are even protected against suffering the consequences of God's acts: the cost of recovering from floods, earthquakes, drought (remember what President Cleveland said), and hurricanes are paid by your master's theft of your neighbor's wages; you are vaccinated against God's illnesses, and Hillary's village will educate your children so that you won't be burdened with the responsibility - you've given up that responsibility by accepting their offer. You deprived your children of their birthright by your probate contract. Are you comforted to know that your angel of light has smoothed the rough path of life? (2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 11:14). Conversely, real people are instructed by Their Lawgiver to patiently endure hardships as discipline from God, and "do not make light of the Lord's discipline" (Hebrews 12, also read 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy 2:3-15 and 2 Corinthians 1:3-11 and 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:19-20, and 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 4:12-16).

Do you seek government protection?

*"Those who would give up essential Liberty, to purchase a little temporary Safety, deserve neither Liberty nor Safety." According to Benjamin Franklin, November 11, 1755; Reply to the Governor. This is inscribed on a plaque in the stairwell of the Statue of Liberty.*

Do you have a God-given right to be protected against the consequences of your acts? Do you have a right to be protected against God's discipline? Which god protects you?

Exodus 23:24-33: "Thou shalt not bow down to their gods, nor serve them, Thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor with their gods for if thou serve their gods, it will surely be a snare unto thee."

#### 4.18 The missing Eagle wings

In Revelation 13 an endtime confederation of Daniel's beasts (like unto a leopard-bear-lion with 7 heads and 10 horns – with the notable exception of whatever nation was symbolized by the eagle wings plucked off of the Lion in Daniel 7:4) has been assimilated by Daniel's fourth exceedingly dreadful (Daniel 7:19) iron beast, that was to take away the dominion of other beast powers (Daniel 7:12), consume and trample down the whole earth and break it to pieces (verse 23).

You always thought that the United States was the eagle nation. After all, the Revelation 12:14 pilgrims fled from King James and his Bible to be protected in the wilderness for a time and times and half a time until the Puritans forced them into a British Colony, then the Constitutional Convention's constitutors\* convinced "We The People" (by the flood of democratic vote) to surrender to British rule until Ben Franklin's 18 Million Lira debt is paid.

**CONSTITUTOR. In the civil law. One who, by a simple agreement, becomes responsible for the payment of another's debt.**

Definition of Constitutor from Black's Law Dictionary, first edition. It is in the civil law. In America, the Civil Law is the Roman Law

Recall from my chapter 4.9 on Citizenship that the Articles of Confederation recognized personal rights, such as "states in this union", "free inhabitants", "free citizens" and never used the preposition "of". But now that the Constitutors reconstituted you, you are now "of" the government until the debt is paid under Article VI of the U.S. Constitution..

What if the United States government does not exist? What if the peace treaty ending the Revolutionary War was really a rental agreement? What if THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, the non-proper noun non-government collected all assets owed to the creditors (including 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment citizens)? What if the 1933 national bankruptcy seized all collateral and placed it in control of the bankruptcy receivership.



Imperial Rome never disappeared. An iron eagle symbolizes the imperial power of Rome. This same power still remains vested in Rome. This power is enforced by the Pope's agents (Britain, the British Bar Association and their daughter, the American Bar Association, and others). Again, Imperial Rome never disappeared. An Iron Eagle consuming a globe was memorialized in a 100 foot high Roman statue in 1893 (see my chapter 3.4). Shown here is a US postage stamp issued in 2002 when the Department of Homeland Security was formed. Hint: Nebuchadnezzar's image of historical kingdoms had toes that were a continuation of the Roman Empire, and these 10 rulers continue until they are broken by Christ's coming,

Daniel 2:42-45. With no Biblical hint that imperial Rome was to disappear.  
Do you know of any exceedingly dreadful iron beast that gets it's authority from Rome?

Don't think that The Roman Law does not apply in America. It is enforceable in every courtroom in the United States.

**CIVIL LAW.** The "Roman Law" and the "Civil Law" are convertible phrases, meaning the same system of jurisprudence; it is now frequently denominated the "Roman Civil Law."

The word "civil," as applied to the laws in force in Louisiana, before the adoption of the Civil Code, is not used in contradistinction to the word "criminal," but must be restricted to the Roman law. It is used in contradistinction to the laws of England and those of the respective states. 5 La. 493.

Black's Law Dictionary definition of Civil Law.

The plucked eagle wings are on the Department of Justice logo. Holding the shield (bar association) that guards the goddess Justitia.



### 4.18.1 A foreign authority issues Social Security Numbers

SUMMARY SO FAR:

State Citizens are subject to only three federal laws. How about you? Do you owe absolute allegiance to your 'federal' lord for ANY of the following legal reasons:

- When someone cannot take care of himself, anyone can step in and take over. But protection draws subjection. *Protectio trahit subjectionem.* It is a Christian duty to help the poor. Charity is the only "Law of Christ", Galatians 6:2, the Golden Rule, the only "pure religion" James 5:27. Charity is only done out of love, not by fear -- government forced contributions are opposite to love -- corban makes the word of God of no effect Mark 7:11-13. (see my chapter 3.8 corban discussion)
- Christian charity cannot provide any entitlements. Christians cannot associate with able-bodied freeloaders. 2nd Thessalonians 3:6-14. If a man cannot work, neither shall he eat. Verse 10.
- The incompetent (those who cannot care for themselves) do not have many rights. And they have NO rights once they become wards of daddy government. (Welfare is not a constitutional government function, except to save the life of an individual. -- see my chapters on Welfare in sections 2.14 and 4.3 and my chapter on daddy government 4.10). God hated able-bodied Esau for buying a bowl of stew with his birthright.
- Government can hypothecate and sell the ward's labor in international commerce -- it is the merchandise in Ezekiel 28:16, and the cargo in Revelation 18:13 -- See my Commerce chapter 2.14.2 for proof. After all, Satan himself has jurisdiction over foreign trade routes -- called trafficking in Ezekiel 28:18. And Christians turn people over to Satan to save their souls 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 5:5). And, by the way, Social Security Cards are not issued by an agency of the United States government.
- Others may, but are not required to, step in to manage the affairs of those who cannot take care of themselves. "*An implied procuration takes place when an individual sees another managing his affairs and does not interfere to prevent it*". (law dictionary definition of procuration) Those who are managed have no say in how they are treated. There is no remedy for those who are "damaged" by their agent. In fact, you cannot be damaged by your agent, there is no such thing -- because your agent speaks for you.
- Welfare, including Social Security, would be unconstitutional except for the truly destitute who cannot survive without it. Others can care for those who cannot take care of themselves. You confessed, or your parents/agents confessed, on a permanent irrevocable federal document that you needed benefits (such as old age retirement benefits) funded by a final world beast power.
- The doctrine of Tacit Procuracy grants them the power of attorney. Unless you interfered to prevent it.
- There is no prescription for procuration. *Procuracionem adversus nulla est proaerscriptio.* If you are represented, then you cannot claim to be damaged by your representative.
- Your congressional representative represents you. By participating in an election, you agreed to the outcome of the election, no matter how abhorrent.
- The Constitutional Convention was constituted under the Articles of Confederation. Pre existing law remains as the Common Law of the land, and is enforceable under the Constitution (as for example, your Constitution's Article VI first sentence). The pre existing received-law-of-the-land (Common Law) prohibits paupers (supported by public expense) from having any say in how they are treated. It is a conflict of interest for them to vote. Article IV of the Articles of Confederation requires that "... *the free inhabitants of each of these States, paupers, vagabonds, and fugitives from justice excepted, shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several States;...*" IF YOU ARE SUPPORTED AT PUBLIC EXPENSE THEN YOU HAVE THE SAME RIGHTS AS A FUGITIVE. The common law continues in full force until the legislature cancels it with "express words of nullity"
- The Social Security Act section 205(c)(2)(B)(i)(II), allows Social Security Account Numbers to be assigned to an "*applicant for or recipient of benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*". After 1972, this was amended to include resident aliens. The people who use SSNs are supported at public expense. Therefore they have the same rights as a fugitive.
- The comments published with the Uniform Commercial Code mention that "*the Common Law, ... remains in force, unless there is a clear legislative intent to abrogate the Common Law.:*"
- Ben Franklin's 18 million Lira debt from the Revolutionary War is secured by all assets of the District of Columbia. It has not been paid off. If you availed yourself of federal benefits, then the Buck Act makes you an asset. You are collateral for the National Debt.

- The Constitution transferred the National debt obligation to others. See my chapter 4.18 discussion of Constitutor. If you applied for *benefits under any program financed in whole or in part by Federal funds*, then you owe your fair share. Your fair share of the National Debt is now \$143,000 per taxpayer. Pay up.
- Debts must be paid. Contracts bound on earth will be bound in heaven. (In other words the smoke of your torment shall rise forever in the presence of the Lamb.)
- The Buck Act extends federal jurisdiction to anyone receiving federal benefits. Social Security cards are only available to those receiving benefits funded by federal funds (and to aliens after 1972). You agreed to be collateral (to foreign banks) for the national debt.
- You signed something under penalty of perjury stating that you were born or naturalized into the United States government.
- You enriched yourself at others' expense, thereby creating an obligation, per the definition of "constructive contract".
- According to James Madison it "is an absurdity" to claim that the Constitution allows any federal benefits to the common man. Yet you claimed that you were eligible for benefits available only to wards of a foreign welfare program.
- You voluntarily claimed citizenship within your federal government. (Kitchens case) Thereby giving up your natural rights.
- Taxes (and along with it, the brutal force needed to collect) are legal if you applied for a government benefit "for which it can ask a return." (Supreme Court's Murdock case).
- You have a government fictitious (intended to deceive) all capitalized name on your ID cards. "Government" is not even allowed to call you by your Christian name. A proper noun is a person, place or thing. They cannot call you by a proper noun.
- By claiming to be a U.S. resident, rather than an inhabitant, you've agreed to remain on your lord's plantation.
- Even the definition of 'allegiance' proves that you have an "Obligation of fidelity and obedience" to your federal lord.
- You cannot even challenge jurisdiction once you avail yourself of any benefits. (Supreme Court's Ashwander case). Again: You have the same rights as a fugitive.
- You are a declared enemy of the United States government on March 9, 1933. All domestic transactions are now categorized as trading with the enemy. (40 Stat L. 411, subdivision b of section 5), which allowed them to seize your gold.
- Maxims of law regarding benefits:
  - "No one is obliged to accept a benefit against his consent."
  - "He who receives the benefit should also bear the disadvantage."
  - "Estoppel is or may be based on acceptance of benefits"
  - "He who derives a benefit from a thing, ought to feel the disadvantages attending it."
  - "The civil laws reduce an ungrateful freedman to his original slavery" *Libertinum ingratum leges civiles in pristinam servitutem redigunt.*
  - "No one can unjustly enrich himself at the expense of others (this creates a constructive contract that courts enforce)
  - Again: You can have no say in how you are treated.
- Maxims of law regarding volunteers, "*Volenti non fit injuria*"
  - "That to which a man consents cannot be considered an injury."
  - "He who consents to an act is not damaged by it."
  - "He who consents cannot receive an injury"
  - "To him consenting no injury is done."
- They own the equitable rights to your labor,
- you pledged yourself as collateral. Federal Reserve Notes are not federal. The Federal Reserve Bank is a corporation, not a government agency. Their Notes are "backed by the full faith and credit of the United States." YOU are the collateral.
- Your status is irrevocable.
- The Supreme Court in the Cruikshank case, 92 U.S. 551, said: "It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."
- "It is hardly lack of due process for the Government to regulate that which it subsidizes." Supreme Court Wickard v Filburn 317 US 111 (1942)
- Again: You cannot complain. Commentary published with the Uniform Commercial Code says "When a waivable right or claim is involved, the failure to make a reservation thereof, causes a loss of right and bars its assertion at a later date."
- The Social Security Act Title VIII section 801 requires you to pay Social Security AND OTHER TAXES, and
- Obey your masters (Ephesians 6:5, Colossians 3:22, Titus 2:9, 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:18)

- You are a slave to whom you obey. Romans 6:16.
- ... by whom one has been subdued, by him also does he become a slave. 2 Peter 2:19. As William Blackstone so eloquently stated in the introduction to his Commentaries on the Law, benefits "*oblige the inferior to take the will of him on who he depends...*".
- Abraham knew enough not to accept even a thread to a shoelace from government (Genesis 14:23). Proverbs warns that you would be better off putting a knife to your throat than to eat delicacies of a ruler (Proverbs 23). David knew enough to refuse to eat delicacies from evildoers (Psalm 141:4). Abraham knew enough to set aside 7 lambs as a good-faith bond when dealing with the King of the Philistines (Genesis 21:28). Yet today's self-called Christians line up for food stamps and think nothing of it.

The "freed" slaves were taken from their owners by the 13<sup>th</sup> Amendment, without compensation required by the 5<sup>th</sup> Amendment, and then allowed to apply for federal citizenship by the 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment. The federal slaves then assumed that they were now free. They didn't realize that a 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment citizen is subject to its creator, who granted their rights, and to the federal corporation and the trustees, who are themselves subject to prior contracting parties, the Crown and the Pope. History repeats itself because it has the same authors/creditors. The 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment made slaves out of all federal subjects.

The Illuminati who work in civil service have failed to pay the [18 Million Lira Revolutionary War debt](#). You are the collateral (to the 10 families who are the ultimate owners of the Federal Reserve Bank). Contracts bound on earth are bound in heaven. Creditors must win, debtors must lose. Your debt is now impossible to pay. Your perpetual debt has not been paid. The smoke of your torment shall rise for ever and ever --- in the presence of the Lamb himself.

NOW YOU'RE READY FOR THE BAD NEWS:

Social Security Numbers are not issued by the United States Government.

- The United States went bankrupt in 1933. The foreign bankruptcy receivership owns all assets of the United States. The United States cannot own a prison, a courthouse, a coin or a slave.
- Social Security Numbers are issued by the Department of the Treasury, (which is not the U.S. Treasury) but not for any U.S. government purposes. The U.S. is the agent acting under the bankruptcy agreements authorized by the International Monetary Fund.
- The Income Tax Code was not enacted into public law. It only applies to those who contract into it.
- Only those who have a Social Security Number can declare bankruptcy. Everyone else must pay their obligations. SS is a tontine scheme of limited liability administered by authorized agents of the International Monetary Fund.
- Only those who have a Social Security Number must pay probate death tax for the government granted privilege of dying. It is a legitimate excise tax. But otherwise it would be theft from widows and orphans. You didn't have a right to "your" property, because it is not your property. You had a legal right (but not an equitable right) to use what you mistakenly think is yours. The third plank of the Communist Manifesto prohibits inheritance. Speaking of inheritance, God hated Esau for contracting away his birthright.
- You are a slave. Just because your owner has not sold you yet, does not mean you are free. When your owner's creditors (those to whom the National Debt is owed) come to seize their collateral, there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Are you ready?

The takeover of the world is now complete. The foreign takeover of America is now complete. Your federal government went bankrupt and was surrendered to a foreign creditor in 1933, and ceased all operations. Your federal government now acts ONLY as agents of their foreign masters. You owe absolute allegiance to your foreign owners. The two-horned second Beast that issues SSNs revealed itself when the U.S. government went bankrupt in 1933.

You have already volunteered into this system. It is already a done deal. It is irrelevant that President Bush, the elder, told the UN that the New World Order was America's goal. It is irrelevant that Clinton's 1993 national security directive declared its intent to put U.S. troops under UN command.

#### **4.18.2 Washington DC is a colony of the Holy Roman Empire**

HISTORY OF LAND RIGHTS TO WASHINGTON DC (AND EVERYTHING APPURTENANT THERETO):

Emperors claimed their authority to rule was divine authority and that the Pope delegates divine authority. Go to any encyclopedia and look up the topic "Divine Right of Kings."

The HOLY ALLIANCE of May 15, 1213 A.D. was a treaty between Pope Innocent III and King John of England conveying all rights, titles, and interests in England's lands to the Holy Roman See. The Kings of England were indebted to Rome for their wealth, power and authority. ENGLAND AND ENGLISH COLONIES BELONG TO THE ROMAN EMPIRE. [Aside: Since King James was indebted to Rome for all his authority, he was influenced by his superiors to publish his sanitized version of the Bible.]

In the year 1320 the Scots made the Declaration of Arbraoath, which was a plea to the Pope to replace the British King. They understood who had complete power over all the kingdoms of the world. So soon we forget.

In 1452, Pope Nicholas the fifth, issued a Papal Bull called the Doctrine of Discovery

*"... to capture, vanquish and subdue the Sarccens, pagans and other enemies of Christ to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."*

Spain's King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella were Catholic monarchs who financed Columbus.

Christopher Columbus went forth to declare lands and inhabitants of the New World as property of the Catholic Church. I repeat again: "... to take all their possessions and property and to put them into perpetual slavery."

On May 3, 1493 upon confirming the discovery of the New World, Pope Alexander the sixth, issued the Intercetera Bull: "The Catholic faith ... be everywhere increased and spread and barbarous Nations be overthrown and brought to the faith..."

In Papal Bull of September 26, 1493 entitled "Dudum Siquidem" Pope Alexander VI extended Spain's rights to the New World. Spain's rights come from the Pope (if the Pope did indeed have legitimate right to Spain). Columbus' Book of Privileges written in 1502 before his final voyage, a copy of which is in the U.S. National Archives, has a transcription of this Papal Bull.

If true, then the Pope has a legitimate claim on America. Both from the Spanish and English roots.

- The Pope claims to own the entire planet through the laws of conquest and discovery. [Papal Bulls of 1455 and 1493] [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Romanus\\_Pontifex](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Romanus_Pontifex)
- The Pope has ordered the genocide and enslavement of millions of people. [Papal Bulls of 1455 and 1493] [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Romanus\\_Pontifex](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Romanus_Pontifex)
- The Pope can abolish any law in the United States [Elements of Ecclesiastical Law Vol. 1 53-54] [http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th\\_century/blackstone\\_bk4ch8.asp](http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th_century/blackstone_bk4ch8.asp)

Act of Supremacy (1534) vested in the king power to declare and punish heresies. Henry VIII burned copies of the English translation of the New Testament. Tyndale was executed in 1536 for translating the Bible into English. This is entirely consistent with the Catholic censorship of books required by their Fifth Lateran Council, Session 10 (and earlier Bible ban by their Council of Toulouse\*). Queen Elizabeth forbid preaching on December 27, 1558. (But she was gracious enough to allow the reading of "the Ten Commandments in the vulgar tongue, without exposition or addition of any manner, sense, or meaning to be applied and added...") This is entirely consistent with the Catholic censorship of preachers required by their Fifth Lateran Council, Session 11. The Bible was banned until King James published his sanitized translation of the Bible in 1611. The Bible wasn't all that was burned. When Mary I restored the Roman Catholic Church she burned 300 Protestants who had been excommunicated by the Pope.

\* The Catholic's Council of Toulouse, Pope Gregory IX: "We prohibit laymen possessing copies of the Old and New Testament.... We forbid them most severely to have the above books in the popular vernacular." "The lords of the districts shall carefully seek out the heretics in dwellings, hovels, and forests, ... shall be entirely wiped out."

The Catholics then settled Maryland as a Catholic colony, named for the Virgin Mary. Even *Encarta* says that Maryland was created as a refuge for English Catholics. Lord Baltimore, whose father was the Secretary of State to Charles I, founded Maryland. His property in the 1663 property records is called "Rome". This information was in earlier editions of

the Catholic Encyclopedia under the article on John Carroll, but it was deleted from the 1967 edition to keep you from knowing that Washington D.C. was built on property titled to Rome.

Again, their stated intent is that

- "The Catholic faith ... be everywhere increased and spread ..." and
- "... to take all their possessions and property
- and to put them into perpetual slavery."

Social Security Administration Headquarters are not in Washington DC. They are in Baltimore. Social Security Numbers and Cards are issued from Baltimore. Even though the application form is from the Department of the Treasury.

#### **4.18.2.1 Pilgrims and puritans**

Ever since the Pilgrims settled at Plymouth Rock, all settlements that became the 13 states were British settlements. The Pilgrims on the Mayflower, who left from Holland, still needed King James' charter to settle here. The [Mayflower Compact](#) was the contract they made to govern themselves in the king's land.

"When people desired to come to this country for the purpose of settlement, it was necessary for them to obtain permission from the government interested in that portion of the new country which they expected to occupy. The permits thus granted formed the basis of the new governments set upon this side of the Atlantic. Sometimes these permits were granted by the king to a company, whose members either sent out colonists to the new country or came themselves as colonists. Such permits were known as Royal Charters and were in reality a form of constitution granted by the king to the colonists, defining their rights and privileges. They usually outlined the form of government, providing for a governor and council. Sometimes these permits were granted to individuals called proprietors, and the governments set up by them were called Proprietary Governments. These proprietors in turn granted charters to their colonists, so that in general the government of charter colonies and of proprietary governments was very similar. In time, however, all but a few of the colonies lost or surrendered their charters, passed under the direct Government of the mother country (England), and came to be known as Royal Provinces. In the royal provinces the king could rule with greater freedom. He appointed the governor and the colonial judges, and everywhere except in Massachusetts, the governor's council also.

Notwithstanding this, the colonists' retained no small measure of self-government." [[Berle's Self Culture](#) p304]

These men were "proprietors" of companies...the East India Company being the "Grand Corporation" with its "red, white, and blue" striped flag.

#### **4.18.2.2 The revolutionary war debt**

The United States is a corporation, a fictitious entity. They were liable for the repayment of a debt that was incurred on February 6, 1778 when the United States entered into a Treaty of Alliance with France . On July 16, 1782, they borrowed substantial sums from King Louis XVI of France. This was in a direct violation of a treaty that was signed in 1763 which stated that The Holy Roman Empire, Great Britain , France , Spain , Portugal , and Ireland would not fund each others adversaries in a time of war. [Treaty of Paris 1763]

In violation of the [Treaty of Paris 1763] France loaned the Charters of Britain's North American Colonies eighteen (18) million livres in the Colonies efforts to defend "their selves and their posterity" (financial interests of the Charters) from Great Britain's taxation over the [Stamp Act 1765] and the [French and Indian War of 1763].

On July 16, 1782 The North American Colonies entered into a Contract for the Guarantee of the re-payment of the 18 million lres entitled Contract Between the King and the Thirteen United States of North America [http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th\\_century/fr-1782.asp](http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th_century/fr-1782.asp)

Then they signed the The Definitive Treaty of Peace 1783 [http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th\\_century/paris.asp](http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th_century/paris.asp)

Under Article 4 it states: "It is agreed that creditors on either side shall meet with no lawful impediment to the recovery of the full value in sterling money of all bona fide debts heretofore contracted."

The Constitutional Convention was convened under the Articles of Confederation to restructure the debt payment. If you became a federal citizen (by applying for a Social Security Number) then you are the collateral. You consented -- "striketh hands" Proverbs 22:26 and agreed to pay for the national debt. This is done by your own testimony. You have agreed by tacit procreation to be the Human Resource.

### **4.18.3 The Revolutionary War Did Not Win Independence**

After the Revolutionary War King George III and Ben Franklin signed The Treaty of Paris in 1783. This allows the United States to exist. Ben Franklin did not sign the treaty as a representative of the American people, he signed it with his title of Esquire, as an agent of the King. The very treaty that allows the U.S. to exist also acknowledges that King George retains his title over the Holy Roman Empire and the United States of America as Arch-Treasurer and Prince Elector. Did your government school teach you this?

Except for John Adams, who was forced to acquiesce, the signers of the Treaty of Paris were agents of the King...and under the Law of the Flag; they were flying the King's Color (red, white, and blue) which are also the Colours of the East India Company. Nothing changed. The land grants were the same. They were however, acknowledged as having "concurrent jurisdiction" with the Crown.

The United States of America was subservient to the Crown, as stated in Hunter Miller's Notes (available at the [Avalon Project website](#)). And the People of the United States which wrote the "new agreement" for the repayment of the debt, were simply the bankruptcy trustees "for the United States of America".

Hartley signed the Treaty of Paris for King George III. The form of the Treaty was the subject of some correspondence between Fox, Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs, and Hartley. Copies of the letters are in Bancroft's Transcripts, Hartley's Negotiations, II, 53, 57, NYPL On August 21, 1783, Fox wrote to Hartley inquiring about the Alternat: Hartley's response:

*The treaties are drawn out for signature as you have expressed it viz: giving precedence to the Crowned Head. The American Ministers never had a thought of disputing the priority or equality of rank & therefore I have had no occasion to mention the subject."*  
 [British-American Diplomacy Treaty of Paris - Hunter Miller's Notes] Available on  
[http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th\\_century/parisno.asp](http://avalon.law.yale.edu/18th_century/parisno.asp)

On September 30th, 1783 Benjamin Franklin, *Esquire*, John Adams, *Esquire*, and John Jay, *Esquire*, negotiated the terms of the debt repayment to Great Britain. [Definitive Peace Treaty of Paris 1783]

### **4.18.4 District Of Columbia Is Land Cession From The Pope**

Congress somehow knew when they passed the Residence Act of July 16, 1790 that a large tract of land along the Potomac would become available (By the way, according to British Legal dictionaries, the word `Residence' means `agent'). And, right on schedule, on March 30, 1791 seventeen Maryland landowners signed agreements with President Washington to donate and sell, what were termed "reservations," that would become Washington DC. The District of Columbia is a district in Maryland. A state's border is not changed just because someone sells his property. The District of Columbia is still on Maryland soil. The current Maryland state constitution does not define its' borders. Maryland even kept Washington DC from freeing the slaves in 1850; go to the Maryland archives Volume 102, Volume 1, Debates 660 at [www.mdarchives.state.md.us/megafile/msa](http://www.mdarchives.state.md.us/megafile/msa) The original charter of Maryland is available at [www.yale.edu/lawweb/avalon/states](http://www.yale.edu/lawweb/avalon/states) also see [www.archivesofmaryland.net](http://www.archivesofmaryland.net). Notice that the English charter for Maryland requires all exports from Maryland to go exclusively to England.

By rights, the Catholic church has a legitimate claim to anything attached to Washington DC. Your U.S. government officially recognizes this particular religion. The U.S. has an ambassador to the Vatican. Washington DC has the National Cathedral. Georgetown University is a Catholic university controlling, to an unknown extent, political thought.

Georgetown University was founded in 1789 by John Carroll, on land predestined to be become part of Washington DC. Perhaps he had an ulterior agenda, along with his wealthy Catholic neighbors. According to Chapter 17 of historian Dan Goodwin's latest book, the Carroll family motto on their coat of arms was changed during this time to "Liberty in all

Things” to infer their liberty to kill Protestants. The Maryland State song still sings of Carroll’s sacred trust, to rhyme with “Thy beaming sword shall never rust.”

Does this “liberty in all things” mean they can have their way with us and our property rights?

Don’t dismiss this distortion of the term *liberty*. After all, we were warned:

*“We all declare for liberty; but in using the same word we do not all mean the same thing. With some the word liberty may mean for each man to do as he pleases with himself, and the product of his labor; while with others the same word may mean for some men to do as they please with other men, and the product of other men's labor. Here are two, not only different, but incompatible things, called by the same name liberty. And it follows that each of the things is, by the respective parties, called by two different and incompatible names liberty and tyranny.”*

*Abraham Lincoln Address at Baltimore 1864*

The District of Columbia is a district within Maryland. The District of Columbia is land cession from Maryland. `Cession' is not the word `ceded'. The word "cession" is used in your Constitution in Article 1, section 8 clause 17 for the government acquisition of Washington DC. It does not use words that imply permanent federal jurisdiction, or even federal land title to Washington, DC. Cession, in ecclesiastical law means, "... vacating a benefice without proper dispensation." And just in case you were afraid to ask: The word "Benefice" is defined in *Black's Law Dictionary* as "A term derived from the feudal law, in which it signified a permanent ... estate held by feudal tenure." Original States are church property (see chapter on separating church from state). Maryland was the Catholic’s state. If the Pope did not vacate the benefice known as Washington DC, then the Pope still has a legitimate claim to this permanent estate held by feudal tenure, and all property attached to it, and all future income from that property.

You are that property. The Buck Act extends federal jurisdiction to everyone who has a SSN.

I want to again remind you that you cannot complain. The Supreme Court says, 92 U.S. 551, "It is the natural consequence of a citizenship which owes allegiance to two sovereignties, and claims protection from both. The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

As further proof that ceded lands remain under their prior law, The United States Supreme Court in 1908 in *Ponce v. Roman Catholic Apostolic Church* determined:

*“Of course, in case of cession to the United States; laws of the ceded country inconsistent with the Constitution and laws of the United States, so far as applicable, would cease to be of obligatory force; but otherwise the municipal laws of the acquired country continue.”*

If you think this excuses you from Roman law, think again. The Supreme Court’s phrase “so far as applicable” remains unexplained, but if Maryland can keep Washington DC from freeing slaves in 1850, what chance do you have of being free after you swear an oath to be their permanent ward?

#### **4.18.4.1 Our rights come from the magna carta**

In the Magna Charta, the Barons thought they were gaining freedom, by the king granting those rights under the Charta. However, the earlier 1213 Charta, wherein the king granted and ceded the Pope all of his lands, they would have known the king could not grant the rights without the blessing of the Pope. The Pope signed the Charta of 1215, as a party to the Contract. The granted rights DID NOT end their tax obligations to the king, or the Pope. This granting of rights is not a problem to the money lenders. The 1215 Charta DID NOT overturn the obligations of the 1213 Charta, They could not.

America claims their rights come from the Magna Charta, which was ratified by Pope Innocent III and of course the king under duress on June 15, 1215, on August 24, 1215, Pope Innocent III Declared that the Magna Charta was null and void, [(Geary) 49.3 August 24, 1215 parliamentary origins in England]

Edward I, in 1297 was forced to re-declare the 1215 Magna Charta, because the Pope forbid his monks and bishops etc. etc., to pay taxes to the king, so the king began to tax the Barons again, and they drew their swords. King Edwards action holds less weight than that of his predecessor king John, because as of August 24, 1215 the Charta was an invalid document. And *debt obligations* of a previous Charter could not be voided.

The Pope DID NOT give up what was granted/ceded to him in the 1213 Charter. The Magna Charta could not void an earlier Charter which contained a *debt obligation* between parties, without all parties agreeing. Since the parties of the 1213 Charter would continue to be born, it was an irrevocable trust.

The [1689 Declaration of Rights](#) DID NOT overturn any financial obligations under previous Charters. The third section of the 1689 Declaration of Rights maintains earlier Charters.

Americans have been fooled into thinking they were free. Every time the king has been challenged, the king grants rights to the combatants, however nothing changed. The king retained his prior authority to tax and enforce previous Charters. Accepting the king's benefits creates new tax obligations.

The Declaration of Independence and the war of Independence that followed, is no different than any other time in history. The king granted his created Corporations, the states, Independence and allowed them to establish their own governments. But the governors retained the power granted by the king and the council of state. The states then consolidated their corporate Charters under one Charter, called the U.S. Constitution. The tax obligations of previous Charters DID NOT change. The king's control DID NOT change. The U.S. Constitution DID NOT obliterate the debts, on the contrary, Article 6 says "All Debts contracted and Engagements entered into, before the Adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the United States, under this Constitution, as under the Confederation."

No where in the [1783 Paris peace treaty](#) will you find granted rights to the inhabitants of the states. No where in the treaty will you find where the taxes of gold, silver and copper (mineral rights) were ceded to the states. Since the king did not cede all of his corporate enterprise he retained his taxation and the subjection of those that enjoy his benefits.

The Crown still owns all mineral rights in America, which is why you pay excise tax on fuel, and why an assessor determines your annual rent.

Carolina Charter of 1663:

*"YIELDING AND PAYING yearly, to us, our heirs and Successors, for the same, the yearly Rent of Twenty Marks of Lawful money of England, at the Feast of All Saints, yearly, forever, The First payment thereof to begin and be made on the Feast of All Saints which shall be in the year of Our Lord One thousand six hundred Sixty and five; AND also, the fourth part of all Gold and Silver Ore which, with the limits aforesaid, shall, from time to time, happen to be found."*

And, No, this did not change when they wrote their own Constitution:

*"And provided further, that nothing herein contained shall affect the titles or possessions of individuals holding or claiming under the laws heretofore in force, or grants heretofore made by the late King George II, or his predecessors, or the late lords proprietors, or any of them." Declaration of Rights 1776, North Carolina Constitution. [www.nhinet.org/ccs/docs/nc-1776.htm](http://www.nhinet.org/ccs/docs/nc-1776.htm)*

And, No, this did not change after the Revolutionary War:

*"But this State had no title to the territory prior to the title of the King of Great Britain and his subjects, nor did it ever claim as lord paramount to them. This State was not the original grantor to them, nor did they ever hold by any kind of tenure under the State, or owe it any allegiance or other duties to which an escheat is annexed. How then can it be said that the lands in this case naturally result back by a kind of*



*reversion to this State, to a source from whence it never issued, and from tenants who never held under it?"*  
 MARSHALL v. LOVELESS, 1 N.C. 412 (1801), 2 S.A. 70.

By the way: The rent is due on the Feast of All Saints, on a Catholic calendar. They pray to dead people, even though nowhere in the Bible do Christians or Jews pray to dead people.

#### 4.18.4.2 Example

The Carolina Charter, 1663: "KNOW YE, that We, of our further grace, certain knowledge, and mere motion, HAVE thought fit to Erect the same Tract of Ground, Country, and Island into a Province, and, out of the fullness of our Royal power and Prerogative, We Do, for us, our heirs and Successors, Erect, Incorporate, and Ordain the same into a province, and do call it the Province of CAROLINA, and so from henceforth will have it called..."

"SAVING always, the Faith, Allegiance, and Sovereign Dominion due to us, our heirs and Successors, for the same; and Saving also, the right, title, and interest of all and every our Subjects of the English Nation which are now Planted within the Limits bounds aforesaid, if any be;..." **The Carolina Charter, 1663**

#### 4.18.5 Other Federal Topics:

President Bill Clinton graduated from the Catholic Georgetown University. In Clinton's acceptance speech when he was nominated as presidential candidate he praised his mentor, Professor Carroll Quigley. On page 950 of Carroll Quigley's 1964 book Tragedy and Hope you will read:

*"The individual's freedom and choice will be controlled within very narrow alternatives, by the fact that he will be numbered from birth... and followed as a number through his educational training, his required military or other service, his tax contributions, his health and medical requirements, and his final retirement and death benefits."*

Standing atop the U.S. Capitol Dome (esteemed above all others, out in the open for all to behold, the most prominent symbol on the only building in Washington DC from which emanates your authority to control your civil servants) is the goddess Minerva wearing a crown decorated with five pointed pentagrams. This statue was made IN ROME by artist Thomas Crawford. The ceiling of the Capitol dome is a painting by Italian artist Constantino Brumidi that depicts the *Apotheosis of George Washington*. Surrounding George Washington are figures of Roman gods, some 15 feet tall. They include Ceres, Vulcan, Mercury, Neptune, Minerva and 13 state goddesses pictured as protectors of American ideals. Shown as the intermediary between heaven and earth is the goddess Justitia, followed by an eagle. Notice that the eagle is symbolic of defying God's laws, such as gravity. Notice that all the people below the eagle are crouching.

What part don't you understand?

Is their "In god We Trust" the God that you trust?

An oath is always a religious ritual. Did you swear a perjury oath to their god in order to get a graven mark issued by a final world government so you could buy and sell?

According to the book *Art in the United States Capitol*, which is House Document number 94-660, in the painting on the rotunda ceiling there is a depiction of Young America handing to Ceres, who is the Roman goddess of agriculture, a team of horses pulling a reaper. I thought this would have been the other way around; that gods provide for people. And indeed, this prophecy has become true. The IRS turns over all our productivity to foreign gods, and the Department of Agriculture pays the IRS payroll.

This also symbolizes the famine curse that will soon hit America. Ezekiel 14:13 "Son of man, if a country sins against me by being unfaithful and I stretch out my hand against it to cut off its food supply and send famine upon it and kill its men and their animals." There is much more to the symbolism in this painting.



Young America is depicted as a freed slave (wearing a temporary liberty cap) whose liberty is a privilege that can be revoked at any time.

On a 65 foot tall statue named “Republic,” unveiled in 1893, (by artist Daniel Chester French, famous for his sculpture of seated Lincoln in the Lincoln Memorial), America’s liberty cap had been removed by “Republic” and is displayed on a Roman spear as a trophy.

Just like the church that fled to America in 1620 to avoid the King James Bible and be nurtured in the wilderness -- after a time, and times and half a time, the Liberty Cap was symbolically plucked off Young America by a Roman authority, no longer safe from the face of the serpent. The serpent cast water (for the symbolism of water see Revelation 17:15) out of his mouth to sweep us away in the flood of democracy. U.S. Western expansion swallowed the flood (Revelation 12:16) and the serpent is still making war against those who obey the commandments.



In fact, the motto of your Justice Department is *Qui Pro Domina Justitia Sequitur*, “He who follows Justitia dominates” (the goddess Justitia, also called Persephone, is Minerva’s name when she judges the dead in Hades). Christ often spoke of the living as being already dead. The Justice Department’s motto encircles the eagle, and of course, the painting on your Capitol’s rotunda shows an eagle following Justitia.. See:

<http://www.tuppersaussy.com/books.html>



For more information on the early history of Washington D.C. see David Ovason's book [The Secret Architecture of our nation's Capitol](#). By Harper Collins Publishing ISBN 0-06-019537-1.

#### 4.18.5.1 Constitutional law

The phrase "supreme Law of the Land" is used in the U.S. Constitution, Article 6, paragraph 2 to refer equally to treaties as well as to your Constitution itself.

A treaty with Tripoli ratified by two-thirds of the Senate and signed by President Adams in June of 1797 correctly states in Article 11: "... *the government of the United States is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion...*". This quote is from the English language version signed by President Adams, in U.S. archives, even though the original foreign version of this treaty is missing this controversial clause.

President Adams and two thirds of the Senators in 1797 knew the truth about Washington DC. And John Adams would have known the truth, after all, he was one of the signers of the Peace Treaty with England that ended the war and authorized the U.S. to exist.

Enforcers: Why do Latin speaking judges in your local courthouse wear black robes? How did your nation evolve from a judicial system of restoration to victims and forgiveness, to a system of fines and prison? How did we go from penitentiaries (created by Quakers in Pennsylvania so that the convict's free-will would never be forced-will, to conform to society's norms) into Departments of Correction to force convicts to conform to our now abnormal society? Answer: by the will of the bar association, which, by the way, was prohibited prior to your Constitution. They have perpetuated Medieval Catholic tradition where sins were confessed to a black robed Cancellor for the forgiveness of the sin. [A Catholic Monk named Martin Luther rejected this nonsense, and risked death as a heretic responding to Johann Eck's "404 Articles" in the *Augsburg Confession*. Early Protestants faced great persecution to avoid this nonsense. Why do today's Protestants so willingly return to this vomit?]

In my chapter on judicial power I explain that the judicial branch of government no longer exists. You have never known the real judicial system. You have only known Satan's counterfeit.

The court in [Cromelin v. U.S.](#), 177 F.2d. 275 confirmed that U.S. District judges are not employees of the U.S. government. "*A federal district judge is not under control of United States*"

### 4.18.5.2 Persons are government property.

As explained in my citizenship chapter, U.S. citizens are citizens of your federal government. But not state citizens. Read the chapter on citizenship now. As I explained, government entitlements such as social security or welfare, can only be appropriated for those persons that are wards of the government administered program.

### 4.18.5.3 You do not have the authority to buy or sell

The United States government went bankrupt in 1933. The good ol' U.S. of A was permanently closed and ceased all operations. All assets of the government were turned over to the foreign bankruptcy receivership, and they operate it. Your foreign owners choose to continue operating their subsidiary without changing the name, which is exactly what you would expect in any bankruptcy receivership. The name of their foreign subsidiary is The United States. [Aside: I find it curious that the Beast of Revelation 13:1-4 is a confederacy of the Beasts of Daniel 7 except there is no longer any eagle wings. The nation symbolized by eagle wings ceased to exist prior to the issuing of the mark of the beast (Hint: America's Liberty Cap was plucked off by a Roman authority when the all capitalized UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, which is not the proper noun government of the Constitution, was given a local voice in 1888 by the American Bar Association, a daughter of the British Bar Association). A lion has always symbolized England. Daniel 7:4 says that the eagle's wings were plucked from the lion. A bear has always symbolized Russia. Could another recent national socialist group from central Europe be symbolized by a panther (like unto a leopard)? Is the scarlet beast comprised of these socialist powers? Did the dragon give this beast his power, and his seat, and great authority? This trust entitled "THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA" was created by the 41st congress in 1871 by Session III Chapter 61 and 62. It still exists today.]

Just as it is in any corporate takeover, employees automatically become the subordinates of the new management, you likewise were surrendered to the new management. Except that your status is permanent and irrevocable.

In exchange for federal entitlements, the 1936 Conference of Governors agreed to pledge the earnings and earning power of the individuals of each State to overcome the bankruptcy. They never did overcome the bankruptcy.

The International Monetary Fund is the bankruptcy receivership. The Secretary of the Treasury is the U.S. governor of the bankruptcy receivership. I will now prove that he owns you. Title 12 United States Code, section 95(b) gives the Secretary of the Treasury complete power over you. Whatever drastic actions he wants to take in order to control you are already authorized by law. His actions "heretofore or hereafter taken" have already been pre-approved by congress in 1933. This law claims its authority comes from the Trading with the Enemy act of 1917, as amended. This 1917 Act regulates and punishes trading with the enemy. When your nation was conquered in 1933, you were acknowledged as the new government's enemy! It's just like any other war where the victor's occupation forces take over government operations after the surrender. The phrase "as amended" in 12 U.S.C. §95(b) means that, on March 9, 1933, domestic transactions were removed from the exclusions to the 1917 Trading with the Enemy Act (40 Stat L. 411, subdivision b of section 5). Trading with the Enemy is always illegal. Prior to March 9, 1933 domestic transactions were always legal. Domestic transactions must be legal because civil servants were never delegated the authority to make their masters' transactions illegal. After March 9, 1933 all domestic transactions are illegal. Your nation has been conquered. You are the enemy of the occupation forces. Again: trading with the enemy is always illegal, but now your domestic trading is with the enemy of the foreign occupiers. Domestic transactions can now be regulated and punished. I repeat: domestic transactions are illegal. NO MAN MIGHT BUY OR SELL. Biblical prophecy has come true! Don't be deceived just because he hasn't yet cracked down completely.

It is lawful to trade with surrendered people. It is illegal to trade with the unsundered enemy. But guess who surrendered. It is those who fall for the deception and agree to be regulated by the Secretary of the Treasury's "actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken..."

*Black's Law Dictionary* entry for Bank Holiday says: "The present law forbids member banks of the Federal Reserve System to transact banking business except under regulations of the Secretary of the Treasury during an emergency proclaimed by the President."

[For more information read the book War and Emergency Powers by the American Agriculture Movement, available from War and Emergency Powers, 4656 Alta Vista, Dallas Texas 75229. Another book: War, Central Planning, and Corporations by Eugene Schroder is available from Dr. Eugene Schroder, P.O. Box 89, Campo, CO 81029.] There is not much on the internet but I did find a link to a site entitled "America's Constitutional Dictatorship".

In Daniel Garcia's *Law Brief*, on page 6, he bluntly states that all U.S. citizens that have Social Security numbers have been sequestered as Institutional Units of the International Monetary Fund for collateral on International Loans. He then cites as proof the following document:

*Excerpts from the "United Nations Secretariat, Revised System of National Accounts Draft Chapters and No. 90-24912-2005-IAC" section F.5 International Organization, 68(3); section G. The Residence of Institutional Units; section G.1 Introduction 70.*

I have not been able to find this document, nor have I been able to contact Mr. Garcia.

While I'm speaking of the topic of not having any authority to buy or sell, there is another topic to consider. If you think that you will be able to barter openly when the crackdown comes, or somehow work for Christian IOUs, think again. No one has the authority to buy or sell, and that includes barter. The Credit Control Act, Public Law 91-151, section 206(11) pre-authorizes the Federal Reserve Board to "prohibit or limit any extension of credit under any circumstances the Board deems appropriate". Punishable per section 210 by a year in jail.

In 1931 the traitors in your Congress substituted your previous national anthem with your current anthem that does not mention God (Since the very definition of anthem is a "choral composition with a nonliturgical religious text" you cannot even claim to have an anthem). Then in 1933 a 32-degree Mason became president, and the coin of the realm was seized and prohibited. Gold coins, although required by your constitution as your only lawful money, were outlawed and new currency was circulated with the Latin words around the pyramid NOVUS ORDO SECLORUM announcing the New World secular order. Secular means without God. When a conquered people start using the money of the occupation forces, they, simply by their action of accepting the currency, the "coin of the realm," acknowledge the authority of the new government. You are their enemy. You have been conquered. To the victor go the spoils. "The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government."

Can using the coin of the realm be used as evidence that you've surrendered? Christ and the apostles also lived in occupied territory. Christ's statement to Render unto Caesar could very well have meant "return" the money to Caesar and do not acknowledge his claim on your nation by your use of the coin of his realm. It could also have meant don't render what is God's unto Caesar (such as, for example, the firstfruits of your labor - withholding). It could also have meant that nothing belonged to Caesar because Caesar was occupying the land without authority. Example: If a citizen of occupied Europe during World War II were told "Render unto Hitler what is Hitler's, and render unto God what is God's", the citizen would understand the phrase to mean that nothing belongs to Hitler. So it was in Caesar's Palestine - Nothing belonged to Caesar. So it is to this very day, right here in America.

To repeat the conclusions so far: The Secretary of the Treasury works for the IMF. He controls you by absolute powers that are already pre-approved by congress. When you volunteer into his jurisdiction (by signing an application for a SSN or by signing a 1040 form) you become subject to his "actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken..." You cannot buy or sell without his permission.

#### **4.18.5.4 Ssns are issued by a foreign power**

The Application for a Social Security Number is the SS5 form. The Department of the Treasury, not the Social Security Administration, and not the U.S. Treasury, issues this form. Although the current SS5 forms do not state what department publishes them, the earlier SS5 forms state that they are Department of the Treasury forms. (You can get a photocopy of the SS5 you filled out by submitting form SSA-L996 to the SS Administration).

The SS5 application form for a Social Security Numbers is an IRS form. The IRS was never created by the U.S. Congress. The IRS payroll is paid by the Department of Agriculture. (second beast out of the land). Do you suppose that all law recognizes that the Pope owns the land? By the way the IRS emblem shows the wheat staff as the higher authority.

I will now prove that this Department of the Treasury IS a foreign power.

Go to Title 31 U.S. Code chapter 3 and search the list of organizations of the Department of the Treasury. You will not find the IRS listed. Allow me to repeat this essential fact is several ways, until you understand: There are two separate departments that have the same identical name. The U.S. government's *Department of the Treasury* does not have an IRS. The Department of the Treasury that has the IRS is not a part of the U.S. government. The IRS's Department of the

Treasury is foreign. You signed up to a foreign power to get a SS number and to pay your fair share. Your Department of the Treasury is not the U.S. government's Department of the Treasury.

This is entirely consistent with the Treaty of Paris. The arch-treasurer of the Holy Roman Empire remains in charge of their assets here in America. The Treasury Department and their IRS must remain under a foreign power. People who have Social Security numbers must remain under this foreign Empire because the U.S. government cannot make entitlement payments, as I explained in my "Federal Entitlements" chapter. For further proof: Go to any large library and find the United States Code Annotated. In the index look up INCOME TAX, CITIZENS and notice that the two references for income tax on citizens are for citizens living abroad and citizens about to leave the country.

The Secretary of the Treasury is the head of the Treasury Department that issues SSNs. He does not owe allegiance to the US. He has allegiance to a foreign power.

Federal Law 22 USC 286a(a) requires the President to appoint the U.S. Governor of the International Monetary Fund. This appointment is given to the Secretary of the Treasury (see Legislative History of Public Law 94-564 page 5942 where Congress is explaining how they are implementing the Bretton-Woods Treaty). If the President appoints someone to an official office required by law, and that position requires him to control you with powers pre-approved by Congress implementing a treaty, don't you think his salary would be paid by his employer? Title 22 U.S. Code, section 286a(d)(1) prohibits your U.S. government from paying the U.S. Governor of the International Monetary Fund. That's right! His employer pays his salary. Who's chain of command are you under? [Note for those who do their homework: the "Agreement" mentioned in 22USC286a is the Bretton-Woods Treaty, which stipulates that the fund pay the governors. Also notice that the Secretary of the Treasury is forced to accept amendments on behalf of the US, whether we want them or not].

The Secretary of the Treasury is the U.S. representative to the International Monetary Fund. He also one of the two U.S. representatives to INTERPOL, and has allegiance to its' superiors.

The Secretary of the Treasury and the U.S. Attorney General were designated as the U.S. representatives to INTERPOL in 1958. The word "representative" is very misleading.

INTERPOL Constitution Article 30 states, in part:

*"In the exercise of their duties, the Secretary General and the staff shall neither solicit nor accept instructions from any government or authority outside the organization. They must abstain from any action that might be prejudicial to their international task. Each Member of the Organization shall undertake to respect the exclusively international character of the duties of the Secretary General, and the staff, and abstain from influencing them in the discharge of their duties."*

That's right! The Secretary of the Treasury must abstain from advising them in the discharge of their duties. He cannot give advice; he can only take orders. He is not the U.S. representative to the IMF; he is the IMF's manager OF the US. The Secretary of the Treasury takes orders on how to manage IMF property. You are IMF property.

Inquiring minds might want to know just what "international task" and "exclusively international character of the duties" that are being discharged. Hint: the INTERPOL emblem is a world globe with a sword through it.

INTERPOL Constitution, Article 21:

*"In the exercise of their duties, all members of the Executive Committee shall conduct themselves as representatives of the organization and not as representatives of their respective countries."*

The Secretary of the Treasury is not an officer of the United States. The Secretary of the Treasury acts as a foreign agent. I have been told that an INTERPOL Internal Memorandum of June 6, 1972 required all members to expatriate from their countries. And furthermore, 8 U.S.C. §1481(a) revokes the citizenship of anyone who takes formal declaration of allegiance to a foreign power.

To repeat the conclusions so far: You are property of a subsidiary of the International Monetary Fund. The Secretary of the Treasury administers IMF property. The Secretary of the Treasury has allegiance to foreign powers, and takes his orders

from them, not from you. The Secretary of the Treasury controls federal PERSONS by absolute powers that are already pre-approved by congress. No man within his jurisdiction may legally buy or sell without his permission. If you have a Social Security Number you have a permanent irrevocable status as a federal PERSON.

#### **4.18.5.5 National id card**

Page 650 of Public Law 104-208, Part B, Title IV, in with the other defense appropriations legislation (as if you were the enemy), requires a national Identification card for all Americans. No one will be able to get a job without one. That's right! For the first time in history, your Federal Government must pre-authorize private employment contracts. The program will be administered by this same Treasury Department. This will be encoded on your state driver's license, or for those who don't drive, a separate ID card. Federal agencies will only accept state ID's that conform to Treasury standards. Do you have a problem with this?

Applying for a passport presumes an oath of Allegiance even if you did not take an oath. [Title 22 U.S. Code, section 212:](#)

*“No passport shall be granted or issued to or verified for any other persons than those owing allegiance, whether citizens or not, to the United States”*

And now the [Real ID](#) diver licenses of most states do the same thing.

#### **4.18.5.6 You and all your labor and your children have been sold**

You are commercial merchandise, and your children are no longer protected by your Constitution that attempted to secure the blessings of liberty to your posterity.

The GATT trade treaty, Uruguay Round Agreement, which is the supreme law of your land, [Note: Treaties and your Constitution are both equally regarded as "The Supreme Law of the Land" according to article 6] requires SSNs at birth, after November 30, 1996. See the U.S. Legislative History of Public Law 103-465, House Report No. 103-826(1) page 196, where Congress is explaining how they are enacting this treaty. Section 2 is entitled: "Taxpayer identification numbers required at birth (sec. 742 of the bill and secs. 32 and 6109 of the Code)"

[Note that this contradicts a February 1999 pamphlet by the Social Security Administration. SSA Publication 05-10023 entitled "Social Security Numbers for Newborns". On page 4 it states: "Getting a Social Security number for your baby is strictly **voluntary**." They even put the word **voluntary** in bold letters.]

GATT is a treaty is with an international political monster that evolved out of the European Economic Committee (EEC, also called the common market or European Union). The EEC was established at the Vatican on March 25, 1957, and controls most of all commerce in the world. The EEC is now headed by a Frenchman, Jacque Delores, a devout Catholic. The 1991 Maastricht agreement by 12 (now 15, 13 of which are socialist) European nations created an international political body with it's own parliament and tribunals, and limits the powers of member nations. This tribunal controls, to some extent, treaties of member nations. Why do they require the U.S. to number your children? Answer: They own your children.

AND YES, MARKING YOUR CHILDREN WITH AN SSN DID SELL THEM INTO SLAVERY, JUST READ THE FIRST FIVE WORDS OF SECTION 3101(a) OF THE INTERNAL REVENUE CODE, which I've quoted in my Common Facts chapter.

The GATT treaty forces your U.S. government to issue Social Security Numbers to newborns. Isn't it curious that Revelation 13:12 says that the second beast, which is the beast that issues the mark, exercises the power of the first beast? Isn't it curious that Christian infants are immediately claimed as property of the EEC beast? Revelation 12:4 says "... and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born."

If you want to do further research, start by browsing through Title 22 of the U.S. Code, and notice all the laws that require deposits to foreign banks. Then notice that on the back of every cancelled check that you've ever written to the IRS (before 1999) has an endorsement for the payment of debt obligations of the US. That's right. Your IRS payments do not run the government. Your IRS payments do not even go to Congress for them to decide whether or not to pay their debts. Your payments are levied directly to the bankruptcy receivership, just as you would expect in any bankruptcy. (Details: they first

go the states unemployment fund's bank account at the Federal Reserve Bank per section 904 of the Social Security Act, then to the UN Bank for Reconstruction and Development per 22 U.S.C. §286, created by the Bretton Woods Treaty, then after one year they go to the IMF's Rothchild bank). Then notice that all money is backed, not by gold in Fort Knox, but by "the full faith and credit" of the United States. This means that you and your future labor are the collateral for this credit. Then recognize that the U.S. cannot pay the National Debt. Then prepare to be seized as collateral for all that money deposited by Title 22. The GATT treaty takes inventory of legitimate collateral. You volunteered, so stop your mocking. You were warned not to be surety for strangers (Prov. 6:1, 11:15, 17:18). After you are prepared to face the consequences under man's law, prepare to "be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb" per Revelation 14:10.

Peculiar things happened in 1998. Starting with the 1998 tax returns, for the first time ever, tax payment checks are made payable the U.S. Treasury, not to the IRS. *Black's Law Dictionary* Seventh edition was published and it no longer had an entry for UNITED STATES, which had always been the definition given by the Supreme Court's Hooven decision, and a new entry "United States of America" appeared which did not have an official definition. And new currency is issued which no longer indicates which Federal Reserve Bank issued the note. Perhaps Bush the elder and Clinton were right all along. They have been telling you for years that the federal government would be privatized.

The book Guardians of the Grail by J.R. Church (ISBN 0-941241-02-5, Prophecy Publications) traces the roots of all nations' central banks including your Federal Reserve Board as well as the Bank of England, and the EEC back to the 12th century Knights Templar, who's stated objective was to own the world. If true, that would mean all the world is now enfranchised to these bankers who once owed allegiance to the Catholic Church. They are working to promote a world leader from the Morovingian clan. This includes the Habsburg dynasty whose Charles V is displayed on the ECU coin, and Juan Carlos of Spain. The definition of Protestant in Black's Law Dictionary say that it is emperor Charles V that Protestants protest.

#### **4.18.5.7 United Nations registration for ssn numbered persons.**

The United Nations is involved in assigning social Security Numbers to newborn children, and probably everyone else.

In the next paragraph, I am going to quote a Federal Regulation that deceptively refers to the UN as if it was New York City. To understand the legal definition of the term "New York City" as it used in the Code of Federal Regulations, you must first understand that the UN has its headquarters in New York City, and that UNITED NATIONS LAW SUPERSEDES ANY FEDERAL, STATE OR LOCAL LAW "WITHIN THE HEADQUARTERS DISTRICT". This is according to a federal law known as Title 22 U.S. Code section 287(d); Section 8. Apparently New York City is on UN soil.

While keeping in mind that New York City, as you know it, is not a State, and is not even the Capital of New York State, notice how federal Social Security regulations refer to New York City (the headquarters of the United Nations) as a State:

*Title 20, Code of Federal Regulations, Chapter 111 Subpart B 422.103(b)(2): "(2) Birth registration document. SSA may enter into an agreement with officials of a State, including, for this purpose, the District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, Guam, the U.S. Virgin Islands, and New York City, to establish, as part of the official birth registration process, a procedure to assist SSA in assigning social security numbers to newborn children."*

Perhaps someone can explain the above quoted law. Tell me if I have this right: Social Security numbers have been assigned for seven decades, but now officials of the UN headquarters district can establish a new procedure to assign Social Security numbers. Hummm.

Notice the phrase "the official birth registration process". The legal definition of the word Birth has two meanings, either natural birth, or coming into legal existence. Example: a corporation has a birth. Birth is the event, such as signing a form, that creates legal existence in the eyes of the law.

After you read my notes on birth certificates, return here and study this until you convince yourself that a birth certificate is prima facie evidence that you are, at best, a PERSON without birthrights, and at worst, property of a government. Then reread my notes on the GATT treaty requiring SSNs at birth, above. Birth certificates are registered, they are not recorded. Securities are registered.



If you have a welfare number you are a commodity in foreign commerce.

2<sup>nd</sup> Peter 2:3 (KJV) "And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you

At the future fall of Babylon merchants will weep when souls cannot be traded in international commerce. Revelation 18:10-20 (and notice the last item of verse 13).

#### **4.18.5.8 Is new york city still on foreign soil?**

New York City has a curious history in the scheme of official oaths of office.

New York City was the capitol of the United States in 1789, but a funny thing happened on the way to the forum.

According to the very first Journal of the Senate, New York failed to send a senator to the senate until the others had sworn their oaths of office to questionable authorities.

New York still had NO Senators in the Senate when, on April 30, 1789, it came time to swear in George Washington as President. The Speaker of the House was informed by the Vice President that the oath would be administered by the Chancellor of the state of New York (even though New York was still not represented in either the House or the Senate.)

What is a Chancellor?

A Chancellor represents a high authority.

But what authority did the Senators swear allegiance to?

Was the Chancellor "a Roman Catholic priest heading the office in which diocesan business is transacted and recorded."

Or was the Chancellor a representative of the King of England?

According to the Encyclopedia Britannica 11th Edition, Volume V, page 833: "all petitions addressed to the king passed through his hands."

It wasn't until June 3, 1789 that the Senators were sworn to obey the Constitution, but New York was still absent.

It was not until July 25, 1789 that a New York Senator showed up. The second New York Senator showed up a few days later. For the first 176 days of "your" government, New York did not participate in the Senate.

Meanwhile over on the House side, According to the Journal of the House of Representatives:

On April 7, 1789 although New York still had NO congressman represented, the House of Representatives requested a non-federal official, the Chief Justice of the State of New York, administer the Congressmen's oaths of office.

To administer the oaths, the Chief Justice of New York brings with him a New York City representative and a Continental Congressman. New York state congressmen did not participate.

On April 18 we see the names of three New York congressmen on a list of Congressmen, but none are mentioned as present or as having taken their oath of office. One of these three is mentioned later on May 9 as "appeared and took his seat"

New York had 6 Congressman according to Article 1, section 2. The other three were also members of the Continental Congress, and are not mentioned as having appeared.

What is the possibility that The Constitutional Convention was convened under the Articles of Confederation in order to reorganize the national debt (the [18 million Lira that we borrowed](#) but could not pay -- the note that Ben Franklin signed with his British title ESQ) for the purpose of getting enough taxing authority to satisfy the creditor?

Conclusions:

You do not have the right to buy or sell. All domestic transactions are illegal. The Secretary of the Treasury, who's allegiance is to foreign powers, is already pre-approved to regulate your transactions. Your SSN comes from this same authority. Your new ID card will be issued by this same authority. The Catholic church has a legitimate claim on their property. By your own authority (signature), on a permanent irrevocable record you registered yourself into the system. This registration is somehow regulated by UN headquarters. You have a number of this authority. You cannot legally buy or sell without permission of this authority. The GATT treaty (with the EEC) requires SSNs at birth. The EEC was established at the Vatican. The National debt is owed to multinational banking cartels. These cartels might have been established by Catholic crusaders. Your national debt cannot be paid. Your future labor has been hypothecated as collateral for the national debt, and has been seized.

What is next?

Deliverance? Don't count on it. There are many examples where godly nations pray for deliverance only to be further enslaved or destroyed. Psalm 74. Ezekiel 6&7, Habakkuk 1, Isaiah 58. If God willed these godly nations to be destroyed, what chance does America have? God even warned his chosen people in 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:18 (NIV): "When that day comes, you will cry out for relief from the king you have chosen, and the LORD will not answer you in that day."

Your duty was to control your servants. You failed. William Penn the founder of Pennsylvania warned us in 1681: "*Unless we are governed by God, we will be ruled by tyrants.*"

Even God's chosen people were enslaved for tolerating a leader who sinned openly (Jeremiah 15:4).

As I said earlier, the word "cataclysm" means wash down. Prepare America for a good scrubbing. The thicker the encrusted filth, the rougher the abrasive that is needed. God has always used pagan nations to punish disobedient nations. In the Bible, brutal nations enslave those who turn their backs on God. Brutal pagan conquerors are instruments of His discipline (Isaiah 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3, Jeremiah 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10, Ezekiel 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15).

Isaiah saw the collapse of truth in his society and foresaw the decline and approaching enslavement of Judah. Isaiah 59:12-15 (NKJV) "For our transgressions are multiplied before You, And our sins testify against us; For our transgressions are with us, And as for our iniquities, we know them: In transgressing and lying against the LORD, And departing from our God, Speaking oppression and revolt, Conceiving and uttering from the heart words of falsehood. Justice is turned back, And righteousness stands afar off; For truth is fallen in the street, And equity cannot enter. So truth fails, And he who departs from evil makes himself a prey. Then the LORD saw it, and it displeased Him That there was no justice."

Ezekiel 7:3-25 (NIV)

*"The end is now upon you and I will unleash my anger against you. I will judge you according to your conduct and repay you for all your detestable practices. I will not look on you with pity or spare you; I will surely repay you for your conduct and the detestable practices among you. Then you will know that I am the LORD. "This is what the Sovereign LORD says: Disaster! An unheard-of disaster is coming. The end has come! The end has come! It has roused itself against you. It has come! Doom has come upon you--you who dwell in the land. The time has come, the day is near; there is panic, not joy, upon the mountains. I am about to pour out my wrath on you and spend my anger against you; I will judge you according to your conduct and repay you for all your detestable practices. I will not look on you with pity or spare you; I will repay you in accordance with your conduct and the detestable practices among you. Then you will know that it is I the LORD who strikes the blow. "The day is here! It has come! Doom has burst forth, the rod has budded, arrogance has blossomed! Though they blow the trumpet and get everything ready, no one will go into battle, for my wrath is upon the whole crowd. Outside is the sword, inside are plague and famine; those in the country will die by the sword, and those in the city will be devoured by famine and plague. ...They will throw their silver into the streets, and their gold will be an unclean thing. Their silver and gold will not be able to save them in the day of the Lord's wrath. They will not satisfy their hunger or*

*fill their stomachs with it, for it has made them stumble into sin. ...I will hand it all over as plunder to foreigners and as loot to the wicked of the earth, and they will defile it. ...Prepare chains, because the land is full of bloodshed and the city is full of violence. I will bring the most wicked of the nations to take possession of their houses; I will put an end to the pride of the mighty, and their sanctuaries will be desecrated. When terror comes, they will seek peace, but there will be none."*

America will be captured, vanquished, and subdued. Or did God change?

Using the same terminology as is found in Isaiah 28:(NIV)-

Verse 15: "... we have made a lie our refuge and falsehood our hiding place."

Verse 18: "... when the overwhelming scourge sweeps by, you will be beaten down by it.

Verse 19: "As often as it comes it will carry you away: morning after morning, by day and by night, it will sweep through. The understanding of this message will bring sheer terror"

Verse 22: "Now stop your mocking or your chains will become heavier: the Lord, the Lord Almighty, has told me of the destruction decreed against the whole land."

Jeremiah 34:17 (KJV) "Therefore thus saith the LORD; Ye have not hearkened unto me, in proclaiming liberty, every one to his brother, and every man to his neighbour: behold, I proclaim a liberty for you, saith the LORD, to the sword, to the pestilence, and to the famine; and I will make you to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth."
--

God did not change.

Wake up. Spread the news to a lukewarm, disobedient Christianity. Time is running out.

May God bless you.

### 4.19 Answers to skeptics

There are all manner of excuses by which people deny that the Mark is already here.

In order to have an ear to hear, we must explore the wide range of possibilities that agree with scripture. In order for something to be the mark of the beast, it must agree with scriptures. Many people are stuck on misconceptions that blind them to the truth.

The #1 most frequent excuse that the Mark is not here yet, is that the mark is to be physically in the skin of the right hand or forehead, such as a tattoo or implant. Revelation 13:16 does indeed say that the mark of the beast is to be in the right hand or forehead. And it does indeed use the Greek word *chragma* which can possibly mean etching. But in five other instances throughout the Bible there are marks in hands and foreheads that do not refer to physical marks. There are marks (the King James Version calls them signs, tokens, law, memorial, and frontlets, whereas the New International Version calls them signs, symbols, reminder and teachings), put in both hands and foreheads, but none of which refer to marks physically in the skin. If you want to insist that the Mark of the Beast must be an actual physical mark in the hand or forehead, you must first explain away the five other Biblical references to non-physical marks in hands and foreheads. We will study all these in another chapter.

The #2 most popular excuse is that Social Security Cards are only for Americans, and since the mark is worldwide, it cannot be the mark. I cannot find any scripture that would indicate that the final two horned beast has to issue a mark or name or numerical identifier in exactly the same format in all the different countries. And, it's already too late in history to think otherwise. Every country that has a national debt is required by their creditors to track their taxpayers' income. Multinational creditors who loaned us the national debt require you to be numbered to track your income. MULTINATIONAL TREATIES ALREADY REQUIRE THE U.S. TO ISSUE SOCIAL SECURITY CARDS. Example: There is a treaty between Great Britain and the U.S. for the U.S. to administer Social Security. Proof was once on the British government web site:

[www.hmsso.gov.uk/si/si1997/97177801.htm](http://www.hmsso.gov.uk/si/si1997/97177801.htm).

Another example: The GATT treaty's *Uruguay Round Agreements* forced the U.S. Congress to make Social Security numbers mandatory for newborn children if they are claimed as a dependent on a tax return (section 742 of Public Law 103-465).

Another example: Although SSNs had been issued for six decades, federal regulations in U.S. Code Title 20 Chapter 111 Subpart B 422.103(b)(2) now allow the Social Security Administration to enter into an agreement with the United Nations Headquarters district to establish "a procedure to assist SSA in assigning social security numbers to newborn children".

Another: The United Nations treaty *Universal Declaration of Human Rights* Article 22 declares that everyone has the right to social security, and Article 24 requires all children to be registered at birth.

More proof that it is worldwide was once on this government web site published by the Social Security Administration Office of Policy:

[www.ssa.gov/statistics/ssptw/readme.html](http://www.ssa.gov/statistics/ssptw/readme.html). This web page no longer exists, but it had a list of 173 countries with Social security systems similar to the US. It was archived at

<http://web.archive.org/web/2001202234600/www.ssa.gov/statistics/ssptw/index.html> but this is now gone.

For more proof that the U.S. is just one of many nations partaking of international Social Security program go to [www.issa.int](http://www.issa.int)

In my chapter on international authority, I provide many other proofs that the Social Security Card is already issued by multinational foreign powers. As you will soon learn: Your future labor has been hypothecated as collateral for the national debt. This is legal because the application for a Social Security Number meets all the requirements of a financing statement per Uniform Commercial Code section 9-302. You are the one that put your labor up as collateral for the

national debt. If the U.S. ever defaults, (and it will), your foreign masters will resort to forced SLAVE labor to pay off the national debt. Your fair share is now \$113,000 per taxpayer (or \$986 thousand if you include “unfunded liabilities” of government internal debt that they borrowed from you social security and Medicare trust funds), but America’s net worth is only about \$53,000 per household. [During a panic sell-off, this valuation will be worth much less] You people need to discharge your obligations, or face the consequences. YOU, either by your own signature or by your parents putting you up as collateral, voluntarily agreed to be liable for the national debt.

Revelation 13:4 – Who would be able to make war [contend] with the beast? You are the one who agreed to the contract.

The #3 most popular excuse that the mark is not here, is that the Mark will be issued by a one man atheist world leader ruling from Jerusalem during a future 3½ year period after a broken 7 year treaty. These claims are based on the flimsiest of reasoning. I’ll refute them all. Today’s popular antichrist theory is just a cunningly devised fable fabricated back in the 1590’s to divert attention from Martin Luther’s accusation (*Luther’s Works* Vol 2 page 281) that the Catholic Church gets away with blasphemy that no saint or heretic ever dared. Details are in another chapter.

Some people who stick to the future antichrist theory insist that a future one man world leader is also the following: the Daniel 9:27 prince that makes a covenant with many, who is also the Daniel 11&12 King of the north that takes away the daily *sacrifice*, who is also the Second Thessalonians Chapter 2 man of sin, who must somehow also be the false prophet (even though the false prophet cannot be a man because he lives forever Revelation 20:10, and he issues a spirit of the devil Revelation 16:14). And he must also somehow be the future two-horned second beast that issues the mark (even though the false prophet deceived those who already had the mark in Revelation 19:20). If you can figure out their logic, write me.

The #4 most popular excuse is that taking the mark is slapping God’s face to pledge allegiance to the ruler of this world, and taking a Social Security Card cannot be equated to this. I’ll address this issue in a separate chapter. And yes, taking a Social Security Card is slapping God’s face, for many reasons.

The #5 most popular excuse is that a Social Security Number is not yet the mark because we can still buy and sell some things without it, therefore this is absolute proof that the mark is not yet here. They claim that prophecy requires a cashless society where absolutely ALL transactions require a mark. Because they can still buy and sell some small items for cash, this somehow proves that the beast has not yet caused all, pursuant Revelation 13:16, to receive a mark. They ignore the fact that mark-less transactions are already illegal transactions that violate money laundering and tax evasion laws.

John’s words “no man might” mean something less than absolute.

I address this issue in another chapter. .

[Revelation 13:16 No man might](#)

The #6 most popular excuse that a Social Security Number cannot be the Mark, is because Christians must obey authority and SSNs are required by authority. They insist that Social Security Numbers cannot be the Mark because everyone is forced to get them. (Their logic has something to do with the Mark being voluntary worship of the beast, and since they were forced to get a SSN, it cannot be the Mark). They are wrong. There is no law that requires you to get a Social Security number. No one in the government told you to get a number. ONLY THE BEAST REQUIRES A NUMBER. THE U.S. GOVERNMENT DOES NOT REQUIRE YOU TO GET A SOCIAL SECURITY NUMBER. In fact, you were told in the Legislative History of the Privacy Act section 201(h) that employers cannot “make as a condition of employment the securing by any individual of any information which may be obtained through the exercise of any right secured under the provisions of section 201.”

The red dragon has a counterfeit authority for you to obey. It is a very close counterfeit to the legitimate authority. This “obey authority” excuse is used so often that I address it in more detail in other chapters. It does not refer to obeying false authority. If you obey false authority you are rebelling against legitimate authority. Other chapters contain my comments about obedience to false authority.

The #7 excuse has to do with timeline confusion.

Some people insist that Solomon’s temple must be rebuilt before the mark is issued. As I said before, carelessly repeating anti-Protestant fables will not help you understand prophecy that is unfolding right in front of you. When Martin Luther accused the Pope of being the son of perdition, he added his understanding of the temple: “What is the temple of God? Is it

stones and wood? Did not Paul say, The Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are?" (*Luther's Works* Vol 2, page 281). I have another chapter on this topic.

- Martin Luther, John Knox and John Calvin were learned theologians. They all taught that the Pope was the Antichrist. These are historical Protestant teachings.
- *Encarta* confirms, "At the time of the Reformation, Protestants quite generally held the pope to be the Antichrist"
- Martin Luther called the Pope the son of perdition. 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2.
- Anyone who speaks of a future antichrist is denying the historical Protestant position.
- Anyone who speaks of a future antichrist must first explain away the antichrist that existed when 1<sup>st</sup> John 4:3 was written.

Some people want proof that the saints were overcome (per Revelation 13:7, Daniel 7:21&25). This is a power of the ten-horned first beast NOT the two-horned second beast that issues the mark. One answer is that saints without a mark must refrain from commerce. Or that they are prohibited from buying necessities of life. Another answer is that saints are overcome when they are forced to participate in the theft of socialism and swear perjury oaths to the state god. Another answer is that obeying the commandments was punishable by death for 42 months.

Let's take a closer look at the Catholic attempt to dismiss the claim that the pope is the antichrist.

The Dark Ages ended when millions of people read the Bible for themselves. All over Europe the Pope was called the Antichrist. The historical Protestant position is that the 42-month period of Revelation 13:5 was a period of yearlong days, and that it had already been fulfilled. Yearlong days are used in Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6.

In 1590 Jesuit Francisco Ribera published an opposing view, titled *In Sacrum Beati Ioannis Apostoli, & Evangelistiae Apocalypsin Commentarij*. Then in 1593 Cardinal Robert Bellarmine published *Polemic Lectures Concerning the Disputed Points of the Christian Belief Against the Heretics of This Time*. These became the official Catholic position on the Antichrist. They claim:

- 1) that the Antichrist was to be one man, not a dynasty,
- 2) he would be an atheist
- 3) he would not be revealed until 7 years before the end of time and does not exist in the present
- 4) he will rule for 3 and one half literal years
- 5) he would sit in a rebuilt temple in Jerusalem and make a covenant with Jews
- 6) he would call himself God
- 7) he will deny Jesus and be received by the Jews

Later, in the 1830's they added the thought that Christians were to be secretly raptured to Heaven before his appearance.

There is plenty of information available on the Internet to show that the Catholic Antichrist position is contrary to historical Protestant thought. Just search the Internet for combinations of the words *antichrist* or *futurism* with the name Ribera.

Those who carelessly repeat these anti-Protestant fables insist that a Social Security Card cannot be the Mark because the mark must be issued by an Anti-Christ atheist world leader during a 42-month tribulation. But, the Bible says that the two-horned second beast issues the Mark, whereas the 10 horned brutal first beast is the one that continues in power for forty-two months.

I will address this in detail in my chapter on the 42 months.

[What 42 months?](#)

An 8<sup>th</sup> excuse that people need not worry about the mark of the beast is that Christians can take the mark because of the doctrine "once saved, always saved"

But "Once saved, always saved" is a new concept in theology.

Martin Luther didn't believe "once saved, always saved". He posted his 95 theses to invite debate about the longstanding church practice of selling indulgences to buy forgiveness of sins. They had a lucrative business selling indulgences to relatives for the salvation of dead souls.

The Reformation theologians thought that salvation (justification) was by a trial on the judgment day. Wesley, Calvin and Arminianism did not believe in “once saved always saved.”

The Ephesians were never told of any Once-saved-always-saved theory. Ephesians 1:13-14 (KJV)

*"In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also **after** that ye believed\*, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest [down payment, not yet purchased by the Blood of Christ] of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory."*

\* [written to an audience who believed enough to obey him. If you call him lord, lord and do not obey him, how can you qualify for once-saved? How can you claim to be sealed by that Holy Spirit of promise?]

Even the saints at Philippi had to work out their salvation with fear and trembling. They had a choice: either allegiance to Christ or allegiance to a brutal Roman government. We are again faced with the same brutal choice. My counsel to you is to work out your salvation with fear and trembling.

The Pennsylvania Quakers didn't believe in “once saved, always saved” nonsense. Robert Barclay's Apology for the True Christian Divinity, quoting Hebrews 6:6, stated that the

*“gift and inward grace of God be sufficient to work out salvation, yet in those in whom it is resisted, it both may and doth become their condemnation.... by disobedience such may fall from it, and turn it to wantonness making shipwreck of faith; and “after having tasted of the heavenly gift, and been made partakers of the Holy Ghost again fall away”*

And today, the flame below the Methodist Cross still warns of the loss of salvation.

Other excuses:

There are many who expect me to know the exact identities of the end time characters. They say my message is all wrong because I cannot, with certainty, identify all the end time characters. Some even want to equate all the evil characters. They insist that the ten-horned beast is the two-horned beast, is Daniel's king of the north, is the son of perdition, is the little horn, is the antichrist, is the man of sin, is the false prophet, is mystery Babylon, is the man personified as the King of Tyre, and is the harlot on the beast, and is the white horseman.

If these AntiChrist equivalents are essential doctrines of your faith, then study them and make your own conclusions. If you need to be deprogrammed from these theories, I recommend the books *Forcing God's Hand* by Grace Halsell and *The Incredible Scofield and His Book* by Joseph Canfield, and *Hal Lindsey's Prophetic Jigsaw Puzzle* by Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi. And a video essay *The Last Days* by John Anderson. Also see [www.reformation.org](http://www.reformation.org) And “The Road to Armageddon” a full-length history of dispensationalism. by Timothy P. Weber,

Here are some things to consider:

- Some people equate the two-horned beast with the false prophet. Revelation 16:14 says that the false prophet will issue a demon to influence the kings of the earth and Revelation 20:10 says he is immortal. These are not the attributes of a man.
- Revelation 17:8-11 supposedly shows that an individual world leader, the eighth King, not a government confederation, issues the mark. (Even though verse 12 says there are 10 kings, and even though the two horned beast issues the mark). There is no proof that Revelation 17:12 “receive power as kings one hour with the beast.” is somehow the 42 months. Even if it was the 42 months, it could still be possible that counting from Julius Caesar to Nero is seven kings, Nero being the one who “is”, currently at the time John wrote the verse [many commentaries place the Book of Revelation at about the year 96AD, but I find it strange that John failed to mention the destruction of Jerusalem in 70AD], and Vespasian was the eighth king who destroyed Jerusalem in 70AD. Therefore the 42 months were February of 67AD to September 70AD.
- Some people claimed to have traced Paul's 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2's “man of sin” to the false prophet of Revelation 19, which must be the two horned second beast. Their logic involves “parallels which cannot be discounted” which link the little horn, with the man of sin and with the false prophet. The only parallel between them is that they all speak blasphemy.

- Martin Luther accused the Pope of being the son of perdition that exalteth himself above all that is called God. The King James translators tried to cover up this possibility, and their fable has been perpetuated to us today. Let no man deceive you by any means. I have a chapter that examines Second Thessalonians chapter 2 in more detail. [What restrainer?](#)
- Some want proof of the identity of the beast that came out of the Revelation 17 abyss after it was unlocked in Revelation 9. It even says it is a mystery. This beast was, and is not and yet is. This is the same terminology that refers to the incarnation of Jesus in Revelation 1:18, and some people use this as proof that the ten-horned Beast is a reincarnated evil Eighth King that was one of the 7 earlier kings. Even though only God can resurrect. I'll let you decide whether or not this is related to the two-horned beast issuing a mark.

As for the eighth empire of Revelation 17:11 Here are some possibilities to consider:

- There are only seven. The eighth "is of the seven"
- The Revelation 17:10 seven kings (with a total of 10 horns) "Five are fallen, and one is, and the other (singular seventh) is not yet come". At the time John the Revelator wrote Revelation Chapter 17 there had been five world empires that preceded the then reigning Roman Empire, and had ceased to dominate world affairs: Egyptian, Assyrian, Babylonian, Persian and Grecian empires. The Roman Empire was, at that time the one that "is". In later chapters, I will prove that the United States is still exists within the Roman Empire.

The Revelation 17:11 Eighth beast empire is one of the seventh, "and is of the seven"

- Certainly the United Nations is of the seven previous world empires.
- Even the United States cannot be excluded from this prophecy. The U.S. gets its authority to exist from King George III's Treaty of Paris wherein the King keeps his title as the arch-treasurer and prince elector of both the United States of America and the Roman Empire (one of the seven).
- "And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast." This does not necessarily mean the death of a King if the beast heads refer to successive empires that have once held dominion over the known world.
- The phrase "was, and is not and yet is" – There is a spiritual battle among angels. Daniel's angel struggled with the prince of the kingdom of Persia, and a later battle of Daniel 12 will need the assistance of the great Archangel Michael. There are successive empires that are ruled by Satanic personalities that perhaps indwell into world leaders. Throughout history Pharaohs, Kings, Emperors and Caesars have been held as gods. The phrase "was, and is not and yet is" likely refers to the supernatural entities that guided these successive empires.

Many people say that we needn't worry about the Mark, because we will be secretly raptured before the Mark is issued. This mimics the carefully devised fable that appeared during the Counter Reformation. Here are reasons to believe that the rapture comes after the Beast's tribulation and before God's wrath:

- In Revelation 20:4 we see that saints who don't have the mark will be "beheaded" for the witness of Jesus. (Hint: saints will still be on earth after the Mark is issued)
- In Revelation 20:5 we see that saints who did not take the mark are part of the FIRST resurrection. Therefore when Christ comes down from heaven, with a shout and with the voice of the Archangel, these unmarked dead in Christ rise FIRST. The mark must happen BEFORE those who still alive and remain are left to be raptured to Christ in the air (1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4). The rapture will not happen until the saints who refused the mark are resurrected, because we shall in no wise precede those dead in Christ who rise first.
- AFTER the tribulation ... with the sound of a great trumpet, they shall gather his elect. Matthew 24:29-31
- The rapture will not be secret. Lightning and a great trumpet and a shout from the Lord, which all come AFTER the tribulation, to announce the rapture. The trumpet shall sound the rapture. 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 15:52 For as lightning flashes from the east to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of man be. Matthew 24:27. The Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, and with the trump of God – and we will be caught up together in the rapture. 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:16-18.
- Jesus promised to be with us until the end of the world. Matthew 28:20
- Those who endure until the end shall be saved. Matthew 24:13, Mark 13:13, Matthew 10:22
- In the world ye shall have tribulation John 16:33
- And 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5:9, Revelation 10:7, Revelation 11:15,18



I recommend the books *The Pre-Wrath Rapture of the Church* by Marvin Rosenthal and *The Secret Rapture: Is it Scriptural?* by Ralph Woodrow. Also see

[www.gobedo.com/rapture.htm](http://www.gobedo.com/rapture.htm)

Some people think that the Social Security Card is not yet the Mark of the Beast because people are not yet executed for refusing it, as is supposedly required by verse 15.

In a general sense, Christians have been persecuted and executed for the past 2000 years for opposing Beast powers.

- Here is my paraphrase of Revelation 13:15; life has been given to an image of [= fabrication created by] a beast, that the image should cause as many protesters as would not worship the beast [to qualify for credentials to buy and sell] should be abolished [Greek *apokteino* = destroy, abolish or kill]. I know that people can die of starvation without the jobs, homes, and cash that are denied to those who don't have credentials to buy and sell. Being cut off from (*apokteino*) commerce is an effective method of causing all to worship (with a perjury oath) Beast powers. Also related to being cut off: the beheadings in Revelation 20:4 (from the Greek *pelekizo*, Strong's Concordance G3990) means to chop off, to truncate. It is used only once in the Bible. It is derived from the Greek *plesso*, which is translated as "smite". Certainly we witness today those who are cut short *for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God*. These "executions" in Revelation 20:4 are for the witness of Jesus, not necessarily for failing to register for a mark. History is about to repeat itself. Americans have been conquered, vanquished, and subdued by a beast power. The same beast power that Inquisitioned and massacred millions of your Protestant ancestry. And thousands of their ancestors back in the fourth century. They stood. Most people today refuse to take a stand.

Concerning the counterfeit miracles, signs and lying wonders of Revelation 13:13-14 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:9, and the sorceries that deceived nations in Revelation 18:23. I cannot prove a connection, but *Endtime* magazine (Vol 10, No. 3) reports that tour guides at the Vatican state that the word "Vatican" means "the hill of the magicians and the soothsayers". A well researched essay on the meaning of the term "Vatican" can be found at [www.aloha.net/~mikesch/vatican.htm](http://www.aloha.net/~mikesch/vatican.htm)

Many Sabbath keepers insist that Sunday Laws are the mark because the Sunday Laws will prohibit buying and selling, albeit on Sundays only. One Sabbath keeper wrote to me to say "The issue is loyalty to Satan or loyalty to God and THEN buying and selling to save your life." At first, I dismissed this because it seemed to me that Revelation 13:17 has those with a mark, name or number as qualified by the Beast to buy or sell. But this might misconstrue the real intent of John the Revelator. The phrase "No man might" could be a prohibition by God to buy or sell (albeit only on the Sabbath), rather than a prohibition by the Beast. There is a possibility that the Lord, on a Sabbath day, might have tribulation per Matthew 24:20 as a test in which the unfaithful will violate the Sabbath by buying and selling on the Sabbath to save their lives. I dismiss Sunday Laws as the mark because (1) Sunday Laws do not require violating God's prohibition of buying and selling on the Sabbath and (2) God does not prohibit worship on Sunday or any other day of the week and (3) non-Sunday cultures are not likely to legislate any Sunday Laws. But another point to consider in favor of a Sabbath-violation-Mark is that the first angel's message in Revelation 14:7 tells us to worship him that made the heavens, earth and sea. These are the same exact words used in the Sabbath commandment. Revelation 14:12 then contrasts those who keep the commandments with those who receive the mark.

Other excuses: Many people claim that the mark of the beast can only occur when there appears a revived Roman Empire, or a cashless society, or a new temple on the Temple Mount after the sacrifice of Red cows, or a rebuilt Babylon, or an 18 digit international number.

It seems to me that there already is a revived Roman Empire, and a world anti-Christ power (as defined by 1 John 4), and a rebuilt Babylon, and a cashless society (without the gold or silver cash required by your Constitution), and there already are international numbers. And there already is a red cow in Israel. It seems to me that the leaves are on the fig tree.

As for the Temple Mount preceding the mark, I have many reasons to be skeptical. The people who make this claim must (1) deny the historical Protestant position on the antichrist, and also deny Martin Luther's understanding of the temple, (2) then they must somehow prove that Daniel 11's King of the North that takes away the daily *sacrifice* (Dan 11:31) is also the two horned second beast of Revelation 13. (3) Then they must assert that the Abomination of Desolation, which meaning is sealed until the time of the end, will occur in the future even though 2000 years ago Matthew 24:15 and Mark 13:14 were written to readers who understood the sealed meaning.

Deuteronomy 8:19-20 "And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the LORD thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. As the nations which the LORD destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the LORD your God."

## 5 SECTION 5: YOU WANT TO BE LEFT BEHIND

### 5.1 Christ's Timeline

#### 5.1.1 Time Line

Christ himself foretold coming events. Today's popular false prophecies do not fit into Christ's timeline. Christ did not lie. Take heed that you be not deceived, for many will come in Christ's name trying to deceive you.

This doesn't mean that we should stop watching. We are required to watch current events. Christ warned us to notice the leaves on the fig tree. As Christ was making his triumphal entry into Jerusalem, he wept (Luke 19:41) because they did not recognize God's timeline (verse 44). Watch therefore for the signs of his next triumphal entry.

Christ gave us an assignment. Whenever he spoke of his coming he told us to "Watch therefore..." Luke 21:36, Matthew 24:42, Matthew 25:13, etc. What are we to watch for? He says we are to watch for the signs that our redemption draweth nigh. Yes, there will be a pre-wrath rapture of the church, but read your Bible and try to find any hint that Christians will escape the tribulation. Take heed that you be not deceived. Almost two thousand years ago Christ told his followers that they will have tribulation John 16:33.

Christ's disciples were aware of prophecy. They asked him privately when the temple would be destroyed and WHAT SIGNS WOULD PRECEDE his Second Coming. Christ gave them 15 signs. These are in Matthew 24, Luke 21 and Mark 13. We know from history that the temple was destroyed in the year 70 AD, and the daily sacrifices stopped.

Do not be deceived by self-called Christians.	Luke 21:8	Matthew 24:5	Mark 13:6
Wars and commotions; be not terrified for these things must first come to pass. Nation shall rise up against nation.	Luke 21:9,10	Matthew 24:6,7	Mark 13:7,8
famines, pestilences and earthquakes in divers places.[Matt and Mark wrote that these events are "the beginnings of sorrows." But Luke puts all these in the same sentence, along with the persecutions he listed; in the same sentence with fearful signs from heaven – signs which Matt and Mark mention later]	Luke 21:11-12	Matthew 24:7,8	Mark 13:8
Christians face persecutions, arrest, prison, appear before authorities for Christ name's sake. Delivered up to be afflicted. Delivered up to counsels. Testify to authorities.	Luke 21:12-15	Matthew 24:9	Mark 13:9,11
Betrayal by family. [I find it interesting that today's family law courts have neither criminal nor civil jurisdiction. You cannot even get a jury trial]	Luke 21:16	Matthew 24:10	Mark 13:12 children will cause parents to be mortified
False prophets (plural) deceive many. Inequity, love of many shall wax cold		Matthew 24:11,12 & later in verse 24	
You shall be hated of all men for Christ name's sake.	Luke 21:17-19	Matthew 24:9	Mark 13:13
He that endures to the end shall be saved.		Matthew 24:13 As if continuing your assignment from Matthew 10:22	Mark 13:13

<p>This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached unto all the world, then the end shall come. [Note: Revelation 14:6-9 has the gospel preached unto all the world right before those with the Mark of the Beast receive God's wrath].</p>		<p>Matthew 24:14</p>	<p>Mark 13:10</p>
<p>When you see the abomination of desolation, those in Judaea must flee hastily to the mountains, [Tyndale translation: "let them which be in Jewry fly into the mountains"] for then shall come the <b>greatest tribulation of all time*</b>, (note that Luke calls it "days of vengeance"—not necessarily God's wrath) but those days shall be shortened for the <b>elect's**</b> sake. [they are NOT shortened by Christ's coming Matt 24:23&amp;30 and Mark 13:21&amp;26 – although Christ chooses for whom those days will be shortened; Mark 13:20]          [historical note: Jeremiah 6:1 "Flee from Jerusalem!"]          * Matthew 24:21's <b>Greatest tribulation of all time</b>. This just might also be Joel 2's <b>greatest destruction of all time</b>. Which just might also be Daniel 12's <b>greatest trouble of all time</b>, right before everyone whose name is found written in the book "shall be delivered." Which just might be Jeremiah 30:7 <b>greatest day of trembling, fear and travail of all time</b>, right before people are restored to their land and released from bondage.          ** The word "elect" or "elect's" appears 24 times in the New Testament but never refers to Jews. Christ was speaking to His apostles, who represent the church. Matthew 24:22's elect cannot therefore refer to only Jewish believers during the wrath. Mark and Luke wrote their Gospels to the Gentile church also repeat this church prophecy. Believers pass through the great tribulation (Revelation 7:14). They come from every nation, tribe, people and language (Revelation 7:9, 5:9, 10:11, 13:7, 14:6).          The rapture theory suggests that the church is in heaven during this tribulation, yet Revelation 22:16 says this testimony is given to the churches.</p>	<p>Luke 21:20-23          "when you see Jerusalem compassed with armies..."</p>	<p>Matthew 24:15-22,          23: ...but Christ's coming is not yet</p>	<p>Mark 13:14-20</p>

<p>[In Joel 2, the greatest destruction of all time occurs right before smoke from the military destruction cause the sun and moon to turn dark in Joel 2:10, which happens right before the LORD your God drives away the invaders to restore the people to their land. In Joel 2:30-32 <b>After</b> the LORD pours out his spirit there will be signs in the heavens and earth, including smoke, there shall be deliverance in Jersuaem and in the remnant (left behind). The sun turns to darkness and the moon turns to blood “before the great and terrible day of the Lord” –just like Malachi 4:5 and Acts 2:20] The dark sun and blood moon are within the 6<sup>th</sup> seal, which the rapture theorists insist is only for Jews.</p>			
<p>Jerusalem shall be trodden down until the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled. [if you believe this was in 1948, then Christ’s return is even closer. 1948 was 42 months since the Dome of the Rock mosque was built in Jerusalem (see Rev 11:2). Yearlong days are used in Genesis 2:17, Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Peter 3:8]</p>	<p>Luke 21:24</p>		
<p>Don’t believe false prophets trying to deceive the very elect that Christ has come, for Christ’s coming will not be secret. [Why would Christ mention the very elect if they all were raptured to heaven when the tribulation was shortened?]</p>		<p>Matthew 24:23-27</p>	<p>Mark 13:21-22</p>
<p>And then signs in the sun, moon and stars, distress* of nations. [this corresponds to the sixth seal of Revelation 6, except the great earthquake** is not mentioned, this occurs before the return of Jesus] (perhaps the signs in the moon &amp; stars are a polar shift or Meteors that cause forest fires and tidal waves, fresh waters poisoned, etc.) Matt and Mark say these heavenly signs are AFTER the tribulation, not before. Therefore the 144,000 of Rev 7 who came out of the tribulation have already been sealed. Rev 14:1 shows that they did not take the mark. *By the way: “distress” of nations is from a root word that means “constraint”. Some people say this means "huddling of nations". ** A polar shift would cause a great earthquake AND fearful celestial signs of the shift. The great earthquake of Revelation 11:13 provides a point in the timeline. If the great earthquake is the same earthquake of Ezekiel 38, all men on earth tremble at His presence and every wall shall be thrown down according to Ezekiel 38:20.</p>	<p>Luke 21:25-26 (further explains the fearful signs from heaven mentioned in verse 11) the sea and waves roar</p>	<p>Matthew 24:29 “Immediately AFTER the tribulation of those days...”</p>	<p>Mark 13:24,25 AFTER the tribulation</p>

<p>Luke continues the same sentence. Men's hearts failing in apprehension of what is coming on earth for the power of heaven shall be shaken [at the 6<sup>th</sup> seal, great men hide in caves after celestial events.]</p>	<p>Luke 21:26</p>		
<p>The signs of heaven and earth are also shaken in Revelation 8 and 9. Symbolically throughout the Bible, trumpets sound a call to repentance. This countdown sequence of trumpets is initiated by the prayers of saints Rev 8:4. After the earthquake (singular) of Revelation 8:5 there is fire from heaven, and a third of the trees burn, a third of sea turns to blood, a third of the ships (perhaps symbolizing World Trade) are destroyed. Wormwood "burning as it were a lamp" falls from the sky to destroy a third of the rivers "and many men died of the waters that became bitter." [Wormwood in the Russian language is translated as the word Chernobyl according to NYT 07/26/1986 page 1 article entitled "Chernobyl Fallout: Apocalyptic Tale and Fear"]</p>			
<p>and <b>then</b> (after the tribulation) shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.</p>	<p>Luke 21:27</p>	<p>Matthew 24:30 and all the tribes of the earth shall mourn</p>	<p>Mark 13:26</p>
<p>PRIOR to his coming. According to Christ himself, you will not see him until Jerusalem cries out "<b>Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord</b>" Matthew 23:39 and Luke 13:35. Apparently a Christian, prior to his coming, will deliver Jerusalem from a tribulation. But also keep in mind that our Lord was crucified in a great city called Sodom and Egypt according to Revelation 11:8. This is right after the two witnesses are killed.</p>			

<p>PRIOR to his coming. We know that a resurrection immediately precedes the second coming: We shall not precede those who are asleep, (1st Thessalonians 4:15) then we who are alive and remain (left behind) shall be caught up together with them in the clouds (1st Thessalonians 4:17).</p> <p>PRIOR to his coming. We know that the first resurrection includes those who refused the mark of the beast according to Revelation 20:5</p> <p>PRIOR to his coming. It is quite possible that the dry bones resurrection of Ezekiel 37 is followed by the second coming as well as by the Ezekiel 38 earthquake that causes all men on earth to tremble at His presence. If this is the same great earthquake of Revelation 6:12, then it is also the Day of His Wrath, Revelation 6:17. This pre-wrath rapture (Romans 5:9, 1 Thessalonians 1:10, 1 Thessalonians 5:9, etc) must occur after the first resurrection and before the earthquake's Day of His Wrath.</p>			
<p>The prophecy of Isaiah 13:6 has not occurred yet. The day of the Lord shall come as destruction from the Almighty. Babylon shall suffer supernatural destruction, just as did Sodom and Gomorrah. (verse 19). This is the fall of Babylon described in Revelation 18. In one hour is thy judgment come.</p> <p>Luke 17:29-30 (KJV) <b>"But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed."</b> Compare with Matt 24:39 this is at the coming of the Son of Man.</p>			
<p>when these things <u>begin</u> to come to pass, look up for your redemption draweth nigh.</p> <p>Again: these things begin to come to pass before your redemption at Christ's return.</p>	<p>Luke 21: 28</p>	<p>Matt 24:34 this generation shall not pass until ALL these things fulfilled</p>	
<p>Those dead in Christ shall rise FIRST, at the trump of God. 1 Thessalonians 4:16. Daniel 12:2. At the last trump Rev 11:15,18 the TIME of the dead.</p> <p>The FIRST resurrection includes those who did not take the mark, according to Revelation 20:4-6. THEN those who are alive and remain (left behind) will be raptured.</p>		<p>Matt 24:29-31 After the tribulation, (IF you believe Jesus' prophecy).</p>	

<p>The Lord himself shall descend with a shout, with the trump of God and the dead in Christ shall rise.                  IF 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:16 describes a resurrection -- Then Revelation 20:5 places the first resurrection AFTER the mark of the beast exists and after the beast image is worshiped.</p>			
<p>He shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet and they shall gather his elect from the four winds. This trump harmonizes with both the trumpet and the sudden meeting in the air of 1 Thessalonians. 4:16-17 and with the last trumpet call and sudden “twinkling of an eye” metamorphosis 1 Corinthians 15:52.</p>		<p>Matthew 24:31</p>	<p>Mark 13:27</p>
<p>The Philadelphia church was told in Rev 3:10 that those who keep the word will be kept from <u>the hour</u> of trial that comes upon the earth. For in one hour will thy destruction come Rev 18:10 for in one hour she is made desolate Rev 18:19.</p>			
<p>1 Thessalonians 4:17 we who remain (left behind) will be raptured. At Christ’s very apparent second coming. As firstfruits. To rule with Christ a thousand years.</p>			

Christ referred to his timeline as the parable of the fig tree. He then warned us to watch carefully for these signs, that we not be caught unawares. Luke 21:29-31: *when you see these things begin to come to pass, know ye that the Kingdom of God is nigh at hand.* Verse 34-36 *take heed yourselves, lest at any time your heart be overcharged with the cares of this world that you miss these signs that your redemption draweth nigh. As a snare it shall come to all on the face of the earth. Watch you therefore, and pray always, that you may be accounted worthy to escape [this word translated “to flee out” in Acts 16:27 & Acts 19:16, and translated “escape” in 1 Thessalonians 5:3, Hebrews 2:3. It is not a rapture] all these things that are about to come to pass, to stand before the Son of man.*



A third of the sea turns to blood. We use today's English word [sanguine](#) (from the Latin word for blood) as a color. If the Biblical term *blood* is a color, we now know it is possible from an oil spill. One of America's coastlines has already experienced this. Another possibility is a toxic red plankton known as the “[red tide](#)”.



### 5.1.2 Christ will not come in secret

Christ's coming will not be secret. The last trump shall sound the rapture. 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 15:52. For as lightning flashes from the east to the west, so shall the coming of the Son of man be. Matt 24:27. The Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, and with the trump of God – and THEN (word used in 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:17) we will be caught up (raptured) together to meet the Lord in the air. 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:16-18. The whole world will watch. Colossians 3:4. (except those targeted for destruction) Hardly a secret disappearance of believers.

### 5.1.3 Watch therefore, for your Last trump

After giving us the timeline, Christ continues with parables to emphasize, over and over again, how important it is to watch for the signs. At the last trump, the opportunity for redemption will be brief. Then the door (as in Matthew 25:10) will close quickly. Christ wants you to pay attention because THE LAST TRUMP IS YOUR LAST CHANCE AT REDEMPTION. A trump is a call to repentance. The blowing of the trumpets (shofar) on the first day of the seventh month symbolically announces the beginning of your trial before the heavenly court where books will be opened and the destiny of each individual will be decided. The trial lasts for ten days until the Day of Atonement when God will dispose of your sins permanently. (Leviticus 23:24 was spoken to Moses by an unchanging God. Redemption is the focus of the Book of Revelation. The first six trumpets provide warning calls, the seventh announces judgment.)

- Matthew 24:42 (KJV) "Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come."
- Matthew 24:44 "Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh."
- Matthew 24:50 "The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,"
- Matthew 25:13 "Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh."
- Matthew 25:30 "And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."
- Mark 13:32 but of that day and that hour knoweth no man... 33: take heed watch and pray for ye know not when the time is.

Parallel verses in Revelation 6 and 7:

First seal: conquering. Second seal: power to take peace from the earth. Third seal: economic turmoil. Fourth seal: famine, plague. These four horsemen have jurisdiction only over a fourth part of the earth. Fifth seal: Souls that had been executed for the word of God must wait for further martyrdom that must come to pass. If these souls are included with the souls of Revelation 20:4, then they did not take the Mark of the Beast. Sixth: Earthquakes, signs in sun, moon and stars. Rulers, rich and mighty hide from the wrath of God, but no harm is to come until 144,000 of God's servants are sealed. (In order to support their rapture theory, some people insist this means "witnesses" are sealed. But salvation is of the Jews, John 4:22). Then: countless multitudes dressed in white robes are proclaiming that salvation comes from God. An angel in Revelation 7:14 tells us that these white robed multitudes are those who come out of the great tribulation and serve before the throne of God.

- It is unstated whether or not the untold multitudes dressed in white had the seal of God that the 144,000 had received. Revelation 14:1-4 mentions that only 144,000 are redeemed as firstfruits (but see Romans 1:16). Although unstated, it is possible that everyone eventually gets a seal/mark on their forehead. After all, in the end, there are only two churches.
- We know that the servants who are sealed remain on earth (are not raptured to heaven) during God's wrath according to Revelation 9:4.
- God protects people by sealing them with a mark. As with the Ezekiel 9:4-6 mark on the forehead, or Cain's Genesis 4:15 mark of protection, or with the Exodus 12 Passover blood-on-the-door-post mark, God's protection is on those that have God's mark. Those who are sealed remain on earth, according to Revelation 9:4, and protected by their mark. God has not appointed us to his wrath 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5:9.
- The original Passover allowed the persecuted to escape their earthly tribulation, just as the next passover will also allow escape. Watch you therefore, and pray always, that you may be accounted worthy to escape ["to flee out"] all these things that are about to come to pass, to stand before the Son of man (your savior-redeemer-deliverer).
- Further support for a physical escape here on earth, rather than a rapture to heaven: Isaiah 26:20-21, Joel chapter 2, and all of Isaiah chapters 40-42, Revelation 3:10 and 12:14.

Parallel verses in 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5: for the times and seasons you know perfectly well that the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, for when people seek peace and safety, destruction shall come upon them suddenly. Warnings to watch carefully and Thief-in-the-night suddenness are also mentioned in Revelation 3:3 and Matthew 24:43.

- Do you live in a time where people seek peace and safety (1 Thessalonians 5:3)?
- Are there peace-and-safety laws, from Beast powers, that require people to be marked with graven ID cards? Do these graven ID cards protect people from unwarranted detention as they travel around with their master's permission?

When you see the abomination of desolation, let them in Judaea flee to the mountains. This had an obvious first fulfillment in AD 70 when Jerusalem was destroyed by the Romans. The abomination of desolation is spoken of in Daniel 9:27, Daniel 11:31 and Daniel 12:11. This meaning was sealed until the time of the end, according to Daniel 12:4&9. At the time of the end –Two thousand years ago – Matthew wrote Matthew 24:15 to those who already, at that time, understood the sealed message.

- The abomination of desolation occurs during military occupation, according to Luke 21:20 and in Daniel 11:31. Do you live in a time when a Beast's military performs police powers over a fourth part of the earth?
- Is Jerusalem compassed by military?
- Further support for military abomination: If Daniel 12:1 greatest trouble of all time is also the Matthew 24:21 greatest tribulation of all time, which might also be the Mark 13:19 greatest affliction of all time, which just might also be Joel 2's greatest destruction of all time. Which just might also be Daniel 12's greatest trouble of all time, which just might be Jeremiah 30:7 greatest day of travail of all time, which is also probably Luke's "days of vengeance" – then there must first come a government that honors Daniel 11:38's "God of forces."
- Military. Daniel 11:38 "God of forces" can mean "god of munitions." The original (1611 version) King James Bible, Daniel 11:38 "God of forces" has a margin note written by King James' translators:

*"Or, munitions. Heb. Mauzzin, or, as for the almighty God in his seat he shall honour, yea he shall honour a God, &c."*

- Military. The King James Bible had a margin note for Daniel 11:39's "most strong holds". It says:

*"Heb. fortresses of munitions."*

- When you see the abomination of desolation spoken of in Daniel, flee to the mountains to avoid the greatest tribulation. In addition to the first fulfillment in AD70, "mountains" may symbolize political or religious powers (as in Isaiah 2:2, Jeremiah 17:3 & 31:23 & 51:24-25, Ezekiel 17:22, Daniel 2:35,44,45, Matthew 17:20)
- Nations are angry when God's wrath comes. This is at the time the dead are judged and the servants and saints are rewarded. Revelation 11:18.

# Kings of the Chap.xj. North and South.

he shall doe exploits, and returne to his owne land.

29 At the time appointed he shall returne, and come toward the South: but it shall not be as the former, or as the latter.

30 For the ships of Chittim shall come against him: therefore he shall be grieved and returne, and haue indignation against the holy Couenant: so shall he doe, he shall euen returne, and haue intelligence with them that forsake the holy Couenant.

31 And armes shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the Sanctuarie of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate.

32 And such as doe wickedly against the couenant, shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that do knowe their God, shall be strong and doe exploits.

33 And they that vnderstand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captiuitie, and by spoile many dayes.

34 Now when they shall fall, they shall be holpen with a litle help: but many shall cleaue to them with flatteries.

35 And some of them of vnderstanding shall fall, to trie them, and to purge, and to make them white, euen to the time of the end: because it is yet for a time appointed.

36 And the king shall doe according to his will, and he shall exalt himselfe, and magnifie himselfe aboue euery god, and shall speake maruelous things against the God of gods, & shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that that is determined, shall be done.

37 Neither shall hee regard the god of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnifie himselfe aboue all.

38 But in his estate shall he honour the god of forces: and a God whome his fathers knew not, shall hee honour with gold, and siluer, and with precious stones, and pleasant things.

39 Thus shall hee doe in the most strong holds with a strange god, whom he shall acknowledge and increase with glory: and he shall cause them to rule ouer many, and shall diuide the land for gaine.

40 And at the time of the end shall the king of the South push at him, and the king of the North shall come against him

† Heb. to corrupt.

18 After this shall he turne his face vnto the ples, and shall take many, but a prince for his own behalfe shall cause the reproch offered by him to cease with out his owne reproch: he shall cause it to turne vpon him.

19 Then he shall turne his face towards the fort of his owne lande: but he shall stumble and fall, and not be found.

20 Then shall stand by in his estate a raiser of taxes in the glory of the kingdome, but within few dayes he shall be destroyed, neither in anger, nor in battell.

21 And in his estate shall stand by a vile person, to whom they shall not giue the honour of the kingdome: but hee shall come in peaceably, and obtaine the kingdome by flatteries.

22 And with the armes of a flood shall they be ouerflowen from before him, and shall be broken: yea also the prince of the couenant.

23 And after the league made with him he shall worke deceitfully, for hee shall come vp, and shall become strong with a small people.

24 He shall enter peaceably euen vpon the fattest places of the prouince, and he shall doe that which his fathers haue not done, nor his fathers fathers, he shall scatter among them the praye and spoile, and riches: yea and he shall forecast his deuices against the strong holdes, euen for a time.

25 And he shall stirre by his power, and his courage against the king of the South with a great army, and the king of the South shall be stirred vp to battell with a very great and mightie armie: but he shall not stand: for they shall forecast deuices against him.

26 Yea they that feede of the portion of his meate, shall destroy him, and his armie shall overflow: and many shall fall downe slaine.

27 And both these kings hearts shall be to doe mischief, and they shall speake lies at one table: but it shall not prosper: for yet the end shall be at the time appointed.

28 Then shall hee returne into his land with great riches, and his heart shall be against the holy couenant: and

|| Or, a flambeth.

|| Or, cause to dissemble.

|| Or, by them

|| Or, monuments. Heb. Menean, or, as for the almighty God in his feate he shall honour, yea he shall honour a God, &c.

† Heb. strong desired.

† Heb. fortress of monuments.

† Heb. a price

Daniel 11 in King James version of 1611

### 5.1.4 Astronomical events?

As you speculate on the prophecy timeline, consider that God made lights in the firmament of the heaven to be for signs according to the first page of your Bible in Genesis 1:14. In Matthew 2, the Wise Men witnessed the same astronomical events as everyone else, but they knew enough to pack their camels and travel 700 miles to Jerusalem. Are you as inquisitive as they were?

The moon becomes as blood in Joel 2:31, Acts 2:20, and Revelation 6:12. This could be smoke of war, or volcanic ash, or it could be a lunar eclipse. And the Sun becoming black as sackcloth in Revelation 6:12 could be solar eclipse.

- But ye brethren are not in darkness as that day should overtake you as a thief. 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5:4.
- Luke 21:25,28 (KJV) **And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; ... And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.**
- Matthew 24:30 (KJV) **And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.**

"the sign of the son of man in heaven"? The date of September 29, 2011 -- was Rosh Hashanah (the feast of trumpets) on the Jewish Calendar -- saw the (Revelation 12:1) constellation Virgo the virgin clothed in the sun, crowned with 12 stars\*, with the moon at her feet, and the morning star in her abdomen (Astronomers call the planet Venus "the morning star" Revelation 22:16 King James version quotes Jesus' final words to us. He proclaimed that he is "the bright and morning star".).

I'm assuming that Revelation 12:1 was written as prophecy. A government leader, Herod, was the personified red dragon in verse 4, who sought to devour Christ at his first coming. There is every reason to suspect that another red (Communist) dragon will also be personified by a government leader to again make war (verse 17) with those who "keep the Commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ"

\* There is a wide variety of planetarium software. [www.stellarium.org](http://www.stellarium.org) is a free download and [www.StarryNight.com](http://www.StarryNight.com) has a range of software packages. See the documentary [The Star Of Bethlehem](#) for further fascinating insights into the timing of celestial events that convinced the Wise Men to travel 700 miles to Bethlehem. This is the same precise clockwork that was set into motion when The Creator flung the galaxies into existence. [www.BethlehemStar.net](http://www.BethlehemStar.net)

More than 100 years ago, Astronomers acknowledged that 12 stars surround the head of Virgo the virgin.

*"The astronomer, Professor Thorley, has shown that there are exactly twelve stars surrounding the head of Virgo as we view them from the earth. If one will look at Norton's Star Atlas, twelve visible stars will be seen around Virgo's head. They are, according to astronomical terminology: (1) Pi, (2) Nu, (3) Beta, (4) Sigma, (5) Chi, (6) Iota - these six stars form the southern hemisphere around the head of Virgo. Then there are (7) Theta, (8) Star 60, (9) Delta, (10) Star 93, (11) Beta, (12) Omicron - these last six form the northern hemisphere around the head of Virgo"*

Source <http://philologos.org/bpr/files/c006.htm>

Regardless of speculations, we know that:

1. Where ever the carcass is, there shall the vultures be gathered. Matthew 24:28.
2. Immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give it's light.
3. And then shall the sign of the son of man appear in the heavens.
4. And he shall send his angels with the sound of a great trumpet to gather his elect.
5. When you see all these things know that it is near, even at the door.
6. But of that day and hour no man knoweth



### 5.1.5 Where does the mark of the beast fit into the timeline

Where does the Mark of the Beast fit into the timeline? Here are some clues:

Revelation 13 shows that a two-horned beast issues the Mark. Nowhere in Revelation 13 is there a one-man world leader. If you want to insist that a one man world leader issues the mark, then you must first explain away three angels' messages:

1. An angel, in Daniel 7:23 equates Daniel's fourth beast with a fourth (final) world government, not a church, not a man, not an antichrist. The word "antichrist" is not even in the book of Revelation.
2. Angels insist that horns symbolize kings while beasts symbolize governments. Angels (in Daniel 7:24, Daniel 8:20 and in Revelation 17:12) tell us that the horns symbolize kings that came out of the beast kingdom, perhaps successive kings. Or Perhaps concurrent kings.
3. The two-horned beast causes all to worship the seven headed ten-horned beast. Unless these angels lied, all I can conclude is that the final world government is two loosely knit confederations of powers totaling 8 heads. One beast from the land, with two lamb's horns that speaks like a dragon, and the more brutal 10 horned beast previously risen from the sea. Hardly one man. Nor can you support the one-man theory from the iron-and-clay toes of Nebuchadnezzar's image, an image that exists up until Christ's return, and is smashed by Christ's return..

The Mark of the Beast exists before the so-called "Rapture".

Revelation 20:4 (KJV)

*"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years."*

Revelation 20:5 (KJV)

*"But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the FIRST resurrection. "*

Read that again. You now have Biblical proof that the mark of the beast and the image of the beast exist BEFORE the first resurrection. You now must use your God-given talents to discern whether or not the 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:16 *"The Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout ... and the dead in Christ shall rise FIRST."* -- at the so-called "rapture" -- is indeed a resurrection.

- If so, then according to 1 Thessalonians 4:17, *"we which are alive and remain [left behind] shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air"* which is, according to Revelation 20:4 AFTER the Mark of the Beast is issued, and AFTER the beast and his image are worshiped. The rapture will not happen until the saints who refused the mark are resurrected first (Revelation 20:5 calls this the first resurrection), because we which are alive and remain shall in no wise precede those dead in Christ who rise first (1 Thessalonians 4:15-16). Don't fall for other theories that rely upon anti-Protestant fables becoming true.
- If the souls which are mentioned after the judgment thrones of Revelation 20:4 -- those who refused the mark - - are indeed the same souls under the alter of Revelation 6:9, then this occurs during the Fifth seal revelations which is BEFORE the Almighty's wrath is revealed by the sixth seal. We will not see this wrath 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5:9. Christ delivered us from the wrath to come 1 Thessalonians 1:10.

And we already knew from 2 Thessalonians 2 that the day of the Lord will not come until after the man of sin is revealed.

Christians must suffer through the tribulation. The rapture is post-tribulation, pre wrath. Are you prepared?

\*The beheadings in Revelation 20:4 might or might not be executions. If the souls which are mentioned after the judgment thrones of Revelation 20:4 are indeed the same souls under the alter of Revelation 6:9 then bloody executions are the most likely possibility. But we should still consider:

- Even if it does describe executions, beheading is the most lenient form of execution. This hardly depicts the traditional execution of saints throughout history who were burned at the stake, crucified, drawn and quartered, boiled in oil or fed to the lions. John the Revelator lived in a time of very brutal punishments, so perhaps he was referring to more lenient executions.
- This Greek word for beheading (*pelekizo*, Strong's Concordance G3990) means to chop off, to truncate. It is used only once in the Bible. It is derived from the Greek *plesso*, which is elsewhere translated as "smite"
- Chop off or truncate? Certainly we witness today those who are cut short *for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God*. And certainly we witness today those who are cut off -- we use the terms *marginalize* or *excommunicate* -- from society and from normal commerce (buying and selling) because they refuse to violate six of the commandments just to get a banking authorization number.
- Chop off? Does the phrase "cut him in sunder" (KJV) or "cut him to pieces" (NIV) or "cut him in two" (NKJV) of the master's servant in Luke 22:46 refer to a literal execution? Possibly, but not likely. It seems to be a scolding or a whipping.
- Idioms? We don't know the idioms used in the Revelator's era, but perhaps the word usage is similar to today's word *mortify*, with no actual death. And today's sports fans casually use words of gruesome death to convey a meaning of defeat, with no actual deaths. Certainly the defeat of champions can be informally called a beheading ever since Goliath in 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 17. And there may have been an idiom of the time to refer to government retaliation against those who witness for Christ -- as they compared their battle scars to that of beheaded John the Baptist (enduring their tribulation). Christ himself often spoke of the living as being dead. And the Roman guards who witnessed the resurrection in Matthew 28:4 were spoken of as dead with no actual deaths.
- Another possible idiom of "beheaded for the witness of Christ" might be a reference to government influence by those who will not tolerate what John the Baptist did -- remind them of moral values. John 6:19. This fits nicely with Christ's prophecy that we are to be put in prisons, delivered up authorities to be afflicted, delivered to counsels for persecution, all "*for my name's sake*". Luke 21:12, Matthew 24:9, Mark 13:9, 13. "*for a testimony against them...*" I find it interesting that Luke 21:16 cause to be put to death, Matthew 24:9 shall kill you, Mark 13:12 shall cause them to be put to death, also say "*But there shall not an hair of your head perish*" "*but he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saved.*" Apparently "cause to" refers to prosecutor's intent.

- If the souls of the fifth seal in Revelation 6 are included with the souls in Revelation 20:4, then they did not take the Mark of the Beast – this occurs before the earthquake, and before signs in the sun, moon and stars of the sixth seal. The book of Revelation uses symbolism - Revelation 6:13 compares the sixth seal to a fig tree because Christ called his timeline the parable of the fig tree. We were told to watch for the leaves on the fig tree.
- Even if you can prove that the false prophets [plural] of Matthew 24:11 or 24:24 are agents of the false prophet [singular] of Revelation 19:20 (which cannot be a man because he lives forever – Revelation 20:10) that deceives those who received the Mark – then it is still possible that the Mark is here now, not some future fable.
- If you can prove that the wonders and powers of Revelation 13:13&14 is also the miracles mentioned in Revelation 19:20, (which might also be the power, signs and lying wonders of 2 Thessalonians 2:9) then it is still possible that the Mark is here now, not some future fable.
- Christians outside the mark/name/number system of the Beast powers are indeed already persecuted, delivered up to counsels and testify to authorities, Luke 21:12-15, Matthew 24:9, Mark 13:9,11 (which only irritates the authorities).
- Ever since the 1520's the Anabaptists were persecuted and executed for refusing to register their children with the established authorities. Registration is persecution. Ever since the 12<sup>th</sup> century the Waldenses have been persecuted and have evaded the authorities by escaping to the mountains. In the 1600's the Scottish Covenanters were executed because they refused to swear oaths to the King of England. The same story continues today. Registration is persecution. Those who refuse to swear perjury oaths to the graven State god to get a work authorization number, or to get ID cards with an all-capitalized name, are increasingly excluded from buying and selling. An all-capitalized name is not even a proper noun. It is not even the name of a person, place or thing. But those who love the one true God hesitate to dishonor their family name (which would violate the fifth commandment) just to have an ID card so they can buy and sell.
- We must pay attention to the clues if we are to escape to the mountains to avoid persecution. Luke 21:36 "escape" occurs when the Kingdom of God is nigh at hand, but when most people are concerned with overindulgence and the cares of this world. (parallels in 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 5 call it the day of the Lord when people seek peace and safety). Those who miss the clues will suffer God's wrath.
- Second Thessalonians 2 proves that the apostasy will be before the "rapture," but it gives no hint about the Mark's schedule. More about this, later.

Just so that you are not caught unawares, here is where we are on the timeline:

- Past: Wars and rumors of wars has already occurred. Nations rise up against nation has already occurred. Conquering, peace taken from earth, economic turmoil. These have all come true, although there may be further fulfillment. History has several fulfillments of Daniel 11's King of the North.
- Present: The beginning of sorrows. There have indeed been famines and plagues in divers places. There have been earthquakes in divers places, [Note: Matthew 24 and Mark 13 have earthquakes in diverse places, as the beginning of sorrows, occurring before some are delivered up to be afflicted, whereas Luke 21 GREAT earthquakes, plural, and the Revelation 6 sixth seal GREAT earthquake, singular, occur after persecution]. If you want to keep track of divers earthquakes that have occurred in the past two weeks go to the seismometer map at <http://www.iris.edu/dms/seismon>
- Note that there will continue to be turmoil in the Middle East, and an economic collapse of your debt-based banking system is also inevitable. Two hundred million man armies (Revelation 9:16) are available today (Muslim or Chinese). These things must come to pass.
- Present: Christ prophesied pestilences in divers places. Legionaries disease has been killing people since 1976, Ebola since 1995, SARS since 2003 and ongoing outbreaks of Flesh eating bacteria and Superbugs Enterococci, Staphylococci, such as MRSA (Methicillin Resistant Staph Aureus), Klebsiella (35% death rate if you catch it), Acinetobacter, Psudomonas, and Enterobacter. And now the CRE epidemic. What about the deaths by wild beasts of Revelation 6:8? Examples of deaths by wild beasts – misquotes with West Nile virus or Chikungunya virus, killer bees, cattle with E. coli O157:H7, there is now CJS – the human form of Mad Cow disease, bird flu, swine flu, ongoing Anthrax threats from cattle, and we should not exclude rodents who spread bubonic plague many years ago, and recently spread hantavirus. Hospital infections kill 6% of those infected according to a [government study](#). You might not think that these few deaths are of apocalyptic proportions, but consider this: The four horsemen of Revelation 6 only have jurisdiction over only a fourth of the earth to kill by SWORD, famine, plague and by wild beasts. It doesn't say that a fourth of humanity will die. And we cannot ignore the sword. If we include the abortion sword, the total is a fourth of mankind now that China has a forced abortion policy. Abortion kills 3000 innocent babies every day. Some scientists are now predicting famine caused by genetic engineering of crops. Famine caused by the loss of honeybees is a real possibility. The next events of Revelation 6 will signal the end of tribulation (according to Matthew 24, Mark 13) and the beginning of God's wrath: a great earthquake, the sun turns dark, and the moon turns red. But by then it might be too late, God's people will already be sealed in their foreheads.
- Present: Some shall be delivered up to be afflicted. Some appear before authorities. Some of you are most hated of all men for Christ namesake (just for being called Christian). Executions continue.
- Next: Some escape from the wrath of God. Half of the Bible believers, while awaiting the advent, will be caught unawares. Matthew 25:1-12.

The Mark of the Beast is your final exam. At what point on the timeline will you acknowledge that a final world power has restricted most of your buying and selling unless you have one of their numbers?

Repent now. You cannot wait for the economy to collapse, because you are marked as collateral for the national debt.



## 5.2 What AntiChrist?

Those who teach the false AntiChrist theory absolutely vehemently insist that it has to be a one man world leader ruling from Jerusalem. The reasons they give for an AntiChrist to exist are easily rebutted.

Even though there is no mention of the word "antichrist" in the book of Revelation they say that the first beast of Revelation 13 has strong parallels to other prophetic individuals, and the parallels cannot be discounted.

Then they correctly say that the second beast of Revelation 13, the one introduced in verse 11, which they refer to as the false prophet, is the beast that issues the mark of the first beast. They then dismiss any suggestion that the mark is of the second beast. They insist that their first beast antichrist has to be a man because Revelation 13:17 says "his number" and Revelation 15:2 says "number of his name". They say he is the same individual who confirms a covenant in Daniel 9:27. Then they try to compare him with a "man of sin" which is revealed, and to the King of the North in Daniel 11. That's it.

Let's take a closer look.

You will be punished if you fall for deception. Christ told you, in Matthew 23:15 that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twofold damned. It is your responsibility to know the difference between right and wrong. So pay attention. Get your religion from the Bible, not from rumors. In Luke 11:35 Christ cautioned us: Take heed therefore that the light within you be not darkness. And in Ezekiel 14: 4 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:11 those who do not receive a love of the truth are warned that the Lord himself will send strong delusion in proportion to the idols that you worship.

Other than the Antichrists that existed at the time 1<sup>st</sup> John and 2<sup>nd</sup> John were written, the only antichrist that I can find in the Bible is the Assyrian of Micah 5:6 from whom Christ will deliver us upon his return. In the majesty of the name of the LORD his God.

(Aside: And the duration of the old Assyrian empire was 666 years before it was conquered by Babylon.)

- Many people say they needn't worry about the Mark of the Beast because they will be raptured to heaven before the Mark is issued.
- Many people speak of a future antichrist. Some insist that he will be a man of sin mentioned in 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:3. Even though 1<sup>st</sup> John 4:3 and 2<sup>nd</sup> John :7 say the antichrist existed almost 2000 years ago.
- Many people insist that a one-man world leader will issue the Mark of the Beast.
- Many people insist that there will be a broken 7 year treaty, or a 7 year tribulation. They base this on a faulty twisting of Daniel chapter 9.
- Many people say that a one-man world leader will rule from the temple in Jerusalem, contrary to traditional Protestant teaching about these Bible passages. They insist that God will honor temple offerings again, which denies that Christ is our sin offering. When Martin Luther accused the Pope of being the son of perdition, he added his understanding of the temple: "What is the temple of God? Is it stones and wood? Did not Paul say, The Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are?" (Luther's Works Vol 2, page 281).
- People refuse to believe that saints remain on earth during the end days. The church is wherever the saints are, according to 1 Corinthians 14:33, but many are told that the church will be in heaven during the end days. They invent all manner of excuses to explain why saints come out of the tribulation (in Revelation 7:14) and to explain why Christ's elect are gathered after the tribulation (Matthew 24:29-31 and Mark 13:24-27) and to explain why saints exist on earth after the mark is issued (Revelation 14:12 & 20:4). Yet Christ tells us that those who endure unto the end shall be saved. He promised "**I am with you always, even to the end of the age.**" Matthew 28:20.

The Dark Ages ended when millions of people read the Bible for themselves. All over Europe the Pope was called the Antichrist. The historical Protestant position is that the 42-month period of Revelation 13:5 was a period of yearlong days, and that it had already been fulfilled. Yearlong days are used in Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Peter 3:8.

In 1590 Jesuit Francisco Ribera published an opposing view, titled *In Sacrum Beati Ioannis Apostoli, & Evangelistiae Apocalypsin Commentarij*. Then in 1593 Cardinal Robert Bellarmine published *Polemic Lectures Concerning the Disputed Points of the Christian Belief Against the Heretics of This Time*. These became the official Catholic position on the Antichrist. They claim:

- 1) that the Antichrist was to be one man, not a dynasty,
- 2) he would be an atheist
- 3) he would not be revealed until 7 years before the end of time and does not exist in the present
- 4) he will rule for 3 and one half literal years
- 5) he would sit in a rebuilt temple in Jerusalem and make a covenant with Jews
- 6) he would call himself God
- 7) he will deny Jesus and be received by the Jews

By the way, Bellarmine is the one who setup Galileo to be sentenced to life in prison.

Later, in the 1830's they added the thought that Christians were to be secretly raptured to Heaven before his appearance.

There is plenty of information available on the Internet to show that the Catholic Antichrist position is contrary to historical Protestant thought. Just search the Internet for combinations of the words *antichrist* or *futurism* along with the name Ribera.

<p>αὐτῶν τῆς δεξιᾶς, ἢ ἐπὶ τῶν μετώπων<sup>1</sup> αὐτῶν, 17 <sup>2</sup>καὶ ἵνα  <sup>1</sup>their <sup>2</sup>right, or on <sup>2</sup>foreheads <sup>1</sup>their; and that      μή τις δύνηται ἀγοράσαι ἢ πωλῆσαι, εἰ μὴ ὁ ἔχων τὸ      no one should be able to buy or to sell, except he who has the      χάραγμα <sup>3</sup>ἢ τὸ ὄνομα<sup>4</sup> τοῦ θηρίου, ἢ τὸν ἀριθμὸν τοῦ      mark or the name<sup>4</sup> of the beast, or the number      ὀνόματος αὐτοῦ. 18 Ὡς ἡ σοφία ἐστίν. ὁ ἔχων <sup>5</sup>τὸν<sup>6</sup>  <sup>5</sup>name <sup>1</sup>of <sup>2</sup>its. Here <sup>2</sup>wisdom <sup>1</sup>is. He who has</p>
<p>In the Greek interlinear Bible, Revelation 13:17 is translated as the number of <u>its</u> name, not the number of <u>his</u> name. Greek αὐτοῦ (Strong's 848) can be properly translated as <i>its</i>.</p>

<p>2 Καὶ <sup>7</sup>εἶδον<sup>8</sup> ὡς θάλασσαν ὑαλίνην μεμιγμένην πυρὶ,      And I saw as a <sup>7</sup>sea <sup>8</sup>glass mingled with fire,      καὶ τοὺς νικῶντας ἐκ τοῦ θηρίου καὶ ἐκ τῆς εἰκόνης αὐτοῦ      and the overcomers of the beast, and of its image,      καὶ <sup>9</sup>ἐκ τοῦ χάραγματος αὐτοῦ,<sup>10</sup> ἐκ τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ τοῦ ὀνόματος      and of its mark, of the number <sup>10</sup>name      αὐτοῦ, ἐστῶτας ἐπὶ τὴν θάλασσαν τὴν ὑαλίνην, ἔχοντας  <sup>1</sup>of <sup>2</sup>its, standing upon the <sup>2</sup>sea <sup>1</sup>glass, having      κιθάρας τοῦ θεοῦ. 3 καὶ ᾄδουσιν τὴν ψῆδὴν <sup>11</sup>Μωσέως<sup>12</sup> <sup>13</sup>δού-      harps of God. And they sing the song of Moses, bond-</p>
<p>They use the same excuse for their Revelation 15:2 translation of "his number". But it is not there in the original.</p>

And indeed, nowhere in your Bible does it say that an anti-Christ issues the mark of the beast. It is the mark of the beast, just as it states in verse 17, not the mark of an anti-Christ. Beasts have always symbolized governments. There is nothing convoluted or enigmatic about the Beast issuing the Mark. It is exactly as the Bible predicted. The second beast, while

exercising the authority of the scarlet ten-horned first beast, being ridden by a whore who is drunk with the blood of saints, deceives people into worship of a substitute god that causes them to get a mark symbolically in their right hand or forehead so they can buy and sell. This seems so straightforward to me. Again: the Greek word is the number of its name, not the number of his name.

I repeat again: DIVINE interpretation by angels say that beasts symbolize government and that horns are kings. Again: Revelation 13:17 says it is the mark of the Beast, not the mark of a horn, or an anti-Christ.

Some people say that the Mark will be associated with “the number of his name” in verse 17 and that this refers to the number of one individual man. And they insist that it is “the number of a man” in verse 18, which is the number of one individual man. This is another anti-Protestant interpretation that is easily refuted.

We notice that the original Greek for verse 18 is missing the indefinite article “a” which the King James translators added to get “number of a man”. And indeed, the NIV translates it as “it is man’s number”. (Although I hesitate to use the NIV as a good example). Again: The original Greek has never had the indefinite article for “a” man. It is not the Greek word *aner* that would be used for an individual man.

The sinful man in 2nd Thessalonians chapter 2 is the Greek *anthropos*, from which we get our English prefix anthro- words, such as anthropology and anthropomorphic, meaning all of mankind. It is not the Greek word *aner* that would be used for an individual man. Revelation 13:18 number of man is this same *anthropos*. For it is the number of mankind.

The popular deceptions of today would have you believing in a future man of sin. It is the mankind of sin, the offspring “...of perdition which is an adversary, and is exalted above all that is called God...” [quote is from Tyndale translation]. Hardly an individual man.

Do you know of any sinful, wasteful, destructive adversarial culture that exalts itself above God?

Does it require you to give a number to buy and sell?

### 5.3 What about the rapture?

Yes, there will be a pre-wrath rapture. But it will not be a quiet disappearance of believers. Yes, Christ will come for his believers (Matthew 16:27, Matthew 24:31, Mark 13:27, Luke 21:28, John 14:3, and others). Yes, the dead in Christ shall rise first, he will bring the saved dead with him, and those of us who remain (left behind) shall meet him in the air 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:14-17.

Those who persist in their anti-Protestant theory that there will be an anti-Christ issuing marks on hands or foreheads after a pre-trib rapture had to invent too many distortions to make their theory fit. They had to insist that the church will not be on earth during the tribulation, and that the wrath of God is the tribulation, and that post-rapture converted Jewish evangelists are the only Christians left on earth. These fables are easily refuted.

- They say the church is in heaven from Revelation 4 to Revelation 22. John the Revelator was invited up, in the spirit, not in the flesh, to see visions of the future. It does not say the Church. And the Church is always female, never a male. And the marriage of the Lamb with His wife is in Revelation 19.
- They say that all of the 6<sup>th</sup> seal is the tribulation and since the tribulation is the somehow equivalent to God's wrath, therefore we will not suffer the tribulation. But Christ Himself said in Matthew 24:29 "After the tribulation of those days the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give her light and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of heaven shall be shaken. Verse 30: And they shall see the son of man coming in the clouds...". The earthquake, sun and moon events and stars falling are in the sixth seal.
- And the mark is issued by the second beast, the one introduced in Revelation 13:11, they call this second beast the false prophet. But they will never call it "the mark of the false prophet."

The pre-trib rapturists are easily confused. Just ask them what comes first: the rapture or a resurrection of dead Christians? Revelation 20:5 says the FIRST resurrection is AFTER the verse 4's dead are killed for the witness of Christ and did not worship the beast nor receive the mark of the beast. Therefore, the meeting with Christ in the air can only come AFTER these dead in Christ shall rise. If this refers to a resurrection, then this resurrection cannot happen until after the Beast issues the mark.

Revelation 20:4&5 (KJV)

*"... I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the FIRST resurrection."*

The FIRST resurrection includes those who refused the mark. This FIRST resurrection occurs before the we-meet-Christ-in-the-air rapture. Therefore, You must go through the mark of the beast tribulation before the rapture. THE SECOND COMING

Christ promised to come again, John 14:3. But the coming of our Messiah will not happen until the rebellion comes First -- 2 Thessalonians 2:3

Paul used the Greek word *parousia* in 1 Thessalonians 3:13 to describe "the coming of our Lord Jesus with all His saints". The rapture theorists say this same word *parousia* in 1 Thessalonians 4:15 describes a secret rapture.

The popular rapture theory says that there will be a quiet disappearance of believers. This theory is an anti-Protestant twisting of many Bible passages.

Christ warned us, in Matthew 23:15, that those who believe the lies of religious leaders are twice-fold damned. It is up to you to study the issues and to discern for yourself whether or not you are being deceived. The only correct interpretation of written words is the intent of the author. It is up to you to discern fact from fiction. Use whatever translations and lexicons you need until you arrive at the truth. To search out a matter is the glory of sovereigns (Proverbs 25:2).

The rapture theory comes from 1 Thessalonians 4:16-17

*"For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first; then we which are alive and remain [left behind] shall be caught up [Greek 'αρπαγησονται] together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air and so shall we ever be with the Lord."*

- A shout, a trumpet call, a great gathering of living and resurrected saints hardly suggests a secret invisible event.
- It does not say they go to heaven, it says they are snatched for a meeting in the air. With the "dead in Christ". The whole world will watch. Colossians 3:4, Matthew 24:30. Hardly a quiet disappearance of believers.
- the rapture is not the main event. The main event is the meeting in the air.
- The word "rapture" is not in the Bible. The King James Bible uses the words "caught up". This Greek word is an adverb that emphasizes how quickly the meeting comes. This Greek word that is translated "caught up" can also mean: to snatch, to seize violently, or to carry off suddenly.
- It is used many times in your Bible. It is not the main event. Examples:  
Matthew 11:12 Is the Kingdom of God raptured by violent men?  
John 6:15 Were people trying to rapture Jesus to make him King?  
Acts 8:39 is Philip raptured into heaven?  
Acts 23:10 Was Paul raptured into the castle?  
Jude 23 Are Christians raptured from a life of sin?
- And, most importantly: 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 12:4 was Paul raptured into (not up to) paradise to hear unspeakable words, but he didn't know if it was an out-of-body experience? As you contemplate Paul's rapture, keep in mind that 1 Corinthians 15:50 says the flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God.
- The suddenness of this future snatching has been memorialized, by the unchanging LORD Himself, in an annual rehearsal of a hasty deliverance from evil, Exodus 12:11.
- It says "together with them in the clouds". Here is a brief study of Biblical clouds. As Moses delivered the Israelites out of bondage, they were lead by a cloud by day (Exodus 13:22, Deuteronomy 1:33) that was a pillar (cylinder) of fire by night. Christ prophesized that he would come in a cloud. (Matthew 24:30, Matthew 26:64, Mark 13:26, Mark 14:62, Luke 21:27). The ascension of Christ was also "in a cloud" Acts 1:9. So that you will not be caught unawares, here is a hint: Acts 1:11 says "Why stand you gazing up into heaven? ... this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven".

- If you are waiting for the Catholic fable that there will be a one man world leader, ruling from Jerusalem during a 3½ year period after a broken 7 year treaty, then you will miss all of the signs that Christ commands you to look for. For if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. If you are waiting for this one-man leader to issue an implant in your right hand, then you have been lulled into a false sense of security.

Wise up.

### 5.3.1 You want to be left behind

Many people get their religion from rumors, rather than from the Bible. Many people have been told that the Mark of the Beast cannot be here yet. They don't see any moral problem with swearing solemn oaths to a beast authority to get a banking authorization number (or wage authorization number) so that they can buy and sell. They were told that they will be raptured to heaven before the mark is issued. The Bible says otherwise.

### 5.3.2 When is the tribulation?

After the Bible predicts a time of trouble it says in Daniel 12:10 that "Many shall be purified, made white, and tried [refined], but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand."

Christ's elect go through a tribulation, but the tribulation is not God's wrath.

- Christ's elect do not go through God's wrath 1 Thessalonians 1:10. God has not appointed us to his wrath. 1 Thessalonians 5:1-9
- The tribulation is not God's wrath, it is Satan's last chance to contract with us (make war with those that keep the commandments of God – Revelation 12:17).
- God's wrath is after the sixth seal Rev 6:17
- God's wrath is after the seventh trump (at the last trump 1 Corinthians 15:52) Rev 11:15, 18
- God's wrath is upon the Beast system, not upon his elect.
- There will be a pre-wrath tribulation. Get used to the idea. It is already here.

Matthew 24:29-31 (KJV) "Immediately **after** the tribulation of those days .... **then** shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and **then** ... he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

Mark 13:24-27 (KJV) "But in those days, **after** that tribulation.... **then** shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.... **then** shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven."

### 5.3.3 Who will be taken away?

The blissfully ignorant who ignore warnings will be taken away to their destruction.

In Luke 17:26-27 Christ describes the daily lifestyle of a blissfully unaware civilization that will precede his return. He describes those who ignore warnings and continue to live life as normal. He compared it to the same ignorant attitude before the great flood.

Were those who were “taken away” taken by the flood to their destruction; or were they “taken away” on the ark to their salvation? On the one hand, all 8 people on the ark were taken away to their salvation. On the other hand, society was taken away to their destruction. Which “taken away” do you want to experience?

Jesus’ terminology in Luke 17:27 “**destroyed them all**” makes it very clear what he means when he said “**took them all away**” in the parallel verse in Matthew 24:39(KJV) “**And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; ...**”.

But he continues. “**..so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.**” His prophecy applies, at his next coming, to the future ignorant that do not heed warnings of impending cataclysm.

Luke 17	Matthew 24
Luke 17:24 "For as the lightning that flashes out of one part under heaven shines to the other part under heaven, so also the Son of Man will be in His day."	Matthew 24:27 "For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be."
Luke 17:26 "And as it was in the days of Noah, so it will be also in the days of the Son of Man:"	Matthew 24:37 "But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be."
Luke 17:27 "They ate, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and the flood came and <b>destroyed them all.</b> "	Matthew 24:38 "For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,"  Matthew 24:39 "and did not know until the flood came and <b>took them all away</b> , so also will the coming of the Son of Man be."

Luke 17:28 "Likewise as it was also in the days of Lot: They ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built;"

Luke 17:29 "but on the day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed them all."

Luke 17:30 "Even so will it be in the day when the Son of Man is revealed."

Luke 17:31 "In that day, he who is on the housetop, and his goods are in the house, let him not come down to take them away. And likewise the one who is in the field, let him not turn back."

Luke 17:32 "Remember Lot's wife."

Luke 17:33 "Whoever seeks to save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life will preserve it."

Those who are taken away to their destruction were those who were living life as usual – eating, drinking, and marrying. They did not heed the warnings they were given. The vast majority of people ignored the warnings and were totally unaware of the devastating cataclysm (cataclysm is a Greek word that means “wash down”) that was about to take “them all away.” Those who are taken away are destroyed. You want to be left behind.

Notice the sudden destruction as it was in the day of Lot and Noah. Without warning to the ignorant. The “day of the LORD” mentioned in Isaiah 13:9 has not occurred yet. The day of the Lord shall come as destruction from the Almighty (verse 6). Babylon shall suffer supernatural destruction, just as did Sodom and Gomorrah. (Isaiah 13:19). At the wrath of the Lord, in the day of his anger (verse 13).

Matthew 24:39 and its parallel verse Luke 17:27 also confirms this destruction at the coming of the Son of man.

Determine for yourself whether or not this refers to the destruction by flood (cataclysm), or the rescue (salvation) of the eight people on the ark.

### 5.3.4 Targeting those who are to die

Jesus then described the precision targeting of those who will die upon his return. On the day when the Son of man is revealed. Not years earlier.

Matthew 24:40-42 (KJV) "Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken (paralambano), and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come."

Those who support the popular rapture theory say that the word “taken” refers to meeting Christ in the air. There is an ambiguous word here that the prudent student will need to examine. In Matthew 24:40 the word “taken” (paralambano) in addition to the English meaning “taken”, can possibly mean: “to receive near, to associate with, to assume an office”. Perhaps they are exalted to their salvation or perhaps they are taken to their punishment. It is up to you to interpret the word of God and not rely upon the lies of religious leaders.

The word “taken” (paralambano) is not the word “caught up” (harpazo) rapture.

The parallel verses in Luke repeat the warning, but in Luke 17:37, quoted below, the disciples asked the question “where?” **Christ answers their question about where they are “taken”.**

**IF YOU HAVE THE SAME QUESTION, THEN PAY ATTENTION.**

<p>Luke 17:34 "I tell you, in that night there will be two men in one bed: the one will be taken (paralambano) and the other will be left."</p>	<p>Matthew 24:40 "Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken (paralambano) and the other left."</p>
<p>Luke 17:35 "Two women will be grinding together: the one will be taken (paralambano) and the other left."</p>	<p>Matthew 24:41 "Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken (paralambano) and the other left."</p>
<p>Luke 17:36 "Two men will be in the field: the one will be taken (paralambano) and the other left."</p>	<p>Matthew 24:42 "Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming."</p>
	<p>Matthew 24:43 "But know this, that if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be broken into."</p>
	<p>Matthew 24:44 "Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect."</p>

And the disciples asked where those taken would be taken. They did not ask who, or how. **They asked where. He told them: where a body is, look for vultures.** It is up to you to determine where the disciples were asking about. Either they were interested in knowing where those who will be taken will go, or they wanted to know where those who would be left behind would be left (field, mill, bed).

Luke	Matthew
<p>Luke 17:37 "And they answered and said to Him, "Where, Lord?" So He said to them, "Wherever the body is, there the eagles will be gathered together."</p>	<p>Matthew 24:28 "For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together."  Does the word "carcass" mean they were raptured to meet Jesus in the air?</p>

Just as with the Noah's flood explanation given by Christ, that took them all away to their destruction, so also those taken away (paralambano) – in this example from the field, bed, and mill – are targeted for swift destruction – not, as some claim, raptured to heaven

The Greek word for wash-down is cataclysm. Do you want to be taken (washed away to destruction like in Noah's day), or do you want to be left behind?

Do not confuse the gathering of the remaining remnant with the destruction (washing away) of those who are precisely targeted for destruction.

Those who are alive and **remain** (left behind) shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord, according to 1<sup>st</sup> Thessalonians 4:17

You want to be left behind.



## 5.4 What 42 months?

Those who carelessly repeat anti-Protestant fables still insist that the Mark of the beast must be a future event. Supposedly because the mark must be issued by an Antichrist atheist world leader during a future 42-month tribulation. But, my Bible says that the two-horned second beast issues the Mark, whereas the 10 horned brutal first beast is the one that continues in power for forty-two months.

Some people claim that 42 months of Revelation 13:5 is the very same 1260 days of Revelation 12:6, which must somehow also be the 1260 days of Revelation 11:3. Although it is not an important issue, I have a problem with this. Forty two months does not equal 1260 days. Not in the Roman calendar, not in the Jewish calendar that The Almighty instructed us to use in Exodus 12:1, and not in the Solar system He created for us. Those who equate these two time spans say that a 30-day month is a “prophetic month,” but their only proof is that these two time spans must somehow be the same span of time. Only a great deceiver would think to change times and laws (Daniel 7:25). If months are determined by the phases of the moon, as in Numbers 28, (also see 2 Kings 4:23, Psalm 81:3, Colossians 2:16, etc) then forty-two Jewish lunar months is equal to 1240 days, not 1260.

Some people claim that the 42 months of Revelation 13:5 is the very same 3.5 year time span in both Revelation 12:14 and in Daniel 7:25. In Revelation 12:14 the persecuted church is in hiding for a time, and times and half a time. In Daniel 7:25 the ten horned beast, continues for a time, times and the dividing (fraction) of time. Those who use the “prophetic months” say that these are 1260-day periods of three and a half years. But the Creator put 365.256 days in a year, not 360. Three and a half years are 1278 days, not 1260. Three and a half years are 43 lunar months, not 42.

The exact time span is not an important issue; I mention this only to show the extent to which people will try to equate disparate things. To avoid jumping to conclusions we should acknowledge the possibility of any 42 month period on any calendar, either literal days or symbolic yearlong days, of any reign of terror of any confederation of beast powers with worldwide military influence, that speaks blasphemy, at anytime past, present or future. We need not insist that the 42 months equate to the anti-Protestant position.

In addition the historical Protestant position, there are five other theories that can explain how this 42 months has been already fulfilled. These theories are honest enough to keep the Daniel 9:24 final week intact.

**IF ANY OF THESE FIVE THEORIES ARE CORRECT, THEN THERE IS NO REASON TO BELIEVE THE ANTI-PROTESTANT FABLE THAT AN ANTI-CHRIST WILL RULE FOR 3½ YEARS of Daniel's half-postponed final week.**

The first theory is that the dark ages are the 3½ year hiding of the persecuted church in Revelation 12:14 and are also the 42 months of domination by the Revelation 13:5 ten horned brutal first beast.

During the dark ages it was punishable by death to obey the Ten Commandments:

- The God of the Bible is an unchanging God. (Mal 3:6, Heb 13:8, Heb 6:17-18, Num 23:19, 1 Sam 15:29, Titus 1:2). Even the Bereans examined the Old Testament daily to see if the New Testament was true. Acts 17:11.
- Those who love the Lord will obey the Ten Commandments. (Matthew 19:17, John 14:15 & 15:10, 1<sup>st</sup> John 2:3-5, & 3:22-24 & 5:2-3, 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 12:14, etc.)
- The Ten Commandments were written in stone by the finger of an unchanging God. (Deuteronomy 9:10, Ex 31:18). Jesus himself said that not one jot or tittle shall fall from the law. God established his law to last forever, Psalm 119:152.
- It is blasphemy for any man to change God's commandments. Not Emperor, nor Pope.
- The Dark Ages was a period where a confederation of beast powers overcame saints. Between the time it was punishable by death to obey the Ten Commandments until Christians again had freedom to worship their God.
- In prophecy, yearlong days are used in Numbers 14:34 and Ezekiel 4:6.
- Sun worshiper Constantine, while exercising power as a confederation of religious and political beasts, in the year 327 made it punishable by death to obey the 4<sup>th</sup> commandment. Illegal in 321, punishable by death in 327. If earlier overcoming of saints figure into the 42 month total, then add three days; Emperor Decius briefly (from 249 to 251) made it punishable by death to refuse to worship his pagan gods.

- (Aside: Jesus said, in Mark 7:9 "And he said unto them, **Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.**")
- The Dark Ages is 42 months of yearlong days during which it was punishable by death to obey the commandments. We were in the 41<sup>st</sup> symbolic month after Constantine's death penalty when Martin Luther faced the death penalty as a heretic, but was allowed to live if he agreed that the "Holy" Roman church had the authority to change the Sabbath to Sunday. (Which obviously fits right into the 3½ years of wearing out saints by changing times and laws predicted in Daniel 7:25). We were in the 42<sup>nd</sup> month when Tyndale was executed for translating the Bible into English. The Geneva Bible was published in the 42<sup>nd</sup> month, when it was still illegal to have a Bible. If this prophecy was fulfilled at the end of the symbolic 42<sup>nd</sup> month after Constantine, then we were free from persecution by the 43<sup>rd</sup> month when the Separatists fled to Holland, where they had religious freedom. From there, these Pilgrims sailed to Plymouth Rock where they briefly established a nation whose Lord is God. I'll tell you more about England's role in the beast power, later. By the way, the Pilgrims brought the Geneva Bible with them, not the King James Bible. They did not use a Bible published by the government they fled from.
- King James had already banned the Bible, but in 1611 published his own sanitized version that supported the Catholic position on the Antichrist. In 1620 the Pilgrims risked death at sea to flee from King James. It is to their valor that you owe the liberty to worship God. Again: **THE PILGRIMS DID NOT USE A BIBLE PUBLISHED BY THE GOVERNMENT THEY FLED FROM.**

The second plausible explanation:

- The ten horns are successive governments that came out of the Roman Empire.
- Daniel's fourth beast is made of iron, just as is the interpretation of Nebuchadnezzar's fourth kingdom (Daniel 2:40). This fourth beast is the one with the 10 horns. In John's vision the final beast has all heads and horns of the absorbed beast kingdoms, just as the Roman Empire had absorbed all land and authority of the conquered nations.
- The seventh head was wounded to death when the barbarians overran the Roman Empire in AD 476. It was healed when Justinian restored the empire in 554.
- Then this healed Beast continued for 1260 years (supposedly 42 months of yearlong days, even though there is no calendar system where 42 months = 1260 days) until Napoleon was defeated in 1814. This was the eighth horn. Garibaldi to Mussolini is the ninth horn kingdom. And we await the revival of the beast, a united Europe.

The third theory is similar.

The 10 horns are: Anglo Saxons, Franks, Allemanni, Burgundi, Visigoths, Suevi, Vandals, Ostrogoths, Heruli, Lombards. Three of the 10 were "plucked up by the roots" (Vandals, Ostrogoths, & Heruli) paving the way for the rise of the Holy Roman Empire, which replaced these 10 over Europe. The beginning of this was at the END of the Pagan Roman Empire. (Heruli destroyed in 493, then the Vandals in 534, followed by the Ostrogoths in 538). Doing the math, all works perfectly within the scope of the "42 months" using the "year for a day" (Ezekiel & elsewhere) scripture-interprets-scripture principle. Even on pagan calendars (years in this case), the timeline works. 1798 is the end of the Holy Roman Empire (Napoleon conquers the Pope, who languishes in prison and dies (taken captive, per Revelation), 1260 years (year for a day, 42 months = 1260 days/years) previous to that is 538 when the last of the three "plucked up" (Ostrogoths) are conquered by this "little horn" (papacy).

This is all within the "historicist" line of prophetic thinking.

After 3 of the 10 nations were uprooted by the Holy Roman Empire (the Heruli in 493AD, Vandals in 534, and Ostrogoths in 538AD) Emperor Justinian, in 538AD, declared that the Bishop of Rome was "head of all the Churches." This became part of the Justinian Code. Then there was exactly 1260 years until Napoleon's General Berthier marched into Rome and took the Pope prisoner, where he died in exile.  $538 + 1260 = 1798$ . Mussolini, in 1929, executed the *Concordat of 1929* with the Papacy, restoring their properties and power to heal the deadly wound. The whole world would wonder after this power.

The fourth theory has the 42 months from (our calendar) February 67AD to September 70AD when Jerusalem was under siege until her destruction by Emperor Vespasian, who just happens to be the eighth king (predicted by Revelation 17:11) in succession counting from Julius Caesar. [This ignores most Bible commentaries that date the Book of Revelation at 96 AD. Yet it is feasible to date the book earlier because John does not mention the destruction of Jerusalem, which happened in 70AD]

A fifth theory that is honest enough to keep Daniel's 70<sup>th</sup> week intact, is from the book A New Mind! explains that The Roman Empire received it's deadly wound in 476 A.D. when

*"...Odoacer set up his government in Rome, called the Heruli. It was not Roman, but a foreign barbarian government ... In 544 A.D. Justinian, Emperor of the East, from Constantinople set up his government through an Imperial Legate at Ravenna, Italy, bringing about what is known in history as the "Imperial Restoration" of the Roman Empire – or its "healing". After this "healing", power was given for the beast to continue "forty and two months".... Following the healing in 554, came the Frankish kingdom (French), the Holy Roman Empire (German, then the Austrian Hapsburgs) and Napoleon's kingdom (French again), but when Napoleon was crushed in 1814, the healed beast "continued no longer", "So closed" says West's Modern History, "a government that dated from Augustus Caesar" from 31 B.C. – it "went into the Abyss"! And from 554 A.D. to 1814 A.D.; the duration of the healed beast, is exactly 1260 years! At that time, eight of the 10 horns having appeared and gone, the beast itself went into the non-existent condition symbolized in Revelation 17:8 as the "bottomless pit". But by the year 1870, Garibaldi had united the many little divisions in the peninsula of Italy into one nation and the kingdom thus established began the 9<sup>th</sup> horn, which culminated in the fascist rule of Mussolini. The 17<sup>th</sup> Chapter explains the revival of the beast "out of the bottomless pit" by a federation of 10 European nations within the old Roman Empire. This is actually beginning as modern history records developments in Europe today."*

## 5.5 What about the 70<sup>th</sup> week of Daniel 9:24?

In the fourth century Eusebius essay *Demonstratio Evangelistica VIII*, was the first to claim that Christ had a 3½ year ministry. He based this on an interpretation of Daniel chapter 9's 70 week prophecy. This allowed the sun worshipers to replace the LORD's covenants with a new religion. They claim that Daniel 9's final week was fulfilled 3½ years after the crucifixion, and all prophecy was fulfilled by the destruction of Jerusalem in 70AD. This allowed a vicar of Christ to rule for a thousand years from Rome. They would later claim that the second half week of 3½ years will be a future fulfillment.

To create this interpretation an anachronism was inserted into the Bible three hundred years after John wrote his gospel. John 6:4 was inserted into later copies of the Greek text 300 years after John wrote his gospel. John 6:4 (KJV): "And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh."

But there are several problems with this forgery.

- Christ did not go up to Jerusalem as commanded in Deuteronomy 16:16. He was in Galilee, which is 70 miles from Jerusalem, and two days later in Capernaum he fed the 5,000 (who also were not near Jerusalem)
- He fed the crowd with leavened loaves of bread, which was not possible during Passover week. Then three days after that (according to Matthew 15:32-39, and Mark 8:1-9) while in Galilee he fed four thousand men where Pharisees from Jerusalem confronted him about hand washing. Neither his audience nor the orthodox Pharisees were concerned about keeping a feast in Jerusalem. He fed them with leavened bread contrary to the Lord's command in Leviticus 23:6, and Deuteronomy 16:3.
- Mark, Matthew and Luke all record the feeding of the five thousand 13 days before the Mount of Transfiguration event on the Day of Atonement. On the 10th day of the seventh month. Not anywhere near the Passover which occurs in the first month.

Study the Bible for yourself, and discover:

- Daniel 9:24 summarizes the 70 weeks. Christ himself, not an antichrist, meets all 6 of the criteria listed. It indeed says 70 weeks, even though only 69 weeks are accounted for in the next verse. It gives no hint, one way or another, that a full 70<sup>th</sup> week would be "determined upon thy people"
- Daniel 9:25 there are two time periods: 7 weeks and 62 weeks, which leaves an unspecified remaining period. This two or three time-periods countdown-to-the-Messiah will be triggered upon the decree to restore Jerusalem. The city will be rebuilt in times of trouble.
- I will leave it up to you to speculate whether or not Daniel, while quoting Gabriel, would have specified the final week, if it was to be a full week.
- Daniel 9:26 After the 62 week period, (verse 27 says in the midst of the week) the Messiah will be cut off and have nothing. This happened in AD 31 when Christ was executed 3½ years into his ministry. An unspecified "people of the prince that shall come" will destroy the city and the sanctuary. Unto the end of the war desolations are determined. History shows that Jerusalem was destroyed in 70AD. Desolate.
- Daniel 8:13 Christ's crucifixion was also a "transgression of desolation" that surrenders the inner sanctuary. And indeed, the temple veil was rent at the crucifixion in AD31. Making it desolate.
- Daniel 9:27. "He" will confirm the covenant for one week. You now have to determine whom the pronoun HE refers to. Is it an end-time "antichrist" confirming a seven-year treaty? Is it the people of the prince that shall come? The Roman destroyer in AD 70? Or is this sentence a continuation of the countdown-to-the-Messiah prophecy that started in verse 24) This covenant was foretold by the Lord in Jeremiah 31:31. (Is a covenant is a sacred agreement between God and man, or is it a treaty?)
- Verse 27 continues with another pronoun "he", perhaps the same person as the first "he". In the midst of the week, "he" shall cause the sacrifice and oblation to cease. And indeed, in the middle of the 70<sup>th</sup> week, in AD 31 at the crucifixion, the temple veil was rent from top to bottom, causing an end to sacrifice and oblation. The rest of the verse deals with desolation. Before we examine this, you must first understand that the LORD himself makes desolate because of Abominations. Jeremiah 44:22 and Ezekiel 33:29. The LORD himself even destroys holy sanctuaries Lev 26:31, Ezek 7:24, Ezek 24:21. Desolation shall occur – and Daniel 9:27 doesn't specifically mention the sanctuary, nor does desolation necessarily mean destruction. The desolation is justified. It is "for the overspreading of abominations he (unspecified) shall make it desolate".
- My conclusion is that Christ is the most likely "he" that confirms a covenant in Daniel 9:27.

The understanding of Daniel's message was sealed until the end times (Daniel 12:4, 9 &13). Those times have existed ever since Matthew and Mark wrote the words in Matt 24:15 and Mark 13:14 to readers that understood the sealed message. And John wrote in 1<sup>st</sup> John 2:18 that he was living in the end times, almost 2000 years ago.

## 5.6 What man of sin, son of perdition, restrainer?

Martin Luther accused the Pope of being the son of perdition that exalteth himself above all that is called God. This has always been the historical protestant teaching. The King James translators tried to cover up this possibility, and their fable has been perpetuated to us today. The King James Version has the Son of Perdition existing in John's time. John 17:12.

Let no man deceive you by any means. Let's examine Second Thessalonians chapter 2 in more detail.

### Second Thessalonians, King James Version

2:1 "Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and *by* our gathering together unto him,"  
 2:2 "That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand."  
 2:3 "Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that **man of sin** be revealed, the **son of perdition**;"  
 2:4 "Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God."  
 2:5 "Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?"  
 2:6 "And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time."  
 2:7 "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth *will let*, until he be taken out of the way."  
 2:8 "And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:"  
 2:9 "*Even him*, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,"  
 2:10 "And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved."  
 2:11 "And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:"  
 2:12 "That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness."

Pay attention to verse 3. The day of Christ SHALL NOT COME until the man of sin is revealed. You will not meet Christ in the air until the man of sin is revealed. But take heed. The man of sin might not be the anti-Christ of Catholic fable.

Popular deception of today says that 2 Thessalonians 2:4 "temple" refers to a church that is taken away by verse 3's "falling away". Historical Protestant teaching has never taught this nonsense. The falling away (Greek word *apostasy*) need not refer to a church being taken away. This apostasy will occur before the coming of Christ, not necessarily before the mark of the beast is issued. Martin Luther points out that Paul taught that this temple of God was the people, as in 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 3:16-17, 6:19, and 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 6:16.

Also keep in mind that the word "man" in the phrase "man of sin" is the Greek *anthropos*; meaning all of mankind. It is not the Greek word *aner* that would be used for an individual man. If this is an essential doctrine to you, then study it and make your own conclusions.

As for the restrainer, there can be much speculation. Some theories teach that the restrainer is an antichrist, other theories have the restrainer as the Holy Spirit within each of us that restrains the "man of sin" nature within us. Let's take a literal look, so you can spend an hour pondering the possibilities.

2:5 ... when I was with you I told you these things,

2:6 And now you know [because he told them previously, as he just mentioned in verse 5] that which restrains you will be revealed in his own time

2:7 for the mystery of that iniquity is already [back in Paul's time almost 2000 years ago] at work, only He who now restrains [back in Paul's time] will do so until He is taken out of the way

In Tyndale's 1534 translation of verse 7, the mystery of iniquity doth

*“already work which only locketh, until it be taken out of the way.”*

The phrase “taken out of the way” doesn’t necessarily mean he (or Tyndale’s **it**) is gone. The Baker Greek Interlinear translation says “...out of [the] midst he be gone”. The restrainer is not apparent in our midst.

According to Strong’s concordance this word “taken” is translated from the Greek "ginomat" – to become, to cause to be. It is not the word “paralambano” spoken by Christ in “one shall be *taken* and the other left” Matt 24:40 or Luke 17:34 Nor is it the word “airo” spoken by Christ in Matt 24:39 “until the flood came and *took* them all away”.

2:8 and then shall that wicked be revealed whom the Lord will consume with the breath [spirit] of his mouth, and annul by the brightness of his coming

[when the restrainer of Paul’s time is out of our midst, then the lawless - wicked remains until God’s spirit annuls them at Christ’s coming]

Tyndale’s verse 8:

*And then shall that wicked be **uttered**, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the appearance of his coming....”*

According to Tyndale the wicked is uttered, Greek τυφθησεταί. Later translations say “revealed”. The only individuals that are uttered are the frog-like spirits uttered out of the mouth of Satan, as in Revelation 16:13. This is Hardly a description of a man.

It seems much more likely to me, that the future **event** (not necessarily a person) being prophesied here as

“then shall that wicked be uttered, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth”

refers to an event after Christ’s glorious second coming when the sword of the spirit (defined in Ephesians 6:17 and Hebrews 4:12) utters from his mouth (Rev 1:16, Rev 2:16, Rev 19:15) to destroy the kings of the earth and their armies Rev 19:21)

2:9 *even him* whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders

[the words “*even him*” are in italics in the KJV. These words were added by the translators and do not appear in the original. Perhaps the Lord’s coming will be after Satan’s work with power, signs and lying wonders. Again: the added words “*even him*” this is hardly proof that it is an individual man.]

[Tyndale margin note: “Lying miracles because **they** testify a false faith”]

There is a possibility that the word *annul* in verse 8 means *destroys*. And indeed many translations use the word *destroys*. If this were the case then the 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2:8 “Wicked”, or NIV’s “lawless one”, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth and destroys with the brightness of his coming cannot be the Revelation 20:10 false prophet because the false prophet never dies. Another possibility is that the word *annuls* means to convert to Christianity even those who had worked for Satan with all lying power and signs and wonders.

2:10 and in every deceit of unrighteousness among them that perish, because they received not the love of the truth that they might have been saved.

[Tyndale margin note: “Where no love is to the truth, on them doth God let slip false prophets to deceive them.”]

Question for you, the reader: Even if the power, signs and lying wonders of 2 Thessalonians 2:9 is the wonders and powers of Revelation 13:13&14, and even if an individual man of sin is the false prophet (even though the false prophet cannot be a man because he lives forever), is this relevant to the Mark of the Beast’s timetable? Second Thessalonians chapter two proves that the apostasy will be before the rapture, but it gives no hint when the Mark of the Beast appears. We must look elsewhere for clues to the Mark timeline.

## 5.7 Which abomination of desolation?

The phrase “abomination of desolation” is used in the King James Bible only twice. In Matthew 24:15 and Mark 13:14 as an obvious reference to Daniel 11:31.

Mark 13:14 (KJV)

*"But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) then let them that be in Judaea flee to the mountains:"*

When the Lord Christ spoke these words, it was to be a future event requiring the reader to understand the alarm.

We know from history that the temple was destroyed in the year 70 AD and that survivors from Jerusalem dispersed, never to return.

Daniel 11:31 (KJV)

*"And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate."*

Note that the word “sacrifice” is in italics in the King James Version because it is not a direct translation.



The abomination that causes desolation is “set up” (Daniel 12:11). AFTER the daily sacrifices were abolished, the abomination that causes desolation (King James translators added a margin note to Daniel 11:31 “or astonisheth” – the abomination that astonishes) is “placed”.

This does not refer to sacrifices in a rebuilt third temple.

Here are possibilities that have already fulfilled this prophecy:

- military destruction of Solomon’s temple – an abomination that causes desolation or astonishes .
- dispersion or genocide of Jerusalem’s people – an abomination that causes desolation or astonishes
- And if Roman military fulfillment was not enough, a later militant (military) culture placed the Dome of the Rock mosque in a holy place that still to this day astonisheth.

Also see my commentary on Daniel 11’s God of Forces in a previous chapter.

## 5.8 What third temple?

The idea that a third temple would be built by mankind did not exist until the 12<sup>th</sup> century AD. Rambam (Rabbi Moses ben Maimon, also called Maimonides, 1135-1204 AD) listed the building of the Bais Hamikdash as one of the 613



commandments of the Torah. Since a commandment implies a deed performed by man, then it is obvious to followers of Rambam that the Temple will be built by man.

Most Christians believe that we are the temple

*1 Corinthians 6:19-20 KJV What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you and which ye have from God, and that ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price. Therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's..*

Most Christians believe that the New Covenant (spoken of in Jeremiah [31:31-34](#)) is marked by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit in the believer (Ezekiel [36:26-27](#)) and that, as such, the body is the temple.

The traditional Protestant teaching is "Did not Paul say, The Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are?" (*Luther's Works* Vol 2, page 281).

The metaphor of us being the temple is simply one of the many metaphors used in the Bible. We are the 'temple of the living God' (1 Corinthians. 3:16 and 6:19)

The second temple has already been [superseded](#). Christ himself, having claimed to be and do what the temple was and did, is the *new temple* ([John 2:19](#)), and that his people, as a part of the "body of Christ" (meaning the church), are part of this temple as well ([2 Corinthians 6:16](#); [Ephesians 2:19-22](#); [1 Peter 2:4-5](#)).

Here are the prophecies that are twisted into a third temple:

Matthew 24:15 *Therefore when you see the **ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION** which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in **THE HOLY PLACE** (let the reader understand)...*

*Daniel 9:27 (NIV) He will confirm a covenant with many for one 'seven.' In the middle of the 'seven' he will put an end to sacrifice and offering. And on a wing of the temple he will set up an abomination that causes desolation, until the end that is decreed is poured out on him. "*

The "wing of the temple" is not mentioned in the KJV. KJV has this as "the overspreading of abominations"  
The "wing of the temple" is not in the NKJV. The NKJV has this as "the wing of abominations"

The sacrifice ended when Christ was crucified and the temple veil rent from top to bottom. Matthew 27:51, Mark 15:38, Luke 23:45 so that we ourselves could boldly step before the throne of grace Hebrews 4:16 without an intercessor.

Daniel 11:36 (KJV) *And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvellous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that that is determined shall be done.*

2 Thessalonians 2:1-4 was discussed earlier.

## 5.9 What false prophet?

Many people claim that the two horned beast introduced in Revelation 13:11, that issues the mark of the Beast in Revelation 13:16, is also the same person as the false prophet of Revelation 19:20.

False prophets are mentioned in many Bible verses:

- Matthew 7:15 "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves.
- Matthew 24:11 "Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many.
- Matthew 24:24 "For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.
- Mark 13:22 "For false christs and false prophets will rise and show signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.
- Luke 6:26 "Woe to you when all men speak well of you, For so did their fathers to the false prophets."
- Acts 13:6 "Now when they had gone through the island to Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew whose name was Bar-Jesus, "
- 2 Peter 2:1 "But there were also false prophets among the people, even as there will be false teachers among you, who will secretly bring in destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them, and bring on themselves swift destruction. "
- 1 John 4:1 "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. "
- Revelation 16:13 "And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs coming out of the mouth of the dragon, out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.
- Revelation 19:20 "Then the beast was captured, and with him the false prophet who worked signs in his presence, by which he deceived those who received the mark of the beast and those who worshiped his image. These two were cast alive into the lake of fire burning with brimstone.
- Revelation 20:10 "The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

We know from Revelation 19:20 that the false prophet worked signs (perhaps prophetic signs that he himself prophesied) in the presence of the beast, which deceived those who already received the mark. These two will be cast alive into the lake of fire and brimstone. Apparently he is not "the beast".

We know from Revelation 20:10 that after a thousand years he will still be located in the lake of fire and brimstone to be tormented forever, along with "the beast". Apparently he lives forever.

And we know from Revelation 16:13 that he issues unclean spirits out of his mouth. And these unclean spirits, according to verse 14, go forth unto the kings of the earth.

Nowhere does it say that he can perform great signs including fire from heaven. Fire from heaven is a sign from the second beast, not the false prophet. The Revelation 13:13 fire from heaven deceives us earthlings, prior to the mark being issued, into making an image to the first beast. The false prophet's signs deceive those who already received the mark.

The only reason mentioned as to why someone would get a mark is the economic incentive to buy or sell. Not signs. Although there is plenty of deception going on, Nowhere does it explicitly say that people are deceived into getting a mark.

## 5.10 What noisome and grievous sore?

Revelation 16:2 (KJV)

*And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.*

The Book of Revelation is often symbolic. John the Revelator used symbolism that would be understood by his intended audience yet not provoke his Roman guards. Revelation is a revealing, not a hiding.

What noisome sores would his audience understand? Noisome pestilence is one of the Lord's four sore judgments that were prophesied to cut off unrighteous men, (those who have set up idols in their hearts and stumblingblocks before them -- Ezekiel 14:7-22), from Jerusalem, except for a remnant.

The Mark of the Beast is intended for those who receive strong delusion that a Beast power insomuch, if it were possible, would deceive the very elect. Why speculate further than the pre-existing prophecy of the Lord's four sore judgments?

In Ezekiel 14:7 the Lord promised an answer to him who sojourns to Israel, yet separates himself from Him by keeping idols in their hearts, and stumblingblocks of their inequity. Ezekiel 14:8 "*I will cut him off from the midst of my people, and he shall know that I am the LORD*"

Ezekiel 14:21-22 (KJV)

*For thus saith the Lord GOD; How much more when I send my four sore judgments upon Jerusalem, the sword, and the famine, and the noisome beast, and the pestilence, to cut off from it man and beast? Yet, behold, therein shall be left a remnant that shall be brought forth, both sons and daughters: behold, they shall come forth unto you, and ye shall see their way and their doings: and ye shall be comforted concerning the evil that I have brought upon Jerusalem, even concerning all that I have brought upon it.*

Another occurrence of the word *noisome* is in Psalms 91:3 (KJV) *Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.* NKJV= Perilous pestilence.

Do you have a stumblingblock of your inequity, or set up idols in your heart (as in Ezekiel 14:7) that deserve the Lord's four sore judgments to cut you off from the midst of His people? Perhaps you have a mark, issued by a final world order, symbolically on your right hand and forehead, that deserves the Lord's four sore judgments.

Hints: The Supreme Court in U.S. v. Lee ([455 U.S. 252](#)) ruled that Amish who have obtained SSNs have lost their religious liberty to "overriding governmental interest".

When Essau sold his birthright, he got what he bargained for. You sold your birthright for a mere promise that daddy government (a legal fiction, an artificial entity) would provide a future bowl of stew.

## 6 SECTION 6 ARE YOU SERVING THE BEAST AUTHORITY?

Since no one in Government told you to get a Social Security Number, only those serving the Beast are requiring numbers.

Do not fraudulently induce others to worship the Beast. You are most certainly serving a Beast if you deceive others by telling them to get a Social Security Number. By your lust for benefits (covetousness is prohibited by the 10<sup>th</sup> Commandment) your ingratitude enslaved all of us.

Socialism is theft (and covetousness, and worship of graven images, and falsifying federal documents, etc). Theft violates the Commandments of God. Those who teach others to violate the Commandment will be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven, according to Christ himself in Matthew 5:19.

The “obey authority” excuse is used often. It does not refer to obeying false authority. If you obey false authority you are rebelling against legitimate authority. Obeying false authority is mutiny against God.

Romans 13:1 is not a command to obey unlawful authority. The divine right of kings to rule has been completely refuted. Read the works of Locke and Rutherford.

The idea that governments are automatically bowed down to, is an idea that God prohibited in his first two commandments.

Your new world order, *Novus Ordo Seclorum*, New Secular Order, is the counterfeit government that the Bible warned you about. The word *secular* means “without God.” Bible believers will not automatically obey secular government. Imagine how easy life would have been if we had obeyed secular authority.

- Daniel would not have been thrown into either the furnace nor the lions’ den.
- Moses, while he was a civil servant, would not have killed one of his government’s law enforcement officers.
- Israelites would not have rebelled against Pharaoh.
- Peter would not have escaped from prison after an angel opened his cell.
- Paul would not have left Damascus in a basket to escape Government Law enforcement officers
- Peter would not have said in Acts 5:29 “We must obey God rather than men.”
- The apostles would not have been hunted down and executed.
- Martin Luther would not have a following in England, they would have obeyed Charles V
- William Tyndale would not have been executed for translating the Bible into English. He chose not to obey government.
- Christians would not have risked death on the Mayflower’s seven week voyage to bring fourth on this continent a new nation conceived in liberty.
- A Quaker preacher named William Penn, while he was a British subject in a British Colony, would not have been arrested for preaching a Quaker sermon.
- William Tell would have saluted the judge’s authority rather than be sentenced to death unless he could shoot an apple off his son. He chose to not obey government. We would not have a Switzerland today if Mr. Tell did not know that a salute was a form of worship.
- British subjects living in British colonies would not have started the American Revolution. They would not have risked death to kill their government’s law enforcement officers. Patrick Henry would not have asked for liberty or death. Nathan Hale, who was a 21 year old Yale graduate when he was executed in 1776, would not have had one death to spend for his country.
- Rahab, a career criminal who helped overthrow her government, would not be considered righteous (James 2:25) and listed in Hebrews 11 as one of the all-time faithful.
- there would have been no anti-Baptists (who became today’s Amish, Mennonites and Baptists), who refused to register their children. Many were burned at the stake rather than obey government.
- John was tortured with boiling oil then banished to Patmos for refusing to worship Emperor Domitian. He chose not to obey government.
- Those who refused to affirm that Caesar was lord were fed to the lions. Those who refused to worship Emperors were often executed. They had a choice to obey.
- The Christians in Cappadocia, just east of Galatia, would not have lived in caves to evade government. They had a choice of allegiance. Would there have been any Galatians for Paul to write to if they had obeyed government?

- The Presbyterian covenanters of 1638 to 1688 endured great hardship, strife and civil wars to keep their religion. Scotland is free today because William Wallace chose martyrdom rather than swear allegiance to King Charles the first. Cromwell suspended Parliament and executed King Charles. If they had obeyed their government, the monarch would likely still be supreme over America.
- In 1637 John Lilburn risked death refusing to take a Star Chamber Oath. He chose to disobey government. The U.S. Supreme Court acknowledged that Miranda's right to remain silent came from Lilburn's refusal.
- And today, the Church in China could exist peacefully if it registers with their government, but refuses. Because regulation IS persecution.

1 Corinthians 6:12 "all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any."

1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:13-16 (KJV)

"Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God."

Read that again. Peter is recommending that you obey government in order to silence the rumors of foolish men who are saying that your liberty from their laws is a guise for maliciousness. Peter was using such strong words that he even used the term "foolish", knowing that Christ said we would be in danger of hell fire if we called anyone a fool. Matthew 5:22.

Titus 3:1 (KJV) "Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,"

The King James translators added the word "magistrates". There is no such word in the original. The KJV is a government published Bible, published by the same government that executed prior translators. The Pilgrims fled from King James in to bring forth on this continent a new nation, conceived in religious liberty. How could Wycliffe conclude that the Bible established a government by the people, of the people and for the people if we were to obey government magistrates?

How could the same author of Titus 3 also tell us in 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:12 that he would not be brought under the power of any man?

After all, Obeying false authority is mutiny against God.

Titus 3:1 original Greek sentence structure, according to the Interlinear translation published by Baker:

"Put in remembrance them to rulers and to authorities to be subject, to be obedient, to every work good ready to be,"  
Perhaps we should be reminding rulers and authorities to be subject and obedient to every good work.

Tyndale's 1534 translation could very well have these unstated meanings which I added in parentheses "Warn them that [if] they submit themselves to rule and power, [they must] obey the officers, that [otherwise] they would be ready unto all good works,"

Hebrews 13:17 (KJV) "Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you."

Christians should obey legitimate authority. The kind of authority that "is not a terror to good works, but to the evil" By the way, Tyndale translation says "rulers are not to be feared for good works, but for evil". No law or court has ever required you to get a Social Security Number. Social Security Numbers are not for Christians.

If you are not yet convinced that you have the Mark of the Beast, then you must eventually decide where you will draw your line in the sand. Most people flippantly say they will refuse to take an implant in their right hand. They give it no further thought. To what extent will you obey government? Some say we must obey a Hitler, others say we must obey authority up to, but not including, a Hitler. Others say civil disobedience is necessary if our convictions require you to disobey. Socialism will destroy society. How can you say that a Christian must cooperate with evil?

You are the one that must decide whether or not to cooperate with evil. There are a dozen New Testament verses that tell us to stand firm. The word `apostasy' means failing to stand firm. This is not legal advice. Those who refuse to compromise with evil will lose their homes, jobs and family. Isaiah 59:15 he who departs from evil makes himself a prey. You must choose your battles wisely. We are in this predicament because people over the last 70 years refused to take a stand. They willingly gave up their rights, until there are none left. Ben Franklin said that those who give up some liberty for safety deserve neither. He understood that peace and liberty were opposites.

“Those who would give up essential Liberty, to purchase a little temporary Safety, deserve neither Liberty nor Safety.” According to Benjamin Franklin, November 11, 1755; Reply to the Governor. This is inscribed on a plaque in the stairwell of the Statue of Liberty.

Government employees are allowed to deceive you (See my chapter on the government definition of the word “must”) and the law requires you, just like Adam and Eve, to accept the consequences if you are deceived. Do not obey a lie. Jeremiah 17:5 If you trust men, you are under a curse.

If you ever need to be deprogrammed from the error that we must obey tyrants, read Martin Luther’s *Secular Authority: To What Extent It Should be Obeyed*, published in 1523. The Lord Jesus himself tells you in Matthew 10:17-22 to beware of those who will turn you over to authorities, and to stand firm. The persecuted church for 20 centuries, ever since Acts 4:26, knew that governments conspired against Christ. Or read the sermons of the American Revolution. Or James 2:6-7: those who blaspheme the one that called you, are the ones taking you to court. Jesus told us to agree with our adversary so we will not be cast into prison, Matthew 5:25 and Luke 12:58. Does that sound like Jesus was pro-Government? The same biblical principals that require us to obey legitimate government require us to disobey illegitimate government. If you want to know if a government is legitimate read Romans 13:3. Legitimate Government is not a terror to good works, but to evil. Also 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:14. Your U.S. government upheld these principles against national socialists at Nuremberg. The “we were just obeying orders” excuse did not work at Nuremberg and it won’t work here.

Did the same Peter who is quoted in Acts 5:29 as saying that we must obey God rather than men, change his mind in 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2:13-4, or is he only referring to legitimate government?

NOWHERE IN THE BIBLE DOES GOD GIVE MANKIND THE AUTHORITY TO LEGISLATE beyond the commandments. In fact it is prohibited for mankind to legislate, Deuteronomy 4:2. The only legitimate government among mankind, is the government that enforces Biblical law. Even Jesus corrected the apostles about Moses' law by stating that it was not so, even from the beginning. "*Ye shall not rule one over another*". Leviticus 25:46.

There is no power but of God, as Paul wrote in Romans 13. This is NOT a command to obey counterfeit government. The (legitimate) powers that be are ordained of God. Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers (as contrasted with counterfeit powers).

The same Paul that tells us that the powers that be are ordained of God, and that every soul should be subject unto the higher powers - is the same Paul who was often in prison (2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 11:23) but who escaped from law enforcement officers in Damascus according to 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians 11:32. Government eventually executed Paul. It cannot be both ways. Either he was executed for obeying civil government, or Romans 13:1 cannot mean “obey government”. Did Christ tell us to avoid being turned over to legitimate authority (Matthew 10:17)?

Actions speak louder than words. There are many people who willingly hand over part of their wages to fund abominations. You are either for Christ, or against him. Choose this day whom you shall serve. Those who choose to serve the evil one must obey their masters.

Must a Christian pay for vile abominations such as abortion clinics in public schools, punish parents for disciplining their children, punish schools for acknowledging the existence of God, fund pornography for school libraries, pay usury on the National Debt, execute people known to be innocent (Exodus 23:7 says that God will not tolerate slaying of the innocent.), fund the National Endowment for the Arts to publicly display Piss Christ "art", buy condoms for children, pay for UN atrocities, deliberately mis-educate youth, and sodomize your military? Do your civil servants act on your behalf to teach witchcraft at the public schools while prohibiting student prayer?

Thomas Jefferson said that “To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and tyrannical.” Your founders set up a system that prohibits the collection of a direct tax. There is no need to fund persecution of Christians. Example: On 5/21/93 the Clinton Administration petitioned the Supreme Court to allow RICO

racketeering statutes be used against abortion protesters. They claimed that anti-abortion groups comprise "a nationwide criminal conspiracy of extremists ...[bent on] unlawful and violent methods" to drive customers away from abortion clinics. Then, right on schedule, on 1/25/94 the Supreme Court ruled that RICO prosecutions need not prove economic motive. This means that racketeering charges can be brought against any church with a member who shows a pattern of misdeeds (twice praying outside a clinic). All church property can then be seized without a trial of any kind. Another example: The Freedom of Choice Act would make it against the law to suggest to a pregnant girl that she put her baby up for adoption rather than to kill it. Another example: In 1973 homosexuality was officially classified as a psychological illness, and only 20 years later, anyone who questions such lifestyle is a dangerous nut. In 1993 the American Psychiatric Association said that an "irrational fear and hatred of homosexuals is a psychological abnormality that interferes with the judgment and reliability of those affected." Now there is even talk of forcing Christian hospitals to perform abortions, and forcing churches to hire homosexuals. And hate speech laws to prohibit reading the Bible (especially Jude:7, Lev 20:13, etc). If congress is your benefactor, you've agreed to this.

Yes, Romans 13:6 says we should pay legitimate tax for legitimate government. But verse 3 defines legitimate government as not being a terror to good works. I assure you that Satan has a counterfeit authority for you to obey. Yes, Christ paid taxes. But did He render unto Caesar that which is God's? Did He fund vile abominations with his own labor? Notice that He didn't pay the Temple tax until Peter blurted out that He pays taxes. Christ then forced Peter to make his Yes Yes. Notice that He didn't pay with His own money.

Romans 13:1 says there is no power but of God. The common fable that this refers to government authority had been totally rebutted back when the divine right of kings to rule was rejected by Christianity. Pilgrims separated from this pagan doctrine in 1620, and established the American way. The American way was overthrown and we became British colonies.

Ungodly powers are not legitimate power. To twist this around is to imply that Hitler was legitimate and that Germans were required by God to obey him. Lenin referred to those who blindly supported his government as "useful idiots". Don't be a good Nazi, don't be a useful idiot.

The Romans 13:1 word that King James decided to translate as "power" is elsewhere translated as "liberty". There is no liberty but of God. The King James government published their Bible in 1611, and by 1620 the pilgrims, denying the right of kings to rule, came to America and brought fourth on this continent a new nation conceived in liberty. They did not bring with them a King James Bible. They separated from British authority. Within a century they were re-subjected as British subjects by the venue of the British East India Company, then we became British colonies. Then we lost our liberty in 1860.

The unchanging God of the Bible does not command you to obey tyrants.

In 1690 the political theorist John Locke's Second Treatise of Government, paragraph 196:

*Kings "can have, by virtue of conquest, no lawful title himself to dominion over them, or derive it to his posterity; but is an aggressor, and puts himself in a state of war against them, and has no better a right of principality, he, nor any of his successors, than Hingar, or Hubba, the Danes, had here in England, or Spartacus, had he conquered Italy, which is to have their yoke cast off as soon as God shall give those under their subjection courage and opportunity to do it. Thus, notwithstanding whatever title the kings of Assyria had over Judah, by the sword, God assisted Hezekiah to throw off the dominion of that conquered empire. 'And the Lord was with Hezekiah, and he prospered; wherefore he went forth, and he rebelled against the king of Assyria, and served him not' (II Kings 18.7). Whence it is plain that shaking off a power which force, and not right, hath set over any one, though it hath the name of rebellion, yet is not offence before God, but that which He allows and countenances, though even promises and covenants, when obtained by force, have intervened. For it is very probable, to any one that reads the story of Ahaz and Hezekiah attentively, that the Assyrians subdued Ahaz, and deposed him, and made Hezekiah king in his father's lifetime, and that Hezekiah, by agreement, had done him homage, and paid him tribute till this time. "*

I said this in my commentary on Revelation 13:4, but I must repeat it here:

The brutal beast rose from the sea. The Law of the Sea includes Admiralty, Commercial Law and Equity. Each of these equate force with justice. Each came into existence by people demanding that government do something to enforce fairness.\* (whereas Christians would rather be wronged – 1st Corinthians 6:7) They all require centralized authority to forcibly administer justice. But, you cannot love your neighbor if you force him to obey Herod, Caesar, Pharaoh or Hitler.

To regulate your neighbors' rights is to covet and play god\*\*. Until you resist exercising authority over your neighbors, you cannot be free. Christ, at the Last Supper, told us that we are not to rule over others (Matthew 20:25, Mark 10:42, Luke 22:25). In Luke 22:25 Christ even warns us not to become benefactors in order to rule over others. Man does not have the inherent right to exercise authority over other men. Your [Declaration of Independence](#) says that all men are created equal – but you rejected the precept.

\* political demands rising up from the sea of multitudes

\*\* The man (Greek *anthropos*) of sin in 2<sup>nd</sup> Thessalonians 2 obviously refers to a centralized authority that regulates your rights. Are you enforcing the Novus Ordo Seclorum that has the same author as the old world order?

If you feel self-righteous telling others to take perjury oaths on forms of any kind (1040, W4, W9, I9, SS5, license applications, child vaccinations, banking agreements, or voter registration), then you are telling them to violate Biblical principals. All oaths must be voluntary. Christ never used compulsion. Christ prohibited oaths (Matthew 5:34) and James repeated Christ's prohibition and added the warning "least ye fall into condemnation" James 5:12. YES, YOUR OATHS CAN CONDEMN YOU. Your government never tells anyone to sign a form. Coercing a signature is a felony. Mandatory signatures are invalid, and inadmissible in court. You have NO authority to invent the myth that lifetime slavery is mandatory. You have no lawful orders to tell them to sign a form. Your incorrect command to sign the form is itself a crime. It's a crime worse than genocide. Hitler's men were obeying their orders. What is your excuse for inventing orders to enslave and plunder the innocent?

Also keep in mind that the I-9 form is only for the purposes of the Seasonal Agricultural Workers Protection Act (Title 8 Code of Federal Regulations 274a.2 and 29 U.S. Code section 1802), and the I-9 form Social Security Number section is voluntary (according to Department of Homeland Security Employer Bulletin 102). And the W-4 form is only for Tax Class 5 (gift and estate tax).

If you are the type of character who wants to control others, with the color of man's law, then you are of the same class of citizenship who used political influence to execute Christ. You are just like those who influenced King Darius to pass a law prohibiting Daniel from praying. I may seem harsh, but you deserve their fate. Daniel 6:24.

Under a de-centralized non-coercive government (the Bible uses the terminology "perfect law of liberty"), men are expected to do the right thing, and would be disfellowshipped for evil behavior. Your rights depend upon your concern over your neighbor's rights as much as your own. I want you to notice the distinctions:

Perfect Law of Liberty	Centralized Authority
<p><u>Blackstone's Commentaries</u>:</p> <p><i>"Neither could any other law possibly exist; for ... we are all equal, without any other superior but him who is the author of our being."</i></p> <p><a href="#">Declaration of Independence</a> <i>"We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable Rights... That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men"</i></p>	<p>"We the" equal people created artificial entities to help us protect our rights. (Municipal Corporations. "Freak and not compatible with the law." "a mere creature of the mind") Counties created states. States created the United States. The U.S. goes bankrupt and turns over all their assets to foreign receivership (chain of command handed to a foreign principality). Those who owe allegiance to this manmade (graven) fourth level of abstraction find that they are a fifth level of abstraction away from being equal under the perfect law of liberty.</p> <p>Romans 1:25 <i>they worshiped and served the created things rather than the Creator ...</i></p>
<p>It is love of neighbor to drive out evil from among you. <u>Blackstone's Commentaries</u> (Book 4 PUBLIC WRONGS, introduction, starting at the bottom of page 7): "the right of punishing crimes against the law of nature, as murder and the like, is in a state of mere nature vested in every individual"</p>	<p>Only they administer justice</p>
<p>Disfellowshipped person cannot buy or sell. This</p>	<p>Disfellowshipped person cannot buy or sell,</p>



Perfect Law of Liberty	Centralized Authority
discrimination is lawful because you have the right to either associate, or not associate, with whomever you want. Citizenship is available only to those who <u>enter</u> your fellowship.	discrimination is only by them. Citizenship is available only to those who <u>enter</u> their fellowship.
You settle your own disputes. Example: Andrew Jackson survived three duels before we elected him president.	They settle your disputes
Charity takes care of Widows and orphans (James 1:27)	Forced tax payments (brutal evictions and seizures if not surrendered “voluntarily”) takes care of widows and orphans
Parents are responsible for educating their children (US Supreme Court still says so)	Forced payments take care of the State’s children
Teaching God’s precepts to your children, (in their thoughts and deeds - right hand and forehead), will ensure God’s protection	Teaching State precepts to your children is a mark of the state’s protection

When Christians were confronted with centralized beast authority they often avoided, evaded and escaped from authority. Examples: Matthew 5:25, John 10:39, 1 Corinthians 6:12 do not be under the power of any, 2 Corinthians 11:33, Luke 6:30, Luke 12:58, 1st Peter 2:16 – live as free, but not to cover up maliciousness. Also notice that Paul got into trouble whenever he used his Roman citizenship. Was it wrong for the Pilgrims to flee from government persecution to bring forth on this continent a new nation conceived in Liberty?

Abraham, Moses and Jesus set whole nations free by teaching a few basic precepts of a godly government.

In Revelation 13, the two-horned second beast issues the mark of the beast. Right before he is introduced there is this warning:  
 He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity. (Revelation 13:10).

## **7 SECTION 7: REFERENCE**

### **7.1 Your Government's definition of the word "Must"**

You've probably been told that you "Must" file a form, or you "Must" disclose a number. Let's take a closer look.

US Supreme Court in U.S. vs. Minker, 350 U.S. 179 at page 187 explains that an administrative summons cannot compel testimony: "*... an official command, ... has some coercive tendency, either because of ignorance of their rights on the part of those whom it purports to command or their natural respect for what appears to be an official command, or because of their reluctance to test the ... validity by litigation.*"

U.S. v. Tallmadge, 829 F.2d. 767: "... One who relies on a legal interpretation by a government official assumes the risk that it is in error... it has also been held or said that `the government could scarcely function if it were bound by its employees unauthorized representations'" Goldberg v. Weinberger, 546 F.2d. 477.

Caterpillar Tractor Company v. U.S., 589 F.2d. 1040 (also see GEHL Co. v. C.I.R., 795 F.2d. 1324): "Informal publications of IRS all the way up to revenue rulings are simply guides to taxpayers and taxpayer relies on them at his peril."

United States Supreme Court Federal Crop Insurance Corp. v. Merrill, 332 U.S. 380 (1947): "... Anyone entering into an arrangement with the government takes the risk of having accurately ascertained that he who purports to act for the government stays within the bounds of his authority ... and this is so even though, as here, the agent himself may have been unaware of the limitations upon his authority."

Fields v. U.S., 27 App.D.C. 433: Words like "may," "must," "shall," etc., are constantly used in statutes without intending that they be taken literally.

Brinkley v. Brinkley, 56 N.Y. 192: "Must" as used in statutes has been frequently construed not to be mandatory

Fort Howard Paper v. Fox River Dist., 26 N.W.2nd. 661: The word "shall" in a statute may be construed to mean "may", particularly in order to avoid a constitutional doubt.

Gow v. Consolidated Copper, 165 Atl. 136: If necessary, to avoid unconstitutionality of a statute, "shall" will be deemed equivalent to "may".

George Williams College v. Village of Williams Bay, 7 N.W.2nd 891: "Shall" in any statute may be construed to mean "may" in order to avoid constitutional doubt.

US Supreme Court, Cairo and Fulton RR Co. v. Hecht, 95 U.S. 170: As against the government, the word "shall" when used in statutes is to be construed as "may," unless a contrary intention is manifest

Ballou v. Kemp, 95 F.2d. 556: The word "shall" in a statute may be construed as "may" where the connection in which it is used or the relation to which it is put with other parts of the same statute indicates that the legislature intended that it should receive such a construction.

## 7.2 Your Government's definition of the word "Person"

The word "person" is used in many laws. If you don't know what the term means, you might think that you are one of these. People are not persons.

A legal maxim says "Man is a term of nature; person of the civil law"

The legislated word *person* includes natural people who have a status with the state, as well as corporations, municipalities, universities, labor organizations, partnerships, trustees, legal representatives, and illegitimate children. And sometimes a viable fetus.

American Law and Procedure, Vol 13, page 137, 162, (1910):

*"This word 'person' and its scope and bearing in the law, involving, as it does, legal fictions and also apparently natural beings, it is difficult to understand; but it is absolutely necessary to grasp, at whatever cost, a true and proper understanding to the word in all the phases of its proper use ... A person is here not a physical or individual person, but the status or condition with which he is invested... not an individual or physical person, but the status, condition or character borne by physical persons... The law of persons is the law of status or condition."*

*"A moments reflection enables one to see that man and person cannot be synonymous, for there cannot be an artificial man, though there are artificial persons. Thus the conclusion is easily reached that the law itself often creates an entity or a being which is called a person; the law cannot create an artificial man, but it can and frequently does invest him with artificial attributes; this is his personality... that it to say, the man-person; and abstract persons, which are fiction and which have no existence except in law; that is to say, those which are purely legal conceptions or creations."*

People are not persons. On the next page you will read legal definitions of the word 'person'. As you will see, persons are defined as non-sovereigns. A sovereign is someone who is not subject to statutes. A person is someone who voluntarily submits himself to statutes.

All men are created equal. They remain equal until they make themselves unequal by swearing oaths of allegiance to artificial man-made (graven) images. Your *status* with the state makes you subject to the artificial graven state.

For example, the U.S. Supreme Court case that legalized divorce in 1888, Maynard v. Hill, 125 U.S. 190, used the word *status* three times, and in each occurrence of the word *status* was in italics. At page 212, the Supreme Court confirmed that "marriage is a relation for life", but it was only speaking of real marriage. And indeed, real marriage had always been enforced by courts because it is until death they depart.

Marriage was defined in the Garden of Eden, and cannot be changed by man. It is until death. But by getting a marriage license, you agree that you don't have a right to marry. It is only this fake graven marriage that is divorceable. If you were married by the state's permission, then the courts must rule that the marriage contract was never legal and that all children are bastards. More details are available in the book Defense of Marriage.

A person has, according to the Supreme Court in Luria v. U.S., 231 U.S. 9: "Membership in a political society, implying a duty of allegiance on the part of the member and a duty of protection on the part of society."

Romans 6:16 (NIV): "Don't you know that when you offer yourselves to someone to obey him as slaves, you are slaves to the one whom you obey..."

Some courts say that sovereignty exists in the people:

Spooner v. McConnell, 22 F. 939, 943:

*"The sovereignty of a state does not reside in the persons who fill the different departments of its government, but in the People, from whom the government emanated; and they may change it at their discretion. Sovereignty, then in this country, abides with the constituency, and not with the agent; and this remark is true, both in reference to the federal and state government."*

1794 U.S. Supreme Court case Glass v. Sloop Betsey:

*"... Our government is founded upon compact. Sovereignty was, and is, in the people"*

1829 U.S. Supreme Court case Lansing v. Smith:

*"People of a state are entitled to all rights which formerly belong to the King, by his prerogative."*

US Supreme Court in 4 Wheat 402:

*"The United States, as a whole, emanates from the people... The people, in their capacity as sovereigns, made and adopted the Constitution..."*

US Supreme Court in Luther v. Borden, 48 U.S. 1, 12 L.Ed. 581:

*"...The sovereignty in every state resides in the people of the state and they may alter and change their form of government at their own pleasure."*

US Supreme Court in Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356, page 370:

*"While sovereign powers are delegated to ... the government, sovereignty itself remains with the people.."*

Yick Wo is a powerful anti-discrimination case. You might get the impression that the legislature can write perfectly legal laws, yet the laws cannot be enforced contrary to the intent of the people. It's as if servants do not make rules for their masters. It's as if the Citizens who created government were their masters. It's as if civil servants were to obey the higher authority. You are the higher authority of Romans 13:1. You as ruler are not a terror to good works per Romans 13:3. Imagine that! Isn't it a shame that your government was surrendered to those who are a terror to good works? Isn't it a shame that you enlisted to obey them?

US Supreme Court in Julliard v. Greenman: 110 U.S. 421:

*"There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States .... In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it: All else is withheld."*

US Supreme Court in Wilson v. Omaha Indian Tribe 442 U.S. 653, 667 (1979):

*"In common usage, the term 'person' does not include the sovereign, and statutes employing the word are ordinarily construed to exclude it."*

US Supreme Court in U.S. v. Cooper, 312 U.S. 600,604, 61 S.Ct. 742 (1941):

*"Since in common usage the term `person' does not include the sovereign, statutes employing that term are ordinarily construed to exclude it."*

US Supreme Court in U.S. v. United Mine Workers of America, 330 U.S. 258 , 67 S.Ct. 677 (1947):

*"In common usage, the term `person' does not include the sovereign and statutes employing it will ordinarily not be construed to do so."*

US Supreme Court in U.S. v. Fox, 94 U.S. 315:

*"Since in common usage, the term `person' does not include the sovereign, statutes employing the phrase are ordinarily construed to exclude it."*

U.S. v. General Motors Corporation, D.C. Ill, 2 F.R.D. 528, 530:

*"In common usage the word `person' does not include the sovereign, and statutes employing the word are generally construed to exclude the sovereign."*

Church of Scientology v. U.S. Department of Justice, 612 F.2d. 417, 425 (1979):

*"the word `person' in legal terminology is perceived as a general word which normally includes in its scope a variety of entities other than human beings., see e.g. 1, U.S.C. para 1."*

In the 1935 Supreme Court case of Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 the Supreme Court found that "In United States, sovereignty resides in people... the Congress cannot invoke the sovereign power of the People to override their will as thus declared.",

That's right! According to the U.S. Supreme Court, the people are non-persons.

This all makes sense, after all, servants don't make rules for their masters.

In his book Judicial Tyranny and Your Income Tax, tax attorney Jeffrey Dickstein included the transcript of the tax trial U.S. v. Carl Beery, Case A87-43CR Vol. III transcript. On page 296 of the book, you will read where the IRS claims that "an individual is somebody with a social security number."

For the advanced student:

The 1936 conference of Governors made a promise to pay the interest on the national debt from the future earnings of its federal citizens. This is as valid as any other promise to pay, as is a promissory note. As with any mortgage or loan it can be sold or even foreclosed. When it is sold, the collateral is transferred with it.

The following is speculation.

The pieces of the puzzle seem to fit together when you take the word "PERSON" to a third level of abstraction. Suppose that the word "PERSON" refers to a government corporation.

When a birth certificate is filed with a state, the federal government creates a "strawman corporation" with the same name as the baby, except the name is all capitalized. This corporation is the all capitalized name that you see on "your" ID, which is not you and is not even a proper noun. It is the corporation that gets a social security number. This would be consistent with the Constitution that prohibits people from getting welfare. Only the corporation can get a bank loan or earn interest. This would explain how the government gets around the usury laws. Only the corporation can get a driver's license or passport, or declare bankruptcy or pay probate or fill prescriptions. Only the corporation can pay taxes (which otherwise would be unconstitutional as an unapportioned direct tax). The state marries and divorces the corporations, while the flesh remain husband and wife until death do they part (as in Romans 7:2,3) because the government cannot put asunder any family relationship. Attorneys must represent corporations.

After the corporate child is created, the federal government then opens a Treasury Account into which it makes an account entry of the estimated value of all future earnings. It then uses the Governors' promise to pay this account as collateral for another loan on the national debt. This corporation remains unconnected to you until you volunteer to pay its debts. To become surety to pay it's debts, all you have to do is voluntarily sign a W-4 form or a 1040 form or pay a license fee.

Lamentations 5:8 (KJV) "Servants have ruled over us: there is none that doth deliver us out of their hand."
---

### 7.3 You waived your right to a trial by jury.

Trial by government is prohibited for real people.

A trial by A JURY OF YOUR PEERS IS A TRIAL BY 12 PEOPLE WHO KNOW YOU and who can judge the law as well as the facts.

- If your jurors do not know you, then you must have somehow waived your right to a fair trial.
- If your jurors had to accept the judges instructions on the law, then you must have somehow waived your right to a fair trial.

The writers of your Constitution had a strong distrust of government tyranny. A trial by a jury of your peers was intended to replace the inherently unfair trial by government. A trial by government does not fulfill the Fifth Amendment guarantee to due process of law. You have a right to a fair trial. Trial by government cannot be fair. Inquisition is trial by government.

In 1794, the Supreme Court conducted a jury trial in the case of the State of Georgia v Brailsford in the first jury trial before the Supreme Court of the United States. In the jury instructions. Chief Justice John Jay said:

*"It is presumed, that juries are the best judges of facts; it is, on the other hand, presumed that courts are the best judges of law. But still both objects are within your power of decision."*

**"...you have a right to take it upon yourselves to judge of both, and to determine the law as well as the fact in controversy".**

As recently as 1972, in the case U.S. v Dougherty, 473 F.2d. 1113, 1139 the U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia said that the jury has an "unreviewable and irreversible power... to acquit in disregard of the instructions on the law given by the trial judge.

The book Elliot's Debates On The Adoption Of The Constitution quotes (Vol 3, page 579) Patrick Henry as stating; "By the bill of rights of England, a subject has a right to a trial by his peers. What is meant by his peers? Those who reside near him, his neighbors, and who are well acquainted with his character and situation in life."

Also in Elliot's Debates we can read (Vol 2, page 516) where another Founding Father, James Wilson, signer of the Declaration of Independence and later a Supreme Court Justice, reassured us that a jury of your peers would always be 12 people who know you: "Where jurors can be acquainted with the characters of the parties and the witnesses -- where the whole cause can be brought within their knowledge and their view -- I know no mode of investigation equal to that by a trial by jury: they hear every thing that is alleged; they not only hear the words, but they see and mark the features of the countenance; they can judge of weight due to such testimony; and moreover, it is a cheap and expeditious manner of distributing justice. There is another advantage annexed to the trial by jury; the jurors may indeed return a mistaken or ill-founded verdict, but their errors cannot be systematical."

And again, in Elliot's Debates, Vol 2, page 110, Congressman Holmes from Massachusetts, assured us that cases would be heard in the local community where the jury of peers could form a judgment based on the character of the accused and the credibility of the witnesses.

That's right! Your Constitution was ratified on the reassurance that a jury of your peers would always be 12 people who know you.

Here is further proof that a real trial (by jury) is not a trial by government: The Metropolitan News, a Los Angeles legal newspaper on October 25, 1973 quoted Hon. L. Thaxton Hanson, Justice Court of Appeals, State of California (ret.): "In ancient times, the right to trial by jury was called 'trial per pals' - that is, trial by country - or by the people, as distinguished from trial by government"

Lord Hale, 18th Century English Jurist was being quoted in the U.S. Supreme Court's case Sparf & Hansen v. U.S., 156 U.S. 51 at page 119 (1895): "... if the judge's opinion in matter of law must rule the issue of fact submitted to the jury, the trial by jury would be useless."

Much of your law comes from the English system. The U.S. Supreme Court, in the same Sparf case at page 117 quotes Englishman John Milton in his book Defense of the People: " And hence it is that when a malefactor is asked at his arraignment, 'How will you be tried?' he answers always, according to law and custom, 'By God and my country, not by God and the King, or the King's Deputy [Judge].'"

In the impeachment Trial of U.S. Supreme Court Justice Chase in 1805, your U.S. Government itself fought for the right of the jury to judge the law as well as the facts. They impeached Justice Chase because he failed to tell a jury in a murder trial that they can judge the law. -- Perhaps juries today do not have the right to judge the law. Perhaps juries have waived their rights by registering to vote. All of their rights. [Government derives its powers from the consent of the governed, and registered voters have consented to be governed].

Supreme Court Justice Chase, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, was impeached for

*"... endeavoring to wrest from the jury their indisputable right to hear argument, and determine upon the question of law as well as the question of fact, ..."*

Your U.S. Government itself, in the Chase Transcript Article 1, section 2, clause 4, argued that Justice Chase did this outrageous thing:

*"... to the disgrace of the character of the American bench, in manifest violation of law and justice and in open contempt of the rights of juries, on which ultimately rest the liberty and safety of the American people."*

In 1969 in U.S. v. Moylan 417 F.2d. 1002 at page 1006: "We recognize as appellants urge, the UNDISPUTED power of the jury to acquit, even if the verdict is contrary to the law as given by the judge and contrary to the evidence. ... the jury has the power to acquit and the courts must abide by that decision."

1 <sup>st</sup> Corinthians 4:3 (NIV): I care very little if I am judged by you or by any human court; indeed, I do not even judge myself.
--

## 7.4 Government authority no longer comes from "We the people"

Real people don't let others handle their affairs - they handle their own affairs.

Real people will protect themselves, they don't need their servants' permission. The Declaration of Independence stated that governments are instituted among men to secure unalienable God given rights. The writers of the Declaration, "... with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence" pledged their lives, fortunes and sacred honor to protect themselves and their rights. They tried to secure the blessings of liberty against the brutal force of their (British=Roman) government, which at that time it was the most powerful military force on earth.

Real people handled their own affairs before they created your civil government, and they will handle their own affairs now. They can defend their family, their property, and their community without permission from a servant. In a Republic, people are the Lawgivers who created civil government. God delegated this responsibility to them, and they created a government to enforce God's laws. All government authority comes from them. Real people must take the law into their own hands. Created persons cannot take the law into their own hands. Which one are you?

No one can delegate an authority that he himself does not have. All government power comes from the people who created it. There is no government power that did not come from its creators. If real people can't do something, then they could not have delegated that authority to the government they created. I repeat: If you cannot do something then you cannot delegate, in a written constitution, an authority you don't have. **IF YOU CANNOT DO SOMETHING THEN YOUR GOVERNMENT CANNOT DO IT EITHER\***. You delegated the authority to possess nuclear bombs, prescribe drugs, and execute criminals because you have these rights, unless you somehow waived your rights. Again: All authority comes from God. If you fail to control your creature, you are irresponsible. You will suffer the natural consequence of your irresponsibility: Domination.

\* Spooner v. McConnell, 22 F. 939 @ 943:

*"The sovereignty of a state does not reside in the persons who fill the different departments of its government, but in the People, from whom the government emanated; and they may change it at their discretion. Sovereignty, then in this country, abides with the constituency, and not with the agent; and this remark is true, both in reference to the federal and state government."*

What did you sign that gave away your rights? Could it be that you agreed to an alternate Lordship? Will this sin go unpunished?

Throughout the Bible, godly nations prosper, then turn from God, then are quickly taken into captivity by pagan nations. Brutal pagan conquerors are instruments of His discipline (Isa 8:4-10, 10:5-6, 45:1-3, Jer 5:15-18, 20:4-5, 24:10, Eze 21:15-23, 30:24-26, 32:11-15). Is America going to be any different, or did God change?

Here is a quote from John Philpot Curran, 1790: "The condition upon which God hath given liberty to man is eternal vigilance; which condition if he breaks, servitude is at once the consequence of his crime."

US Supreme Court in Fairbanks v. U.S., 181 U.S. 283:

*"Powers denied are not to be implied; they are to be obtained, if at all, from and in the same manner provided by, those who originally granted the enumerated powers, but who at the same time denied powers."*

It is your duty (not just a right) to control your subordinates, wards, children and property. And this includes anyone who acknowledges their servitude by worshipping you with an oath (such as an oath of office), or by allowing you to manage their affairs. You might just want to regulate their medicine, guns, pollutants, home repairs, seat belts, marriage, children, dogs, etc.

In the Luther case quoted above, the Supreme Court said that, as absolute proprietors of your government, you could use or abuse your servants, and that you might take away what you have delegated and intrust to whom you please.

**Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7**

Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>



Here is a quote from Abraham Linclon: "Our safety, our liberty, depends upon preserving the Constitution of the United States as our fathers made it inviolate. The people of the United States are the rightful masters of both congress and the courts, not to overthrow the Constitution, but to overthrow the men who pervert the Constitution."

Just as the Supreme Court confirmed, all government authority must be delegated from you. If you have the authority to posses nuclear bombs, and prescribe drugs, and execute criminals then you can take care of these essential tasks yourself, and you can also ask your civil servants to help you, if you feel that they can be trusted. Since your Constitution prohibits a standing army, I would suggest not giving them any bombs. Alexander Hamilton in Federalist Paper No. 29 said that the armament in the hands of the citizens was to be up-to-date and equal to that of the Army, and that there should be "a large body of citizens, little if at all inferior to [the military] in discipline and the use of arms, who stand ready to defend their own rights and those of their fellow citizens."

Now the topic of Non-Authority.

You cannot expand your authority by delegating powers you do not have. All authority is delegated, and your government servants cannot do something that they are not delegated (i.e., you can fail to delegate, as in the Luther case, or you can further prohibit powers as was mentioned in the Fairbanks case). Perhaps you could even ban their bibles (remember that this servitude "... is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion..."). Then how did your civil servant subordinates get the authority to expand their powers? How can they do things that they are not delegated? Things you do not have the authority to do. Examples: allow sodomy, adultery, pornography for the library, divorce (can you delegate authority to cancel your neighbors vows to God?), authorize usury, seize property from those known to be innocent, prohibit self-medication, deny parents rights, buy Maplethorp art, etc.

And now, even abortion clinics in high schools? The fruit of the womb is God's reward, Psalms 127:3. Shedding innocent blood is a certain way to provoke God's wrath. God hates the shedding of innocent blood, Proverbs 6:16-17. Ever since Abel's murder, shed blood cries out to God, Genesis 4:10. God promised to abandon, and indeed has always abandoned, any nation that allows shedding of innocent blood or sexual immorality: Numbers 35:33, Leviticus 18, Jeremiah 7:6 (although I can't explain sacrifice of the innocent in 2<sup>nd</sup> Sam 21:9). And yes, abortion is mentioned in the Bible. Acts 7:19 uses the Greek word *brephos* meaning a fetus.

Your nation has been surrendered to benefactors. Your civil 'servants' no longer work for you.

Can government ban the Bible from their subjects? William Tyndale was executed, by civil government, for translating the Bible into English. It will happen again. At least Tyndale was a subject. In the near future, those who refuse to become subjects may be executed. Revelation 20:4 says that people will be beheaded for refusing the mark. (by the way, Tyndale was strangled).

In The U.S. Supreme Court decision in [Roe v. Wade](#) (93 S.Ct. 705) the court correctly stated that the 14th amendment does not protect the unborn. Many people have used this to conclude, falsely, that your Constitution's enumerated powers somehow allows you to murder the non-born, without giving any thought that this logic would also allow murder of the non-citizen. This case is NOT a citizenship case. It is irrelevant that the 14th amendment has a definition of federal citizens. The preamble of your Constitution secures the blessings of liberty to themselves and their posterity. Their as-yet-unborn posterity. The abortion apologists are claiming that the preamble has not secured the blessings of liberty to the posterity. The shedding of innocent blood is now a protected right for those who accept this federal citizenship. In another chapter, I discuss this 14<sup>th</sup> Amendment Citizenship

## 7.5 Politics = Beast Power

Family government (patriarchal government) was perfectly good for the first 10 books of the Bible. Asking for a government to Lord over us is evil. Nominating Saul to be King rejected God's lordship. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7. Electing Saul as King was evil in the eyes of God 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 12: 17. The Lord is our lawgiver (Isaiah 33:22, James 4:12). Nowhere in scripture does the unchanging God of the Bible give authority to civil governments to legislate their own laws beyond God's commandments, Deuteronomy 4:2.

The U.S. Constitution, Article 4, section 4 guarantees to every state a REPUBLIC form of government. We are NOT supposed to be a democracy. The federal government has a duty (Article 4, section 4) to protect us from democracy. As we shall soon see, only a subversive would want to live in a democracy.

In a democracy, a majority votes to force their will on others. Christians will not exercise dominion over others. Christians will not covet their neighbors' goods. Christians will not plunder the innocent. Christians will not exercise dominion over others (Matt 20:26).

Democracy is two wolves and a lamb voting on what to have for dinner.

In a republic, everyone has rights. Your Constitution guaranteed a republic form of government. The republic doesn't exist anymore. In a democracy, the misguided mobocracy forces their will on the minority. Democracy is part of the Beast system. Socialists cannot use a Republic, which is free from things public.

The word "democracy" does not appear anywhere in your U.S. Constitution because you are not a democracy. Democracy has no place in America.

Thomas Jefferson said "A democracy is nothing more than mob rule, where fifty-one percent of the people may take away the rights of the other forty-nine."

Alexander Hamilton:

*"We are a Republic. Real Liberty is never found in despotism or in the extremes of Democracy."*

1st Samuel 15:24 And Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the LORD, and thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice.

James Madison, 1787, Federalist Paper #10:

"Democracy is the most vile form of government ... democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention: have ever been found incompatible with personal security or the rights of property: and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths."

Of course democracies are "spectacles of turbulence and contention". The only participants are those who would take the risk of losing their rights in order to get a chance to dominate others.

Fisher Ames, author of the words of the First Amendment:

*"A democracy is a volcano which conceals the fiery materials of its own destruction. These will produce an eruption and carry desolation in their way."*

John Adams, 1815:

*"Democracy ... while it lasts is more bloody than either [aristocracy or monarchy]. Remember, democracy never lasts long. It soon wastes, exhausts, and murders itself. There is never a democracy that did not commit suicide."*

John Marshall, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court:

*"Between a balanced Republic and a democracy, the difference is like that between order and chaos."*

"A simple democracy is the devil's own government."

This quote is often attributed to several American patriots. Most often to Benjamin Rush, or Jedidiah Morse.

L.H. Butterfield, ed., The Letters of Benjamin Rush, vol. 1 (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1951), 454, quoting John Joachim Zubly, Presbyterian pastor and delegate to Congress, in a letter to David Ramsay in March or April 1788.

William Elder, Questions of the Day, (Philadelphia: Henry Baird publisher, 1871) page 175, attributes the quote to Thomas Jefferson.

About the time our original thirteen states adopted the federal constitution in 1787, Alexander Tyler, a Scottish history professor at the University of Edinburgh, made this observation of the fall of the Athenian Republic some 2,000 years earlier:

- *'A democracy is always temporary in nature; it simply cannot exist as a permanent form of government.'*
- *'A democracy will continue to exist up until the time that voters discover they can vote themselves generous gifts from the public treasury. From that moment on, the majority always vote for the candidates who promise the most benefits from the public treasury, with the result that every democracy will finally collapse due to loose fiscal policy, which is always followed by a dictatorship.'*

Democracy killed Christ. "But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbaas, and destroy Jesus." Matt 27:20. Pilate said publicly that he found no fault in Christ (Luke 23:4 & 14). Pilate publicly washed his hands to show that he had no jurisdiction, "saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: se ye to it" (Matt 27:24) but the mob forced him to execute Christ. Pilate liked Christ Jesus and wanted to release him (Luke 23:20), but that did not matter; he did not dare act contrary to the will of the vast majority. That's right! Voters, by a voice vote, determined that Christ should be executed.

Unreasoning mobs do not have authority. The root word of the English concept of *authority* is the word *author*. The Lord is our lawgiver (Isaiah 33:22, James 4:12). Scripture prohibits us from legislating beyond God's commandments, Deuteronomy 4:2.

We get the word republic from the shortened Latin idiom *Libera Res Publica*, which means free from things public. Bouvier's 1870 Law Dictionary, Vol 1, page 13: "The term republic, *res publica*, signifies the state independently of its form of government."

The sovereign people are independent of the administrating governments in all republics. FREEMEN ARE FREE FROM CIVIL AUTHORITY. Perhaps you can now understand Acts 22:27,29:

*"Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He said, Yea. And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was free born. Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him."*

Because a Roman officer cannot bind (arrest) a Roman citizen. Again: freemen are free from civil authority.

As further proof that a democracy is prohibited, consider the legal maxim: "The multitude of those who err is no protection for error."

In a democracy, which we have had since 1933, you can vote to plunder others and demand benefits. You too can exercise your democratic rights to persecute others. But, you must pay your fair share.

You have a right to create any kind of political system, just like those who nominated Saul to be King. Nominating Saul to be King rejected God's lordship. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7. But, this time, you delegated to your servants a power to create a host of gods/saviors/benefactors to provide for you, protect you and lord over you. Isn't this the essence of creating false images of god to be worshiped? Isn't this the essence of denying the Lordship of Christ?

- "Thou shalt have no other gods before me" [gods = Hebrew 'elohiym, which is elsewhere translated as judges or magistrates]. First Commandment.
- "Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them..." Second Commandment.
- "Choose this day whom you shall serve." Josh 24:15.

Every registered voter has agreed to abide by the outcome of the election, no matter how abhorrent the outcome. Governments' derive their powers from the consent of the governed. You have consented to be governed. Those who participate in elections, ever since Saul was elected as King, have consented to the results of the vote. So you've agreed, by registering to vote, that any misguided majority determines your moral values. Your property will be taxed to fund vile abominations. Even the Supreme Court said: "The citizen cannot complain, because he has voluntarily submitted himself to such a form of government." Registered voters consent to be taxed. Conversely, there would be no taxation without representation. Memorize this legal maxim: "He who consents to an act is not damaged by it." Did your government school teach this?

Nominating Saul to be King rejected God's lordship. 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:7. Saul's election was evil in the eyes of the Lord, I Sam 12:17. If God is an unchanging God (Mal 3:6, Heb 13:8, Heb 6:7, Num 23:19, 1<sup>st</sup> Sam 15:29) then I might suggest that it is still evil to elect someone to rule over you. You should also read 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 8:5-19.

Have you violated the Commandments against covetousness, theft, taking the Lord's authority in vain, and worshiping other gods?

Christ said in John 17:11-15, and John 15:19-20 that we are to be in the world but not of it. The Christian must not be of the worldly society. [a classic argument for Christians to not participate in evil society is Leo Tolstoy's [What I Believe](#) published in Russia in 1884.]

When Saul was elected as King, the system of patriarchal (family) government was rejected, and the idea of centralized government was embraced. This rejected the form of government used in the first 10 books of the Bible, asking for a king while the Lord was already your King (1<sup>st</sup> Sam 12:12). You are now suffering the end results.

Another Example: If you are a registered voter, you have consented to the results of the election. If an election passed a bond issue, then you agreed to have a lien on your property until the bond is paid, even if you didn't vote. Would a Bible believer do such a thing? [Hint: Don't be surety for strangers (Prov. 6:1, 11:15). Don't be surety for debts (Prov. 22:26) Do not put up collateral. Do not consent to be liened. (Prov 11:15 Prov 17:18).]

Another Example:

'Conflict of interest' is legal terminology for those who can influence a government decision to enrich themselves. This is not limited to Elected Officials or civil servants. Social Security partakers are, by voting, also influencing government to receive their check. Anyone who receives a government check, be it a paycheck or an entitlement check has a conflict of interest that prohibits them from voting. Voting becomes, for them, a government granted privilege that can be revoked at any time. On the other hand, Government's sovereign masters have a right to control their servants. Read your state constitution and notice the difference between the term "registered voters" and the term "qualified voters" sometimes called "electors". Read the chapter on the government's definition of "Person". A right cannot be regulated. If you think you still have a right to vote, just try to exercise your unregulated (without a credential from your servants) right to vote and see what happens. By the way, even Voter registrations cannot demand a social security number according to Meyer v. Putnam, 526 P.2d. 139 and Greidinger v. Davis, 988 F.2d. 1344.

You are no longer in a Republic. Prove it to yourself. Ask yourself some questions: Do you have all the rights equal to the class of citizens that created government? Can a majority of Congressmen, and a judge now conspire to take all your rights from you? Can a city government prohibit you from owning a dog unless you first beg for permission and pay a fee? If you insist that you have a right to own a dog, and refuse to register it, can they kill the dog and fine you? America is still a great

country, even if we are no longer free. Be grateful that you still have a right to refuse to register with Caesar, and not end up like an unregistered dog.

Democracy cannot be considered as a form of government. Although it starts as a form of government, it quickly dissolves into corruption. **The moment a politician makes a promise, is the moment democracy ceases to be a form of government.** To use a public office to grant favors to those who elect you is corruption. **It is the very definition of corruption.** Go look it up in a law dictionary. DEMOCRACY IS CORRUPTION. According to John Locke's Second Treatise of Government section 222 the use of a public office to influence your electors will "*cut up government by the roots, and poison the very fountain of public security...*"

Exodus 23:2 Thou shalt not follow a multitude to do evil

At one time, even the U.S. Supreme Court in Meyer v. Nebraska, [262 U.S. 390](#), at page 399, defined the term Liberty

*"Liberty... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience,.. the established doctrine is that this liberty may not be interfered with under the guise of protecting public interest, by legislative action which is arbitrary or without reasonable relation to some purpose within the competency of the state to effect."*

For further information read:

- Republic v. Democracy, by Gregory Williams, PO Box 10, Summer Lake, Oregon
- The History of American Constitutional or Common Law, ISBN 1-57282-010-1, The Message Company, Santa Fe, New Mexico, 1-505-474-0998.
- Another reference is a collection called Architecture of Modern Political Power, but be forewarned, the author blames Christians for the Medieval Roman brutality that we fled from. Nevertheless, he shows that this power continues today. [www.mega.nu:8080/ampp](http://www.mega.nu:8080/ampp)
- And the University of Michigan's collection called The Making of America.

## 7.6 Other Marks: Birth and Marriage Certificates and ID cards

The term "the United States" is used in the first sentence of the 14th amendment as something you can be born into. Don't be tricked by this. The term "the United States" can mean either the name of the government or the name of a geographical place. If a form asks if you were born in the United States, do not assume that this refers to a geographical place. It is asking if you were born into the government.

There is a big difference between "the United States" as a geographical place surrounded by a border and "the United States" as the name of a political unit. The border existed before the government existed. The government did not create the border. Governments don't determine where the border is. The people who created government already had the territory that the new servants were hired to defend. Government Servants cannot extend the established geographic "United States", they can only extend the political (or corporate) "United States". They can, and did, extend their jurisdiction beyond their federal territories (of Washington DC, Guam, Puerto Rico, U.S. Virgin Islands, American Samoa and Northern Marianas Island) to anywhere and anything receiving federal funds. This is entirely voluntary, and is done with the consent of those who are governed.

Since your federal Constitution limits your federal government to Washington DC and the territories, it would be unconstitutional to tax anyone within a state. Thomas Jefferson, while he was Vice-President, in the [Kentucky Resolves](#), reassured us that there are only three federal crimes that apply within a state. The three crimes mentioned in your Constitution: piracy, treason, and counterfeiting. James Madison, in the [Virginia Resolves](#) also concluded that states had a right to interfere with the federal government's laws it considered unconstitutional.

US Supreme Court in *Foley Brothers v. Filardo*, 336 U.S. 281:

*"It is a well established principle of law that all federal legislation applies only within the territorial jurisdiction of the United States unless a contrary intent appears"*

The Buck Act (4 U.S.C. §§104 to 113) creates taxable "Federal Areas" within States wherever your federal government sends aid. This includes Social Security. Now read *Springfield v. Kenny* 104 NE2d 65. If you want proof that you are an "individual entity" that is classified as a property franchise of your federal government, read the Supreme Court case *Wheeling Steel Corp. v. Fox*, 298 U.S. 193 (56 S.Ct. 773). As long as you have a link to your federal government, you are in a "federal area" that is subject to federal laws. You would otherwise be outside your federal jurisdiction. As long as you have a SSN, a resident driver license, a federal bank account, or even a zip code or a two letter federal area (I've read that these two letter abbreviations were created by the Secretary of the Treasury in 31 CFR Part 51.2, but I could not find a copy of this repealed regulation), or if you confess that you are in an all capitalized STATE, then you are receiving taxable federal benefits within a federal area. Also see *Howard v. Commissioners of Sinking Fund*, 344 U.S. 624. Keep in mind that your federal legislature can not make laws for state citizens. Congress can only make territorial laws, with few exceptions. *American Banana Co. v. U.S. Fruit Co*, 213 U.S. 347 (1909). *U.S. v. Spear* (1949) 338 U.S. 217. *NY Central RR Co. v. Chisholm* (1925) 268 U.S. 29. *Foley Brothers v. Filardo*, 336 U.S. 281 (1948).

Now back to my original question. Which "United States" were you born in: the geographical or the political?

Hint #1: In 1887 the Supreme Court in *Baldwin v. Franks* 7 S.Ct. 656, 662; 120 U.S. 678, 690 said that: "In the constitution and laws of the United States the word `citizen' is generally, if not always, used in a political sense... It is so used in section 1 of article 14 of the amendments of the constitution..."

Hint #2: The U.S. Supreme Court ruled on the meaning of the first sentence of the 14th Amendment in *Elk v. Wilkins* in 1884 (112 U.S. 94) "The persons declared to be citizens are `all persons born or naturalized in the united states, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof.' The evident meaning of these last words is, not merely subject in some respect or degree to the jurisdiction of the United States, but completely subject to their political jurisdiction, and owing them direct and immediate allegiance."

Hint #3: BIRTH DOES NOT ESTABLISH CITIZENSHIP according to [Edwards v. California](#), [314 US 160](#) at page 183: "... birth within a state does not establish citizenship thereof."

The legal definition of the word Birth has two meanings, natural birth or coming into legal existence. Example: a corporation has a birth. Birth is the event, such as signing a form that creates legal existence in the eyes of the law. [It is a lot like Jesus telling Nicodemus that he must be born again, and Nicodemus couldn't understand that Jesus was speaking of corporate law]. We become officers/employees/agents of the corporate body by such events as "entering into society" or "initiation" or "being recognized" or "coming into legal existence" not by natural birth.

Now reread the first sentence of the 14th amendment and tell me if you were both (1) born or naturalized into the government (2) AND SUBJECT TO the jurisdiction thereof ?

The Supreme Court in [Roe v. Wade](#) correctly stated, although irrelevant to the case, that the:

*"... word `person' as used in the Fourteenth Amendment does not include the unborn. "*

As I show in the citizenship chapter that the word `person' does not include the Christian either. To suggest that non-persons can be killed, is the same kind of laws that Hitler used.

Persons have names in all capitalized letters. Christian names are not in all capital letters.

I am now going to prove that getting a Birth Certificate surrenders the child to the government. Don't take my word for it, just become familiar with the terminology, and then look at a birth certificate. Try to get a copy of the document signed by the doctor, not just the computer printout.

*Black's Law Dictionary*, "Christian name":

*"The baptismal name as distinct from the surname. The name which is given one after his birth or at baptism, or is afterward assumed by him in addition to his family name. Such name may consist of a single letter."*

*Black's Law Dictionary*, "Surname":

*"The family name; the name over and above the Christian name. The part of a name which is not given in baptism. The name of a person which is derived from the common name of his parents.... The last name; the name common to all members of a family."*

Gregg's Manual of English purportedly states:

*"A name spelled in all capital letters or a name initialed, is not a proper noun denoting a specific person, but is a fictitious name, or a name of a dead person, or a nom de guerre."*

Read that again. A name spelled in all capital letters is the name of a dead person. Your government considers you to be either a dead person or a fictitious name.

*Black's Law Dictionary* "Fictitious Name":

*"A counterfeit, alias, feigned, or pretended name taken by a person, differing in some essential particular from his true name (consisting of Christian name and patronymic), with the implication that it is meant to deceive or mislead."*

Oxford Dictionary:

- "nom": Used in expressions denoting a pseudonym, a false or assumed name."
- "Nom de guerre": War name. A name assumed by or assigned to a person engaged in some action or enterprise.
- "Guerre": War, and as a verb, to wage war.

The U.S. Government Style Manual, Chapter 3 capitalization rules does not mention any proper noun in all capitalized letters. In Chapter 11, not even the names of ships are all capitalized except if being quoted from another source as all capitalized. Chapter 19 is the first time all capitalized names are mentioned; when a visitor addresses the House or Senate.

***Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7***

Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>

For a deeper study on this capitalization topic, study

<http://home.earthlink.net/~walterk1/patr/UCC/AllCapName.html>

Now look at a birth certificate. Is the baby's name in all capital letters? Did the father name the baby or did the doctor, while exercising his duties as a licensed government agent, assign the name to the baby? Is there any hint on the legal document that the father named the baby? Does an all capitalized name differ in some essential particular from his true Christian name? If so, the implication is that it is meant to deceive or mislead. If not, then you've acknowledged that the all capitalized name is his true name, which cannot be a Christian name. Does your state birth certificate laws use the word 'person' when referring to the name on the certificate?

The government now has proof that the baby is a PERSON. PERSONS have legal existence in the eyes of the law, and are subject to the statutes written by the legislature. Sovereigns are above the law written by their servants. The PERSON on the birth certificate will not be able to exercise the rights of a non-person. You, like Esau, gave up your birthright, which will not pass to your children.

There is something even more sinister here. Government cannot know about matters of childbirth. According to the Supreme Court's famous [Roe v. Wade](#) decision "State criminal abortion laws... violate due process clause of Fourteenth Amendment protecting right to privacy". That's right! The Supreme Court says childbearing must remain strictly private. Why then is the doctor informing the government that a child was born? I suspect that the doctor is required to register government property. The government wants to secure another loan on the national debt and it needs collateral. A UCC-1 financing statement is not necessary because pursuant to UCC 9-302:

*"The filing of a financing statement otherwise required is not necessary or effective to perfect a security interest in property subject to (1) A statute or treaty of the United States which provides for a national or international registration or a national or international certificate of title or which provides a place for filing different from that specified ..."*

Is the doctor giving the baby to whoever owns the government? 2 Peter 2:3 (KJV) "And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you ..." Now, if you don't think the government is owned, look at a birth certificate and tell me why the STATE NAME is all capitalized. Hint: it's not all capitalized in your original state constitution. \_Those who created your government gave their creation a proper noun. Those who overthrew your government are operating a corporation with a non-proper noun, yet they are afraid to counterfeit the real government because there is a remnant of righteous individuals ready to restore lawful authority and execute them.

Fictitious names exist for a purpose. Fictions are invented to give courts jurisdiction. Snider v. Newellm, 44 S.E. 354. That's right. Corporations are fictions created by government, even foreign governments. Persons are also fictions created by government. However, real Christians, being non-fiction, were protected against the courts. They governed themselves.

Can a Christian use an all capitalized fictitious name knowing that to do so is "...with the implication that it is meant to deceive or mislead"? Now look at your driver's license or passport or birth certificate or voter registration. Can a Christian use an all capitalized fictitious name on any ID? Now go and try to get a government ID or birth certificate with a Christian name and see what happens. You cannot do it. Government cannot issue any ID with your Christian name on it. CHRISTIANS CANNOT GET A GOVERNMENT ID CARD. Christians are not part of their system, and DO NOT EXIST IN THE EYES OF THEIR LAW. Only non-Christians can get an ID (mark) of the beast. Only non-Christians can have a name of (of= created by) the beast. Only non-Christians can get the (ID) number of the Beast's name (name=authority).

Do you now confess that you have a mark of a beast, a name of a beast, and a number of his name?

Fictions give courts jurisdiction. Could a fictitious, all capitalized, name of your state government be an image of the beast? The Greek word for image that is used in Revelation's image of the beast is the Greek word *icon* (*Strong's* 1504). Synonyms: image, artifice, and fabrication. Also see: ruse, expedient. This icon that receives worship is not the same thing as an idol, which can also receive worship, although both are made by the hands of man.

Without an ID card you will notice that you are denied the right to travel by car or by airline. Nor can you cash a check or open a bank account or get a home phone. Nor can you rent a Post Office Box (per Domestic Mail regulation DMM 951.142 even though the Post Office cannot accept a Social Security Card as identification). You can still officially get a



job without a SSN. But soon, you will be officially unable to get a job. Your papers are not in order. Christians will be persecuted.

If you want to try an exercise in frustration, try to get the phone company to send you your bill with your real name on it to your real address. You cannot do it. You must worship the state god in order to get phone service. The state is the god that created the corporation. Real people don't exist in the eyes of the law.

Conclusion: as suggested by the Baldwin case quoted above, claiming that you are a U.S. citizen (with a Birth Certificate, or on an SSN application) is enough proof that you were born into your federal government. "A citizen of the United States is a citizen of the federal government..." (Kitchens v. Steele, 112 F.Supp. 383).

Real people do not exist in the eyes of the law, because people are sovereigns, and the legislature cannot and does not write laws for their masters (Matt 10:24, and John 15:20).

Most government forms ask for a date of birth. A date of birth on a government form is not the date you took your first breath, it is the date the instrument was signed that made you property of the government. The UN is involved in "the official birth registration process" per Title 20, Code of Federal Regulations, section 422.103(b)(2).

Here is further proof that government forms do not ask for the day you took your first breath: Hearsay is inadmissible in court. Although you were present on your born-day, you were not aware of any specific calendar system on that day, nor does your memory serve you well. It would be subornation of perjury for any government officer (with or without a form) to coerce you, under penalty of perjury, for inadmissible hearsay that you cannot recall. *Federal Rules of Evidence* rule 602 prohibits you from telling them your birth day. However, family records are admissible.

I read a brief article about an 1884 law textbook Parsons on Contracts with this quote from the chapter "Marriage is a Contract":

*"since the state married them, the children were fruits of the state".*

How did you delegate to your servants the authority to divorce man from wife contrary to Mark 10:9? I knew that I could not cancel my neighbor's vows to God, so I knew that divorce court could not cancel anyone's vows to God. It sounds too Catholic to me. How can you delegate to your civil servants the authority to bastardize your neighbors' children?

It turns out that we did not delegate this authority. Apparently there are two meanings of the word 'marriage', one meaning holy matrimony and the other refers to a status within the government.

I always thought it peculiar that people who have a right to get married would have to beg civil servants for permission (license = permission) to get married. I read the 1877 U.S. Supreme Court decision *Meister v. Moore* 96 U.S. 76, that a marriage license was not required, nor do states confer the right to marry, and that marriage is based on contract. This is consistent with the Bible, and it makes sense that the Supreme Court would confirm that this most sacred of family rights does not involve government. Since your Constitution prohibits any state from impairing the obligation of contracts (Article 1, section 10), the sanctity of the family is safe from government interference.

Then I read the 1888 U.S. Supreme Court decision in *Maynard v. Hill*, 8 S.Ct. 723, 125 U.S. 190, where the Maynards had intermarried in the state of Vermont (meaning they had a license) and that marriage was NOT based on contract but upon a *status*, and the government could do whatever it wanted to do with the marriage because a state created the *status* of marriage. Since this kind of marriage was not a commitment, there was no obligation of contract to be enforced. Since there was no commitment of marriage, this bastardizes the children. Sexual immorality is a crime against God. His punishment: Bastards cannot attend church even down to the tenth generation (Deuteronomy 23:2), and fornicators cannot go to heaven (1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:9). God has always abandoned any nation that allows sexual immorality.

What is divorce? Those who get married to the state can get divorced by the state. Nowhere in the Bible does divorce cancel a marriage. Divorce in the Bible refers to living separately. Everywhere remarriage is mentioned in the Bible, it is equated to adultery. Adulterers cannot go to heaven according to First Corinthians 6:9. Can a black robed priest at your county synagogue cancel your vows to God?

Family law is very diabolical. The word “marriage” has several meanings. Clergy that are authorized by the state to solemnize state licensed “marriages” can’t solemnize real marriages. They can only solemnize contracts with the state, the groom’s contract and the bride’s contract. A right cannot be licensed. A right cannot be taxed. If you pay a fee for a marriage license, then you’ve agreed that you don’t have a right to marry, and furthermore, you’ve paid to have your family regulated by the state. The presumption by the family court is that there has never been a commitment to a real husband-wife relationship, until death do you part. Any evidence to prove that you had a commitment will be inadmissible. Since there is no commitment, there is no marriage contract between the bride and groom. Since there is no commitment, there is no man-wife relationship. Since there is no commitment, all children are bastards. The state claims all rights to bastards, therefore all children are subject to the state’s determination for “care, custody, education, and maintenance”

Perhaps children are indeed fruits of the state. After all, when a slave owner allows two slaves to mate and they produce new property, the new property is registered in the owner's records. Is your birth registered in your father's family bible, or is your birth registered in your owner's records?

Asking for permission to get married is a confession that you do not have a right to get married. By applying for a marriage license, you’ve waived your right to get married.

Marriage is the joining together of a man and woman in order to raise a family. GOD GIVES CHILDREN TO PARENTS (1<sup>ST</sup> CHRONICLES 25:5). PARENTHOOD IS A RIGHT GIVEN BY GOD. By getting permission to marry, or by selling you children into slavery in order to get a tax deduction, or by accepting welfare, children become wards of the state. 1<sup>ST</sup> Corinthians 7:23 says You were bought by Christ, do not become the slaves of men. We are to be slaves to God (Romans 6:22, Galatians 1:10). If you want to uphold the Lordship of Christ do not mark your children.

When the law says that the state cannot recognize a common law marriage, it doesn't mean you're not married. It means the state cannot take your children nor divorce you. God's laws prevail. A common law marriage simply means that your family is not part of their corporation. Your family does not have existence in the eyes of their laws. But beware that there are multiple definitions of common law marriage. They twist things around. They will insist that a common law marriage is when a couple lives in sin. In that case, there is no commitment, and the family court has jurisdiction.

Ignorance of the law is no excuse. You should have known (as did the Supreme Court in [Murdock v. Pennsylvania](#), 319 U.S. 105) that "A state may not, through a license tax, impose a charge for the enjoyment of a right granted by the Federal Constitution." By paying for a marriage license, you confessed that you did not have a right to get married. The power to tax is the power to destroy. What part of "let no man put asunder" don't you understand?

Notice that the definition of a Christian name is a name that is given one after birth or at baptism, or is afterward assumed by him in addition to his family name. You can assume a name that is not your government name. Examples: Saul became Paul, Simon became Peter (Cephas in John 1:42), Zacchaeus became Matthew, Didymus became Thomas, and the Thaddaeus of Matthew 10:3 and Mark 13:18 became Judas son of James in Luke 6:16. Even John the Baptist's father had to rename his son (Luke 1:63) after the Holy Spirit had filled him "even from his mother's womb" (Luke 1:15 KJV). And when Joses became Christian, he was called Barnabas (Acts 4:36). Just try assuming a Christian name and see what happens.

Do you have authority to present yourself in public, or do you need permission from someone else’s master/lord?

There are dozens of early court cases to prove that you can use any name you want to. However, merchants who control your buying and selling have been deceived by a beast power into asking for ID “proof that you are who you say you are.” If these merchants were Christian, they should be saying: “I will not trample upon your right to present yourself in public, I acknowledge your authority to be whoever you say you are. Your authority to exist does not come from someone’s civil servants. The government does not have a law impairing the obligations of our contract.”

Early court decisions confirm that Christians must have names, and must reveal their name in court, but non-Christians did not have to have names. Non-Christians could be called anything, such as John Doe. If a Christian was called by a name other than his own, he could “abate the court proceedings” by claiming that there was a misnomer. Everything is backwards now. Non-Christians get full government recognition with an all capitalized government name, and anyone who wants to keep their Christian name is treated as an enemy of the state. And furthermore, contempt of court is a life sentence without a trial.

More name games with children. Government cannot know the names or birthdates or family relationships of your children. Or even the existence of your children. They cannot even ask! Here are proofs that birth certificates are about government property, not about babies:

- Roe v. Wade was a Fourteenth Amendment privacy case. Government could not know about procreation or child rearing, thereby allowing abortion in the first trimester to go unpunished because the abortion laws were written in such that they "... violate due process clause of Fourteenth Amendment protecting right to privacy..." Your family has a right to privacy. Roe v. Wade went on to also state "Several decisions of this Court make clear that freedom of personal choice in matters of marriage and family life is one of the liberties protected by the Due Process Clause of the Fourteenth Amendment."
- Yeager v. Hackensack, 615 F.Supp.1087, citing the authority of Roe v. Wade, confirmed that "*Right to be free from compelled disclosure of names of household members is within right of privacy protected by Constitution.*" Did your census instructions disclose this?
- Yeager v. Hackensack also confirmed that private utilities cannot request Social Security Numbers without first complying with the disclosure provisions of section 7(b) of the Privacy Act.
- Roe v. Wade cannot be an abortion case. It is only a privacy case. Proof #1: the Supreme Court will not hear cases unless the party is damaged (according to rules laid down in their Ashwander case). Only Roe's privacy was damaged. Roe was not arrested for having an abortion. Roe did not have an abortion, she gave birth to a son who remains an active critic of the abortion laws. Proof#2: The abortion doctor in the Roe v. Wade case, Dr. James Hallford, was remanded back to state courts for his punishment. Roe v. Wade DID NOT legalize abortions. A million repetitions of a lie do not make it true.
- Matters of child bearing or child rearing must remain strictly private. This cannot be overemphasized. Asking for the birth date of a child is such a gross violation of privacy, it is like asking to watch the birth! I offer the following proof that matters of child bearing require this level of privacy: the Supreme Court in Bowers v. Hardwick recognized that sodomy laws must be enforced because "The right to privacy does not extend to acts of consensual sodomy between homosexual adults". Procreation is private. Sodomy cannot be private. Any bureaucrat who asks for a child's birthdate is violating your most sacred family privacy. Treat him like you would treat Herod.
- According to rules of evidence your family records, or records of religious organizations are just as valid as records of state vital statistics made to a public office (these are under the hearsay exception rules -- which say that hearsay is not admissible except for these three pages of exceptions which are admissible). The main difference is that government documents are self-authenticating.

Here is a challenge: You can overturn Roe v. Wade if you can find ANY government form that compels the disclosure of a child's name or birthdate or existence. [Unless, of course, the child is the government's child. Government property must be regulated. Which kind are your children?]

Midwives are now "required" to report home births to government so that a birth certificate can be issued, and a SSN will be issued pursuant to the GATT treaty. Midwives under Pharaoh were also required to report the birth of Moses; so that civil government could process him (Acts 7:19) but these midwives lied to their government. Quiz: Is it right or is it wrong for Midwives to lie to government? When Jesus was a baby, all little boys in Bethlehem were to be processed by civil government. Is it right or wrong to escape lawful government processing of children?

For the advanced student:

In Maynard v. Hill the Supreme Court referred to the Maynard's marriage with the term '*status*', and every occurrence of the term '*status*' was in italics. I never found out what the italics signifies. If you want to do some research, find out what italics means in Supreme Court decisions, and keep in mind that Social Security is also not based on contract, but upon a status. you can also study the Sheppard-Towner Maternity Act of 1921, 42 Stat 224, formerly 42 U.S.C. §161-175, and the Federal Birth Registration areas of 1929, and Meeker v. U.S., 350 U.S. 199, and Chapter 135 sect 9, 42 U.S.C. §225 which gave the Children's Bureau power to enter homes and take children.

Galatians 5:1 (NIV) "It is for freedom that Christ has set us free. Stand firm, then, and do not let yourselves be burdened again by a yoke of slavery."

## 7.7 Other traps: Power of Attorney, interest, federal districts.

If you allow others to handle your affairs, you give them a power of attorney. As I explained earlier, you grant the power of attorney by getting a number. Proof: they can seize your property without a court order, without proof of a violation, without a judge's signature, and without even starting any court proceedings.

Go to any library and look up "Procuration" in a Law Dictionary, pay special attention to "tacit procuracy": "An implied or tacit procuracy takes place when an individual sees another managing his affairs and does not interfere to prevent it."

By doing nothing, you grant the power of attorney if you see the government handling any of your affairs and you do not interfere to prevent it. As I explained earlier the *poor laws* were written to take care of "those who are destitute and helpless..."

Even acceptance of their control over prescription drugs is proof that you do not manage your own affairs. You, by your action of accepting their management of your affairs, agree that you are incompetent to manage yourself.

Perhaps you even grant the power of attorney by accepting Federal Reserve Notes when they are required to pay (tender in payment of debts) Gold coin per Constitution Article 1, section 10. A classic book on this topic is The Miracle on Main Street by F. Tupper Saussy ISBN: 0-911805-00-1

Even without a signature or an oath, your actions can grant the power of attorney and alter your citizenship. By accepting the benefits of statutory citizenship, you become a statutory citizen. Examples: accepting statutory deeds, accepting usury or voting for bond issues, voting for president unless you are in the Electoral College, confessing that you reside within a Federal zip code, declaring bankruptcy, or using the Freedom of Information Act, or many other statutes. This is because persons and corporations get their rights from congress, whereas sovereigns get their rights from God.

Zip codes are optional as far as the post office is concerned (see domestic mail policy DMM 122.32), yet Social Security cards will not be issued unless the application form has a zip code address (you will get SSA Denial Notice, Form SSA-L676, stating that they cannot mail a Social Security Card to an address that doesn't have a zip code - they can mail the denial but they cannot mail the card). They cannot force you into a federal jurisdiction, which would be the crime of kidnapping. Not even one created by the Buck Act. You must voluntarily confess that you are a resident in your federal government, with a federal address, otherwise their laws do not apply to you and they can not send you an SS card. Draft registration is another example. In Lincoln's day, when there were no 14th Amendment citizens, he drafted state citizens the Constitutional way: he sent letters to the governors, who then called out their militia to quell the insurrection. Another example is in recent changes to the draft registration process - the application no longer requires a signature under a perjury oath (even though courts may presume such an oath). All it now needs is a "mandatory" federal address. Once you confess that you are a resident in the government, you are now an expendable human resource. How many men have died fighting recent UNjust wars for those who are not honest enough to teach basic citizenship in their schools? By the way the Selective Service System cannot require that registrants provide their social security numbers, *Wolman v. U.S.*, 501 F.Supp. 310 and 542 F.Supp. 84. Concerning UN wars - your Constitution requires your president, not the UN, to be commander in chief of your armed forces.

You have no right to accept or charge interest. Interest is a government granted privilege that is granted contrary to Biblical principles. The borrower is a slave to the lender (Proverbs 22:7). One percent interest is usury (Nehemiah 5:10-11). A Bible believer will never accept usury (Psalms 15:5, Ezekiel 18:13) or charge usury (Deuteronomy 23:19-20, Exodus 22:25). It is a curse upon the land Isaiah 24:2-3. Punished by death Ezekiel 18:13. In your own country, up until 1694, accepting or paying interest was a punishable crime. Government incorporated banks can give usury. In order to do this they need an SSN so that they can tax this government granted privilege. You can still get a non-interest checking account without a number. By the way, Private banks can pay interest too, but they must pay a 10% tax for this government granted privilege. There are no private banks left.

Note: The very same unchanging Jesus Christ who said that not one jot nor tittle shall fall from the law also told the parable of the ten talents in which a master used sarcasm to rebuke an unprofitable servant. Luke 19:23. Sarcasm does not authorize usury. He was saying (my paraphrase): "So you think I'm a hardened criminal who reaps what he doesn't sow, why then didn't you go all the way and commit the crime of usury by depositing my money in a bank."

Paying or collecting interest is still the crime of usury. But it is no longer punishable for those who want protection from God's laws. The U.S. Supreme Court ruled in a 1913 case, *German Alliance Insurance Co. v. Kansas*, 233 U.S. 389 at page 432 that

*"Moreover, interest laws were in their inception not a restriction upon the right of contract but an enlargement, permitting what theretofore had been regarded both as an ecclesiastical and civil offense. ... they therefore fall within the rule that contemporary practice, if subsequently continued and universally acquiesced in, amounts to an interpretation of the Constitution."*

How do you like that? By turning our backs to an unchanging God (Malachi 3:6, Hebrews 13:8, Hebrews 6:17-18, Numbers 23:19, 1<sup>st</sup> Samuel 15:29, Titus 1:2) we've let criminals, (theretofore regarded as a crime), now unpunishable, interpret our Constitution for us. This Supreme Court case paved the way, later in 1913, for Congress to pass the Federal Reserve Act, which sealed our doom.

The Supreme Court had to rule this way because they don't interpret your Constitution. They are just servants. Their masters (we the people) determine the law. If the people are Christian, we will have Christian law, if the people are worldly, we will accept evil law. Which law do you accept?

In the 1935 Supreme Court case of *Perry v. U.S.* (294 U.S. 330) the Supreme Court found that "In the United States, sovereignty resides in people...", but Mr. Perry could not redeem his Government Bond for the Gold it promised to pay. They didn't come right out and say it, but I suspect they ruled this way because sovereigns cannot accept interest.

You should have known, as did Abe Lincoln in his first inaugural address that "If the policy of the government... is to be irrevocably fixed by decisions of the Supreme Court... the people will have ceased to be their own rulers." Back then, you could be your own rulers. Just try to assert your rulership now, and see what happens.

2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy 3:12&13 (KJV): Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

## 7.8 Why have a government?

As explained earlier in chapter 2.13 The right to be free from all known methods of compulsion are recognized in American common law as "the rights of all mankind". They are as sacred as the right to self defense.

Does your government guarantee such rights? If so, then you live in a free country. If not, then you might want to consider joining a different kingdom.

Abraham, Moses and Jesus all came to set men free. Free from government.

After Abraham delivered us from government, we did not have central government for the first ten books of the Bible. We did not need government then. We do not need central government now. Electing Saul as a King was evil in the eyes of the Lord. 1 Sam 12:17

All forms of collectivism are evil and will fail. Because collectivism, in any form (Communism, socialism, fascism, or even democracy), does not recognize individual God-given rights.

God gave you a free will. He will not save you from the evil that you tolerate.

Creating a government is evil. Bowing down to the graven idol you created is worse. Thou shall not bow down to them, nor serve them. Second Commandment.

Nowhere in the Bible is mankind given the authority to legislate beyond the commandments. In fact it is prohibited for mankind to legislate, Deuteronomy 4:2. Even Jesus corrected the apostles about Moses' law by stating that it was not so, even from the beginning.

Christ, at the Last Supper, warned his successors not to be like benefactors who rule one over the other. Jesus said in Luke 22:25-26 "... **they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors, but ye shall not be so...**"

Your civil servants are servants. They are not masters.

SO... Why do we have a government?

The first sentence of the U.S. Declaration of Independence says that The Laws of Nature entitle the United States to exist.

The laws of nature punishes by death such crimes as murder, child rape and sodomy. According to Blackstone, all lesser laws exist only to protect government, and should not enforce a death penalty. The authority to execute criminals does not come from government. It comes only from God. Only YOU can delegate the authority to take the life of a murderer, pedophile or sodomite, because only YOU were delegated the divine authority to do so. According to Blackstone: Government must *"bear the sword of justice by the consent of the whole community...[even foreign diplomats could be executed] in case they have offended, not indeed against the municipal laws of the country, but against the divine laws of nature, and become liable thereby to forfeit their lives for their guilt."*

As we shall see, the law of nature is not just a Christian notion. According to Blackstone:

*"It is binding over all the globe in all countries, and at all times; no human laws are of any validity, if contrary to this: and such of them as are valid derive all their force, and all their authority, mediately or immediately, from this original... neither could any other law possibly exist... for we are all equal".*

Notice here again we see that the law of nature authorizes government to exist.

**LAW OF NATURE.** A rule of conduct arising out of the natural relations of human beings, established by the Creator, and existing prior to any positive precept. Webster. The foundation of this law is placed by the best writers in the will of God, discovered by right reason, and aided by divine revelation; and its principles, when applicable, apply with equal obligation to individuals and to nations. 1 Kent, Comm. 2, note; Id. 4, note. See JUS NATURALE.

We understand all laws to be either human or divine, according as they have man or God for their author; and divine laws are of two kinds, that is to say: (1) Natural laws; (2) positive or revealed laws. A natural law is defined by Burlamaqui to be "a rule which so necessarily agrees with the nature and state of man that, without observing its maxims, the peace and happiness of society can never be preserved." And he says that these are called "natural laws" because a knowledge of them may be attained merely by the light of reason, from the fact of their essential agreeableness with the constitution of human nature; while, on the contrary, positive or revealed laws are not founded upon the general constitution of human nature, but only upon the will of God; though in other respects such law is established upon very good reason, and procures the advantage of those to whom it is sent. The ceremonial or political laws of the Jews are of this latter class. 11 Ark. 527.

This is Black Law Dictionary first edition, 1891, entry for Law of Nature.

Unfortunately, this dictionary entry did not appear in subsequent editions. It disappeared. No mention remains of the very law that entitles the United States to exist, even though it "*applies with equal obligation to individuals and to nations*".

The unchanging Law of Nature did not change just because ungodly lawyers removed it from their dictionary.

Unfortunately, today's lawyers are only told to "See Natural Law". But the Natural Law entry now mentions only "*the philosophical speculations of the Roman jurists of the Antonine age, and was intended to denote a system of rules and principles for the guidance of human conduct which... might be discovered by the rational intelligence of man... to grow out of and conform to his nature.*"

Not only have ungodly lawyers obliterated any mention of God's rules of conduct that apply "*with equal obligation to individuals and to nations*", they have reverted back to the same brutal pagan pre-Christian Roman law that executed Christ and forced gladiators to fight to the death, and entertained the public by executing Christians. Are you forced to fight in their arena?

Today's lawyers are never exposed to the legitimacy of government, or "*a rule of conduct... established by the Creator*" or the restraining force of moral values that has been taken out of the way. The lusts of their father they will do, for there is no truth in them.

Also related to the Law of Nature in Black's first edition, we find:

**—Absolute law.** The true and proper law of nature, immutable in the abstract or in principle, in theory, but not in application; for very often the object, the reason, situation, and other circumstances, may vary its exercise and obligation. 1 Steph. Comm. 21

**Leges naturæ perfectissimæ sunt et immutabilēs; humani vero juris conditio semper in infinitum decurrit, et nihil est in eo quod perpetuo stare possit. Leges humanæ nascuntur, vivunt, moriuntur.** The laws of nature are most perfect and immutable; but the condition of human law is an unending succession, and there is nothing in it which can continue perpetually. Human laws are born, live, and die. 7 Coke, 25.

Because the Laws of Nature entitle the United States to exist, a constitution was written -- ordained was the religious word they used. Was there an original Citizen who could have delegated more power than he himself had, the power to destroy liberty of an innocent defendant? Or divorce his neighbor's marriage? Or to destroy the foundation of your society? If not, then no one could have delegated such power to your civil servants in the Constitution they wrote. At what point in the development of society did someone delegate to civil servants the authority to cancel his neighbors' vows to God?

Julliard v. Greenman, [110 U.S. 421](#):

*"Congress can exercise no power which [the people] have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it: All else is withheld"*

If you don't have the power to divorce your neighbors' vows to God, then you couldn't have entrusted that power to your civil servants.

How can those who are were entrusted with societies' political power, for the express purpose to secure the blessings of liberty to our posterity, violate their trust by using delegated powers for quite contrary ends? This was answered by John Locke's second treatise of Government, quoted earlier.

Jesus kept repeating that another kingdom, a holy kingdom, was at hand. At hand means at hand. Two thousand years ago.

## 7.9 The Purpose of Civil Government

The purpose of civil government is to enforce God's laws. The [Declaration of Independence](#) states right up front that the Laws of Nature entitle us to create our own nation among the powers of the earth.

In fact, the early church was actually it's own Republic.

- In Gibbon's work [The Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire](#) he referred to the "discipline of the Christian republic"
- Will Durant [Rousseau and Revolution](#) footnote 83 explains that the church "... formed an independent and increasing state in the heart of the Roman Empire"

**Social Security: Mark of the Beast, ver. 2.7**

Electronically Published by: Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/>



- Vine's Expository Dictionary of New Testament Greek defines the word 'church' (Greek *ekklesia*) as a group of men who meet to discuss the affairs of state.
- John Wycliffe's introduction of his Bible translation in 1382 said that "*This Bible is for the Government of the People, by the People, and for the People.*"

Vine's Expository Dictionary of New Testament Greek defines the word 'church' (Greek *ekklesia*) as a group of men who meet to discuss the affairs of state. If your church is separated from state, then you do not have a church. Perhaps your nation has been taken captive by brutal pagan occupation forces. Let's take a closer look.

*Black's Law Dictionary* entry for CHURCH:

*"A body or community of Christians, united under one form of government by the profession of one faith, and the observance of the same rituals and ceremonies."*

UNITED UNDER ONE FORM OF GOVERNMENT. Do you still think church and state are separate? Let's take a closer look.

Why does government exist? The Declaration of Independence claims "... that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights,..." Then the very next sentence states "That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men..."

This is the ONLY reason given for the existence of the U.S. government. Does this sound like separation of church from state? Then We the People did "... ordain and established this Constitution for the United States of America." The word *ordain* is a religious term.

God established His law to last forever (Psalm 119:152). God alone gives man authority to rule over other men (Gen 9:6, Dan 2:20-22, Dan 4:32, Psalm 47:9, John 19:11). Jeremiah 22:3 summarizes Gods delegation of authority:

- Do what is just and right.
- Rescue from the hand of his oppressor the one who has been robbed.
- Do no wrong or violence to the weak and powerless.
- Do not shed innocent blood.

If that doesn't sound like your government, then perhaps your government has been overthrown.

The Bible has plenty of history to show that when righteous people turn from God they are taken captive, often by very brutal tyrants. Even on an individual level, if you cannot govern yourself, others will govern you.

Christ has been given all authority in heaven and on earth. He is the sovereign to whom you owe allegiance. When the Bible speaks of the Kingdom of God, it is referring to God's government here on earth. Not, as a self-called "Christian Lawyer" would tell you, some spiritual notion of an afterlife. People, pay attention. Here is proof of your Christian citizenship, here on earth:

- Philippians 3:20 (NIV) Our citizenship is in heaven.
- Matt 4:17 and 10:7 The Kingdom of heaven is at hand.
- Mark 1:15 "The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand" [This was at the first coming of Christ. How can you ignore this verse?] AT HAND MEANS AT HAND. Matthew 3:2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Matthew 4:17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Matthew 10:7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Mark 1:15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel. Luke 21:31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. Luke 16:16 Tyndale translation: "The law and the prophets reigned until the time of John: and since that time, the Kingdom of God is preached, and every man striveth to go in."
- Acts 17:7 (NIV) "... They are all defying Caesar's decrees, saying that there is another king, one called Jesus." [How can you claim that the early Christians obeyed civil authority?]
- Matt 11:12 (NIV) The kingdom of heaven has been forcefully advancing and forceful men lay hold of it.

- Luke 22 at the Last Supper. Christ confirmed in Verse 29 - "I bestow upon you a kingdom..." Christ handed over to His disciples the keys to his kingdom. The disciples then argued among themselves who would have the greatest authority as successors to Christ's government.
- John, while suffering tribulation, said in Rev.1:9 that he was "in the Kingdom of Christ". He failed to mention that it was a vision of a postponed Kingdom.
- Matt 6:10 The Lord's prayer, acknowledges a Kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth...
- Matthew 16:28 and Mark 9:1 and Luke 9:27 I tell you the truth, some who are standing here will not taste death before they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom." [Did Christ Lie?]
- Colossians 1:12-13 Giving thanks to the Father... who has brought us [past tense] into the kingdom of his dear Son
- Ephesians 2:19 ye are fellow citizens with the saints
- Jesus promised to be with us until the end of the world. Matt 28:20
- Jesus in Matthew 16:19 I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven
- Hebrews 11:14 & 16 People who say such things show that they are looking for a country of their own.... they were longing for a better country--a heavenly one...
- Matt 23:13 Woe unto you ... for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.
- Acts 14:22 (KJV): "we must go through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God."
- Revelation 5:10 You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth."
- Christ is currently at the right hand of God (Acts 2:33, Acts 7:55 & 56, Romans 8:34, Colossians 3:1, Hebrews 10:12, and 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 3:22).

Martin Luther: "And if thou not be of the Kingdom of Christ, it is certain that thou belong to the kingdom of Satan, which is this evil world."

John the Baptist, as the High Priest, was baptizing people into the Kingdom of Heaven here on earth.

Jesus was a man of authority. Equal in authority to the Roman government. Jesus had authority and he delegated that authority just like any other government leader. He was King, and his kingdom was "at hand" and it was on this earth. (He said in John 18:36 that his kingdom is not of this world, but he used a term that refers to an organized system, jurisdictional or "constitutional order"). It was Rome that Jesus was not a part of. "And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me." Luke 22:29. Did Jesus lie?

Jesus, as the lawgiver, appointed us a kingdom. This is our constitutional mandate. He told us that we were not to be like the governments of the gentiles.

Luke 22:25-26:

*"And he said unto them, the kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve."*

There is nothing contradictory among the following scriptures, because there is no middle ground. You are either for Christ, or you are against Him.:

- He who is not with me is against me. Matt 12:30 and Luke 11:23.
- Whoever is not against us is for us. Mark 9:40 and Luke 9:50.

Nowhere in the Bible does God give mankind the authority to legislate. In fact it is prohibited for mankind to legislate, Deuteronomy 4:2. The only legitimate government among mankind, is the government that enforces Biblical law. Even Jesus corrected the apostles about Moses' law by stating that it was not so, even from the beginning.

There is no power but of God, as Paul wrote in Romans 13. This is NOT a command to obey counterfeit government. The (legitimate) powers that be are ordained of God. Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers (as contrasted with counterfeit powers).

While keeping in mind that mankind was never given the authority to legislate, let's examine a few scriptures requiring a government to administer the Lord's will:

All nations are required to obey His law, Psalm 22:28, Ezekiel 14:12-23, Obadiah 1:15

- Saul was elected as King, This was evil in the eyes of the Lord, I Sam 12:17b.
- Leviticus 24:22 (NIV) You are to have the same law for the alien and the native-born. I am the LORD your God."
- Deuteronomy 1:17 (KJV) Ye shall not respect persons in judgment; but ye shall hear the small as well as the great; ye shall not be afraid of the face of man; for the judgment is God's: and the cause that is too hard for you, bring it unto me, and I will hear it.
- Numbers 15:16 (NIV) The same laws and regulations will apply both to you and to the alien living among you."
- Exodus 18:20-23 (NIV) Teach them the decrees and laws, and show them the way to live and the duties they are to perform. But select capable men from all the people--men who fear God, trustworthy men who hate dishonest gain--and appoint them as officials over thousands, hundreds, fifties and tens. Have them serve as judges for the people at all times, but have them bring every difficult case to you; the simple cases they can decide themselves. That will make your load lighter, because they will share it with you. If you do this and God so commands, you will be able to stand the strain, and all these people will go home satisfied."

In the next three chapters, I'll prove that the Judicial power of your state is empowered to enforce God's law, not man's law.

## 7.10 Separating Church from State

The Pilgrims settled in America to establish a place to worship their God. We were founded as a Christian nation, but we now find ourselves in a secular nation. The word *Secular* means without God.

The purpose of this chapter is to provide ample proofs that your original state government was your church, so that you can (1) confirm that you surrendered your church to evil forces and (2) contrast your original state that now exists only as a shadow, to the all capitalized STATE, which is a federal corporation. [I use the term *federal* loosely. The word *federal* doesn't even exist in the Constitution]

The Church of England and the Government of England persecuted the Christian Pilgrims. They risked death and disease on a seven-week sea voyage to flee from English law. They brought forth on this continent a new nation. A nation free from British nonsense.

There is no separation of church and state. The church, to preserve religious freedom established the state. Even *Encarta* confirms that in Colonial times churches received tax revenue. In the New Testament Bible, the Greek word 'church' (Greek *ekklesia*) is a group of men who meet to discuss the affairs of state. The term "separation of church and state" was recently coined by the Supreme court in 1947 by misquoting Thomas Jefferson.

Actually, separation of church and state is Article 52 of the Soviet Constitution. Psalm 2 says that nations will rage against God. Romans 1:18-32 says nations will promote sin and lawlessness.

Nine of the thirteen original states had established religions, which were prerequisites to citizenship. The first amendment did not separate church and state. The first amendment was ratified to prevent your Federal government from establishing a religion. As proof that the first amendment didn't prohibit state religions, one need only confirm that the states continued their religions long after they ratified the Bill of Rights. Massachusetts in 1828 was the last state to disestablish its religion, Thirty seven years AFTER the First Amendment DID NOT separate church from state.

November 11, 1620. Mayflower Compact: Pilgrims aboard the Mayflower, in Plymouth Harbor, Covenant "For the Glory of God and the Advancement of the Christian Faith..."

May 19, 1643. Articles of Confederation of Massachusetts, Connecticut, New Plymouth and New Haven:

*"Whereas we all came into these parts of America with one and the same end and aim, Namely, to advance the Kingdom of our Lord, Jesus Christ, and to insure the liberties of the Gospel in purities with peace."*

April 3, 1644. Charter of New Haven Colony:

*"... That the judicial laws of God, as they were delivered by Moses ... be a rule unto all the courts in this jurisdiction..."*

April 26, 1685. The Great Law of Pennsylvania:

*"Whereas the Glory of Almighty God and the God of Mankind is the reason and the end of Government ... Therefore Government itself is a venerable ordinance of God..."*

For nearly a hundred years only a confessed Christian could hold public office in America.

1701 Pennsylvania Charter of Privileges:

*"That all persons who profess to believe in Jusus Christ, the saviour of the world, shall be capable... To serve this government in any capacity, both legislatively and executively."*

1772. Samuel Adams:

*"The rights of the colonists as Christians... may be best understood by reading and carefully studying, the*

institution of the Great Lawgiver and head of the Christian Church, which are to be found clearly written and promulgated in the New Testament."

July 4, 1776. Declaration of Independence gives the reason for your government to exist:

"... all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights... appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world... and for the support of this declaration, with firm reliance on the protection of divine providence..."

Here are some other statements from America's founders who understood that freedoms are based on Christian principals:

1756 John Adams, America's second President:

*"Suppose a nation in some distant region should take the Bible for their only Law Book, and every member should regulate his conduct by the precepts here exhibited... What a paradise would this region be!"*

1781, Thomas Jefferson:

*"God who gave us life gave us liberty. And can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are a gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath? Indeed, I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is just; that His justice cannot sleep forever."*

July 12, 1804, Alexander Hamilton's last dying words after Vice President Aaron Burr shot him:

*"I have a tender reliance on the mercy of the Almighty; through the merits of the Lord Jesus Christ. I am a sinner, I look to Him for mercy; pray for me."*

1821, Daniel Webster:

*"If we abide by the principles taught in the Bible, our country will go on prospering and to prosper; but if we and our posterity neglect its instructions and authority, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe may overwhelm us and bury all our glory in profound obscurity."*

Benjamin Rush, signer of the Declaration of Independence:

*"The only foundation for ... a republic is to be laid in Religion. Without this there can be no virtue, and without virtue there can be no liberty, and liberty is the object and life of all republican governments."*

If your Constitution were to say that church and state were separate, which it does not, then how would you explain these statements:

George Washington: *"Do not let anyone claim to be a true American, do not let them claim the tribute of American Patriotism if they ever attempt to remove religion from politics. If they do that, they cannot be called true Americans."*

Patrick Henry: *"It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by religionists, but by Christians; not on religions, but on the gospel of Jesus Christ. For this very reason peoples of other faiths have been afforded asylum, prosperity, and freedom of worship here."*

Supreme Court Chief Justice John Jay: *"Providence has given to our people the choice of our rulers and it is the duty, as well as the privilege and interest, of a Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for its rulers."*

John Quincy Adams: *"The highest glory of the American Revolution was this: That it connected in one insoluble bond the principles of Christianity with the principles of civil government."*

James Madison, 1788: "We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from it. We have staked the future ... upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to sustain ourselves, according to the Ten Commandments of God."

George Washington, October 3, 1789 proclaiming a National Day of Prayer: "*Whereas it is the duty of all nations to acknowledge the providence of Almighty God, to obey his will, to be grateful for his benefits and humbly to implore His protection, aid and favors...*"

George Mason, 1789: "All human laws which contradict His laws, we are bound in conscience to disobey"

The Supreme Court of Maryland in 1799: "By our form of Government, the Christian religion is the established religion" (A confession of a government established religion, eight years AFTER the first amendment supposedly separated church from state. – although I hate to use Maryland as a good example)

John Quincy Adams, 1821: "The highest glory of the American Revolution was this: it connected in one indissoluble bond, the principles of Christianity, from the day of the Declaration... they were bound by the laws of God, which they all, and by the laws of the Gospel, which they nearly all acknowledged as the rules of their conduct."

Noah Webster: "The moral principles and precepts contained in the Scripture ought to form the basis of all our civil constitutions and laws. All the miseries and evil men suffer from vice, crime, ambition, injustice, oppression, slavery, and war, proceed from their despising or neglecting the precepts contained in the Bible."

President Andrew Jackson, 1845: "The Bible is the rock on which our Republic rests."

The U.S. Supreme Court in 1892 in the case Church of the Holy Trinity vs. the US: "Our law and our institutions must be necessarily based upon and embody the teachings of the Redeemer of mankind. It is impossible that it should be otherwise, and in this sense and to this extent our civilization and our institutions are emphatically Christian... This is a religious people. This is historically true. From the discovery of this continent to the present hour, there is a single voice making this affirmation... We find everywhere a clear recognition of the same truth... THIS IS A CHRISTIAN NATION."

That's right! One Hundred and one years after the first amendment supposedly separated church from state, the Supreme Court said the U.S. is a Christian nation.

US Supreme Court Justice Joseph Story, in 1851:"... the universal sentiment in America was, that Christianity ought to receive encouragement by the state. ... any attempt to level all religions, and to make it a matter of state policy to hold all in utter indifference would have created universal disapprobation, if not universal indignation." THAT'S RIGHT! SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE CREATES UNIVERSAL INDIGNATION.

As the Declaration of Independence was being signed on July 4, 1776, Samuel Adams said: "We have this day restored the sovereign to whom all men ought to be obedient. He reigns in heaven, and from the rising to the setting of the sun let his kingdom come."

Here is a simple Biblical test to determine if your state's servants still hold allegiance to the authority that created their office. 1<sup>st</sup> John 4:2-6 (KJV) "Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world... They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error."

If you think this is still your nation, just consider that the Supreme Court has banned Bible in schools and ordered the Ten Commandments removed.

Now I want to mention a few things about the STATE church.

- There cannot be a separation of their Satanic church and state. Your government continues to conduct their religious rituals, because they cannot have separation of their church from their state Your courthouse Latin speaking black robed

priests require religious rituals in their synagogues. The state is their church. Your Constitution was ordained and established. Ordained is a religious term.

- President Adams and a ¾ majority of the Senate confessed that "... the government of the United States is not in any sense founded on the Christian Religion..." And to this very day, it is obvious that your ordained federal system performs it's anti-Christian religious rituals.
- If you say that the Social Security Card is the Mark of the Beast, the EEOC claims that you are making a political statement, not a religious statement. They seem to think that they are your church. I cannot distinguish any difference between church and state. If I say that Jesus is my King, am I making a religious statement or a political statement?

Do you now confess that there is a world antichrist power, as defined in 1<sup>st</sup> John 4, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world?

If you want to know more, I recommend:

- David Barton's *The Spirit of the American Revolution*
- Vaun Shatzer's *The Truth Behind the Declaration of Independence*
- John Weaver's *The Christian and Civil Government*
- Traditional Values Coalition, P.O. Box 97088, Washington, DC 20090-7088.

### 7.11 Your Chain of Command: Proof that you have been overthrown.

- How did we go from a nation established by pilgrims seeking a place to freely worship their God, where the Lord was our lawgiver (James 4:12, Isaiah 33:22), to a nation where congress is our lawgiver?
- How did we go from a nation where “We the People” wrote a Constitution to delegate to our civil servants the 17 things they are authorized to do in Article 1 section 8, to a nation where we are the servants?

The simple answer is that there are two chains of command, and you chained yourself to the wrong one.

Within government, there are two chains of command. State and federal. The original states, as defined in the last chapter, supposedly still exist. They are hanging by a thin thread, but they can still exist. The other chain of command is the federal territories. There is nothing wrong with owing allegiance to the original states, because it is a church organization. There is everything wrong with owing allegiance to corrupt powers. Let's explore how states (Christians) became the all-capitalized STATES (corporations of the non-Christian federal government).

Jesus is at the right hand of God, and has been given ALL authority in Heaven and in Earth. All legitimate authority is ordained of God (Romans 13, 1<sup>st</sup> Peter 2, etc). Illegitimate authority is ordained of Satan. Sheep know their own master's voice (John 10) and flee from strangers.

Church and State can become separate. Nations can be conquered. Corporations can be sold even if the lower level employees are not told of the sale. The line of succession can be broken, just once, and an unaware nation is forever enslaved. Just because the name on the letterhead remains the same, doesn't mean the chain of command is still intact. Your nation has been surrendered. Three times.

After a conquered nation is surrendered, the victor can do anything he wants to suppress the nationalistic sentiment of the conquered. He can kill all the men, take all your property, abolish your legislature and rename your nation. And all the brutal things allowed by the rules of surrender in Deuteronomy 20. As a minimum, the victor will control foreign affairs, circulate their own currency, and control your existing legislature without you suspecting anything. The victor will probably enslave you by a tax on your labor and your property. If you are no longer in control of "your" government, perhaps you should find out why.

Here is some early history:

Columbus claimed America for the Pope.

The Christian Pilgrims arrived at Plymouth Rock in 1620, having centuries earlier renounced Catholic authority. By the late 1600's the Puritans arranged for Colonial Charters allowing corporations, such as the Massachusetts Bay Company, to tax the inhabitants. This is how the Puritans surrendered the Pilgrims back to England, and they became British Colonies. England was exercising the authority of the Holy Roman Empire. The HOLY ALLIANCE of May 13, 1213 A.D. was a treaty between Pope Innocent III and King John of England conveying all rights, titles, and interests in the Crown of England's lands to the Pope. [I believe this is unrelated to the second beast exercising the authority of the first beast.]\_The Kings of England were indebted to Rome for their wealth, power and authority.

King George violated the Fairfax resolves in 1774. War starts on April 19, 1775 (with Paul Revere's ride to Lexington and Concord), when British Colonists living in a British Colony, who considered themselves to be Englishmen, who were subject to British law, who owe allegiance to King George III, who never thought of overthrowing the most powerful nation on earth - risked death to shoot at their government's law enforcement officers. You cannot claim that the U.S. has a right to exist, unless you also claim that Christian farmers in 1775 had a right to kill their government's law enforcement officers. The entire legitimacy of your U.S. Government hangs on their right to reject their ungodly government. Romans 13:1 (KJV) "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." There is an excellent eight page essay "Was the American Revolution a Biblically-Justifiable Act?" on David Barton's Wall Builder's web page.

In October 1781, after three weeks of negotiations, Cornwallis, who was a Freemason, "surrendered" to George Washington, who was also a Freemason, on the condition that the Bank of England would control the central bank of your



new government. Cornwallis' troops were then allowed to keep their arms and ammunition - very unusual for a "surrender". The theretofore worthless Continentals were then redeemed at 100 cents to the dollar with British silver. The British troops occupied America, with their arms and ammunition, until 1796 (for seventeen more years), as required by the Jay Treaty. We were allowed to occupy "our" land only as they made their gradual withdrawal. The Jay Treaty is available at [www.yale.edu/lawweb/avalon](http://www.yale.edu/lawweb/avalon) As a comparison: General MacArthur occupied Japan for 7 years after Japan surrendered. We didn't win the American Revolution any more than Japan won the last World War.

Congress, under the Articles of Confederation, authorized Ben Franklin to borrow 18 million Lira from the British Crown. He signed the note on July 16, 1782. The loan was due on January 1, 1788. When it became obvious that the note could not be paid, a Constitutional convention was held to reorganize the bankruptcy. Did your government schools tell you this? Now read the first sentence of Article 6. We are still repaying that loan, which is why you are subject to foreign benefactors.

The Articles of Confederation required all amendments to be unanimous, yet the Constitutional Convention, which was held to amend the Articles of Confederation, prepared a Constitution to be established when three-fourths of the states ratified it. The U.S. Supreme Court cannot hear any case that would question its own legitimacy, but learned jurists throughout the history of your once great nation have raised these important issues. Start with *Clark's Summary of American Law*, Volume 1, Constitutional Law, page 465.

The Treaty of Paris, 1783, allows the United States to exist, yet King George claimed that he was retaining title over the Holy Roman Empire and the United States of America as Arch-Treasurer and Prince Elector. The very authority that allows the United States to exist, perpetuates the notion that Kings rule by divine right, and also retains the authority over "your" treasury for the Holy Roman Empire. If you claim that the U.S. has won its independence, then you are acknowledging the legitimacy of rest of the Treaty. Perhaps you can now understand why your Constitution was pushed on you, and why feudal tenure still applies, and why your U.S. Government is in no way founded upon the Christian religion. And indeed, to this very day, "your" Department of the Treasury is not part of your U.S. Government.

THE UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT REMAINS WITHIN THE BRITISH EMPIRE AND WITHIN THE ROMAN EMPIRE. I suggest that you study the issue for a week or so. Here are some links:

[www.civil-liberties.com/books/colony2.html](http://www.civil-liberties.com/books/colony2.html)  
[www.civil-liberties.com/books/colony21.html](http://www.civil-liberties.com/books/colony21.html)  
<http://freedomlaw.com/BRColony.html>  
<http://biblebelievers.org.au/king35.htm>  
<http://biblebelievers.org.au/king40.htm>  
<http://biblebelievers.org.au/king44.htm>  
<http://biblebelievers.org.au/acountry4.htm>  
<http://mu.clarityconnect.net/~bhuston/government/britcoll.htm>  
[www.civil-liberties.com/books/nutshell.html](http://www.civil-liberties.com/books/nutshell.html)  
[www.westwindnet.com/ireland/debatcen/messages/4849.html](http://www.westwindnet.com/ireland/debatcen/messages/4849.html)  
<http://www.civil-liberties.com/books/theking.htm>  
[www.atgpress.com/inform/indexinf.htm](http://www.atgpress.com/inform/indexinf.htm) and [www.atgpress.com/inform/ss003.htm](http://www.atgpress.com/inform/ss003.htm)

Then read the official Roman Catholic encyclopedia version at [www.newadvent.org/cathen/05431b.htm](http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/05431b.htm)

Don't confuse the "U.S. Treasury", which has the Mint, with the "Department of the Treasury" that has the IRS.

- Title 31 U.S. Code chapter 3 does not list the IRS as a part of the U.S. Treasury
- Pursuant to Treasury Delegation Order number 92, the IRS is trained under the direction of the United Nations Division of Human Resources.
- Executive Order 10422. The Office of Personnel Management is under the direction of the Secretary of the United Nations. Pursuant to Treasury Delegation Order number 91, the IRS entered into a Service Agreement with the U.S. Treasury Department (see Public Law 94-564 and its Legislative History page 5967) to service the Reorganization Plan for the Agency for International Development.
- The IRS is an also an agency of INTERPOL. 22 U.S.C. §263a. The memorandum of understanding is between the Secretary of the Treasury and the International Monetary Fund and the International Bank for Reconstruction and Development. They pay the IRS.

- The IRS operates under public policy and not constitutional law. They are agents of your nation's creditors. This is perfectly legal. The IRS never states that they collect taxes for the United States Treasury; they only refer to "The Treasury".
- According to the U.S. Government Manual, the Attorney General is the permanent representative to INTERPOL, and the Secretary of the Treasury is the alternate member.
- Under Article 30 of the INTERPOL constitution, these members must abstain from advising INTERPOL's Secretary General, they can only take orders.

Your Constitution was written in 1787, in anticipation of the upcoming, but still secret, default. States are not federal. States existed before your federal government. In fact, states existed before Britain claimed them. The states created your federal government and granted them authority to do ONLY the 17 things listed in Article 1, section 8 of the constitution. The original federal government must remain subordinate to the states. The 10th amendment was added to ensure that states and people would always remain superior to your federal government.

Your Constitution does not apply to federal territories. Examples: taxes need not be uniform in the territories, nor is any territory guaranteed a Republic form of Government. No citizen of a territory can become President. No citizen of Washington, DC can become President. Congress can do whatever it wants within the territories. In all cases whatsoever. This is why territories wanted to free themselves by getting admitted into the union. Territories are not part of these united States. Washington DC is a territory. Therefore, Washington DC is not a part of these united States. Again: no one from Washington, DC can become President because no federal person can have political rights. You can voluntarily become a federal person by checking a box that asks if you are a U.S. citizen.

In 1811 the charter for the central bank expired and renewal was denied. This caused the War of 1812. We lost, which allows the English central bank to continue in the U.S. to this very day.

Your federal government now rules the states. How did this happen? Answer: it doesn't. State citizens were offered a substitute authority of a similar sounding, but all capitalized, name, and they "entered into society". The real states remain dormant awaiting a remnant to awaken them.

Your federal legislature makes laws for the territories and territorial persons. They also implement treaties. State legislatures make laws for state governments. To hide their strict limitations, they often use alternative meanings of words in their statutes. I don't want to confuse you here with a lot of legal gibberish, but if you are going to study the laws and court decisions you need to understand that the legal definitions are not the common meanings. Examples: There are three United States (per the Supreme Court's *Hooven* case), there are four U.S. Constitutions (the original, the one for Virgin Islands, the one for Puerto Rico, and one adopted as the by-laws of the federal corporation), there are seven Treasury Departments, there have been only three Internal Revenue Services (Guam, Philippine, and Puerto Rico, AND NO OTHERS), and there are 54 states. If you don't know with whom you are dealing, and you sign their form just once, with a perjury oath, then you are trapped in their snare. Go to Title 31 U.S. Code chapter 3 and search the list of organizations of the Department of the Treasury. You will not find the IRS listed. Your IRS is not a United States government agency. Your IRS is a foreign agency operating within the U.S. to collect your fair share. You cannot complain, because you signed up for this "service."

Without an oath, you do not exist in their eyes. They cannot see you. You are above their laws. Once you fill out their form, you now have legal existence in the eyes of their law. The word cognizance means that they can see you from the eyes of their law. There is always a presumption of a perjury oath on any government form. Oaths, like salutes, are a form of worship and are initiated by the subordinate toward the superior. Once you swear an oath to your new god, just once, then you are on their roster. You are the subordinate. Once you are on their roster, they can call muster at any time, and you must show up and perform your duties. They will determine your values for you. Example: You must now pay taxes, under duress, for abominations that are contrary to your values.

When the states failed to convene Congress from 1861 to 1871, a band of conspirators took matters into their own hands. The reconstructionists took over control of the States with a Corporation incorporated under the District of Columbia. This corporation is entitled "The United States". It was created by the 41st congress in 1871 by Session III Chapter 61 and 62. It still exists today. They adopted your Constitution as their by-laws. Since by-laws can be interpreted to the advantage of whatever politics of the day happen to exist, this started a conflicting history of court decisions.

Whenever you see your state name with only the first letter Capitalized, this refers to the original creators of your federal government. Whenever you see your all capitalized STATE OF\_\_\_\_\_, on legal documents like licenses, laws, court decisions, and birth certificates, this refers to a corporation of the United States, of the District of Columbia. The all capitalized states are political sub-divisions of the United States. Again: federal persons cannot have rights.

19 CJS section 884: "The United States Government is a Foreign Corporation with respect to a State." In re: Merriam's Estate, 36 N.Y. 505, 141 N.Y. 479, Affirmed in U.S. v. Perkins, 163 U.S. 625

In 1935 Social Security was offered to Americans. The Act was written by Chief Justice Brandice for the Rothchilds. Section 904 of the Act was supposedly written by Paul Warburg, Jr. (who was in charge of your Federal Reserve during WWI while his brother Max Warburg was in charge of the German central bank).

According to the Supreme Court in [Ashwander v. TVA](#) anyone who "avails himself of a benefit" is in a federal territory, and cannot question jurisdiction. Perhaps now you understand why they encourage you to get a Social Security Number. By getting a number, you've negated the reason your state was admitted into the union.

The United States Treasury Department personnel who represented us at the founding of the United Nations in 1945 were later determined to be Communists according to Senate Report [Interlocking Subversion in Government Departments](#), dated July 30, 1953. Treaties with the Communist UN are equal to your Constitution.

In 1977 Public law 95-147 declared that banking institutions, including State Banks, were to be under the direction and control of the corporate Governor of the International Monetary Fund, a private entity of the United Nations.

In 1933 the United States, Incorporated went bankrupt and was transferred to the bankruptcy receivership. The IMF installed the Secretary of the Treasury as chief executive of the federal corporation. Read Clearfield Trust Company v. US, 318 U.S. 363 for proof of federal bankruptcy. Or Senate Report No. 93-549 (page 187 and 594).

The Clearfield doctrine requires this bankrupt incorporated United States to abide by laws of commerce. The IRS must be incorporated if it deals in Federal Reserve Notes instead of Gold and Silver. What contract did you sign to obligate yourself to this corporation?

The Federal Reserve Bank is a private business. It is not a part of government according to Lewis v. Federal Reserve, 680 F.2d. 1240.

75 Congressional Record 12595 – 12603 contains a quote from the House Banking Committee:

*“Some people think the Federal Reserve Banks are U.S. government institutions. They are not government institutions.”*

Do not ever confuse the United States federal corporation with their state masters who also have the same name. (the masters who wanted to secure the blessings of liberty to their posterity). You must be careful if you ever want to contract with them. Contracts are above your Constitution. If you were to contract with them, you might find that private property could be taken without just compensation, or perhaps you could be drafted to fight UNjust wars, or perhaps they could tender something other than gold or silver coin, or perhaps you could be subjected to their regulatory agencies. (and, by the way, liberty is the absence of regulation) Perhaps you could even be jailed for a crime. Prior to 1938 most crimes had to have victims. After 1938 anything could be a crime.

Are you prepared to be a criminal? The original apostles were often in jail, and most of them were executed. John 16:2 tells us to be prepared for execution. Jesus Christ himself tells us that even our relatives will turn us in to have us put to death. Luke 21:16. Are you prepared?

#### SPOT THE TREND:

In 1994 the Justice Department announced its perpetrator profile of who it considers to be a religious cultist:

*“A cultist is one who has a strong belief in the Bible and the Second coming of Christ; who frequently attends Bible studies; who has a high level of financial giving to a Christian cause; who home schools their children; who has accumulated survival foods and has a strong belief in the Second Amendment; and who*

*distrusts government. Any of these may qualify but certainly more than one would cause us to look at this person as a threat, and his family as being in a risk situation that qualified for government intervention.”*

The Defense Department’s operations plan for *Civil Disturbance Doctrine*:

*“If any civil disturbance by a resistance group, religious organization, or other persons considered to be non-conformist takes place, Appendix 3 to Annex B of Plan 55-2 hereby gives all Federal forces total power over the situation if/when local and state authorities cannot put down said dissent.”*

“POR:SGH:JCS Pub 6, Vol 5, AFR-60-5 hereby provides for America’s military and the National Guard State Partnership Program to join the United Nations personnel in said operations.”

The *Crime Control Act of 1993* definition of “intent to commit terrorist acts” includes any acts that: “appear to be intended – (1) to intimidate or coerce a civilian population; (2) to influence the policy of a government by intimidation or coercion.”

- -[Could evangelism be a terrorist act? Could influencing others to write to Congressmen be political intimidation intended to influence a policy of the government? How about distributing tracts? ]
- -This same *Crime Control Act*, Chapter 113B, Section 138 protects witnesses. You will not be able to find out who your accusers are, even though your 6<sup>th</sup> Amendment allows you to confront your accusers in court. (How did they get around this? Did you waive rights?)

Hate Crime Laws prohibit you from speaking out against politically incorrect behaviors. Try reading Leviticus 20:13 in public, and see how well the Bible is tolerated in public. Your religious liberty will not be tolerated. You are a terrorist. Here in the same nation that the Pilgrims founded to establish religious liberty. Here in the same nation where your Declaration of Independence says that governments are instituted among men to secure rights endowed by God.

In 1993 Clinton bragged about putting 100,000 new police on the streets. Perhaps you didn’t read the law. *The Violent Crime Control and Law Enforcement Act of 1993*, section 5108:

*“the Attorney General ... shall report to Congress and the President on the efforts made, and success of such efforts, to recruit and hire former Royal Hong Kong Police officers into Federal law enforcement positions. The report shall discuss any legal or administrative barriers preventing a program of adequate recruitment of former Royal Hong Kong Police officers.”*

The *Anti-terrorism and Death Penalty Act* of 1996 allows the government to determine who terrorists are. You will not be allowed to assert otherwise.

*Section 219(8):“If a designation under this subsection has become effective under paragraph 1B, a defendant in a criminal action shall not be permitted to raise any question concerning the validity of the issuance of such designation as a defense or an objection at any trial or hearing.”*

On December 10, 1998 Clinton signed Executive Order 13107, “*Implementation of Human Rights Treaties*” to implement within the federal government the treaties “to which the United States is now or may become a party in the future.” This includes treaties that the Senate has wisely refused to ratify. Examples: The UN Treaty on Genocide says that persuading a religious group, in whole or in part, into changing their religion, is the crime of Genocide. The Office of Religious Persecution Monitoring has already been set up to oversee these hate crimes. *The International Covenant on Economic, Social and Cultural Rights* has been rejected for the past 50 years because it refuses to recognize the right of the individual to own property. The *UN Convention on the Rights of the Child* allows children the freedom of expression, freedom of association and freedom of conscience and religion. This means that prostitution, gangs, cults, and witchcraft are now protected rights. Parental authority that seeks to direct a child in how he/she is raised will result in loss of the child to state protection. *The Universal Declaration of Human Rights* had been wisely rejected ever since 1948. Article 29 prohibits any rights that are contrary to the purposes of the United Nations. You may not speak out against the UN. Speaking out makes you a terrorist who is opposed to basic human rights.

The 1999 *Intelligence Authorization Act*, Title VI, Section 605 grants the attorney general the authority to allow routine wire taps without approval of a judge.

If you want to research the executive orders, try [www.uhuh.com/laws](http://www.uhuh.com/laws)

Supporting facts:

- In 1973 the Report of the Special Committee on the Termination of the National Emergency, U.S. Senate Report 93-549 confirms that there had been 63 years of ongoing emergency powers: “*Since March the 9<sup>th</sup>, 1933, the United States has been in a state of declared national emergency. Under the powers delegated by these statutes... martial law ... control the lives of all American citizens*”
- We were declared to be the enemy. The March 9<sup>th</sup> 1933 national emergency referred to by that Senate report invoked against Americans the authority of the Trading With The Enemy Act of October 6<sup>th</sup>, 1917. FDR signed into law on March 9, 1933, chapter 1, Title 1, Sec. 1, 48 Stat. 1: “*The actions, regulations, rules, licenses, orders and proclamations heretofore or hereafter taken, promulgated, made, or issued by the President of the United States or the Secretary of the Treasury since March the 4<sup>th</sup>, 1933, pursuant to the authority conferred by Subsection (b) of Section 5 of the Act of October 6<sup>th</sup>, 1917, as amended, are hereby approved and confirmed.*”
- You are the declared enemy. The authority invoked by [Trading With The Enemy Act of October 6<sup>th</sup>, 1917](#) “*An Act to define, regulate, and punish trading with the enemy, and for other purposes*” was amended March 9, 1933 to include “*any person within the United States or any place subject to the jurisdiction thereof*”
- Although the World Wars and the Civil War had armistices ending the hostilities against belligerents, Congress has never terminated the wars it declared.
- President Lincoln’s martial law code, the Leiber Code, states that a declaration of martial law is never necessary. The mere fact that there are government-armed troops in the streets is sufficient notice that we are under martial law. Back in the old days, it was never a government function to kill people without a trial, except in war – therefore a policeman had to provide his own sidearm if he wanted to defend himself. – the action of defending oneself is never a government act, and cannot be funded with public funds or equipment, except in war. If government police officers are in the streets with government guns, then you are living under martial law.
- International law requires a showing of military necessity to deprive a civilian of his liberty. Here is a definition of liberty. The United States Supreme Court in [Meyer v. Nebraska](#) at [262 U.S. 390](#), at page 399, defines the term Liberty “*Liberty... denotes not merely freedom from bodily restraint, but also the right of the individual to contract, to engage in any of the common occupations of life, to acquire useful knowledge, to marry, to establish a home and bring up children, to worship God according to the dictates of his/her own conscience...*”

Daniel Webster, in a speech to the Senate June 3, 1834:

*God grants liberty only to those who love it and are always ready to guard and defend it.*

A Protestant is a Catholic who is in rebellion. I am not a Catholic.

The law dictionary defines Protestants as those sects that “protested against a decree of emperor Charles V” and appealed to a general council. I do not appeal to their council. I appeal to a just God who rules from heaven.

## Judicial Power

Pagan courts could be the synagogue of Satan that are twice mentioned in the Bible. After all, Themis, the goddess of law and order, holds a balance scale that symbolizes today's justice system.

Your state does not have a judicial branch of government. The missing judicial branch was the court system originally created as a check and balance to prohibit civil servants from controlling their masters. That's right. The judicial branch was created to protect you from government. Inquisition is trial by government. Inquisition is prohibited within a State. TRIAL BY GOVERNMENT IS PROHIBITED BY YOUR STATE CONSTITUTION.

(prior to 1906 government attorneys could NOT talk to a grand jury, for fear of influencing them, as for example in U.S. v. Rosenthal, 121 Fed. 862)

The judicial branches of state governments enforce the un-legislated Biblical law. As I have repeatedly shown, servants are not greater than their masters. Legislated laws do not apply to people outside the government.

The separation of powers prohibits the judicial branch from enforcing legislated law. These judicial courts are almost extinct, because only sovereigns are qualified to use them. You cannot be sovereign within your state if other persons govern you.

The master controls the servant. Always. And civil servants control their subordinates. You are sovereign if you are the master of your civil servants. This is why Christians are hated by those in power.

In their courts, you no longer place your left hand on a Bible, while saluting the black robed priest with your right hand. I see this as worship of a false god.

Here are proofs that judicial powers do not exist.

People: Pay attention.

Proof #1: There is a separation of powers. Judicial courts do not enforce statutes. Legislative courts enforce statutes. Courts are often empowered to act as administrative adjudicators, as in Federal Radio Commission v. GE 281 U.S. 464. The U.S. Supreme Court said: "Such legislative or administrative jurisdiction, it is well settled cannot be conferred on this court either directly or by appeal.", Keller v. Potomac, 261 U.S. 428. Keller v. Potomac also went on to explain Muskrat v. U.S., 219 U.S. 346, that judicial power "does not extend ... to administrative or legislative issues or controversies."

Proof #2: Look at the yellow fringe flag in your state's courts. In Title 4 United States Code, the flag authorized by the legislature does not have a yellow fringe. The yellow fringe flag is a military flag. See the 1925 Attorney General Opinion 34 Op Atty Gen 483. (Here is another reference which I have not confirmed: 1959 President Eisenhower's Executive Order 10834 published in Federal Register at 24 FR 6865 "A military flag is a flag that resembles Fringe border on three sides").

The yellow fringe is prohibited outside the federal military, according to Army Regulation AR840-10 1-6e(3). If your courtroom is flying a yellow fringe flag, then it is within the military.

Then read the U.S. Supreme Court's decision in Ex Parte Milligan, 71 U.S. 2, and prove to yourself that the judicial branch of a state government must protect its citizens from the federal military. That's right, the judicial branch of any state's government must protect its citizens from the yellow fringe flag. If your state supreme court is flying a yellow fringe flag (and it is), then you must confess that it is no longer protecting you from the flag it is flying.

Proof #3: Lawyers are officers of the court, yet can serve in the Legislative and Executive branches of government. There is no separation of powers. Almost all courts are within the legislative branch, not the judicial branch.

[I said "almost all" because there is one courtroom in your State's Supreme Court building which probably hasn't been used since the early 1940's. It has a real U.S. flag on the wall- attached to the real estate, not on a staff (authority that raised up from the land, not from the sea). Its justice is not available to PERSONS. The entire authority of the state rests in this empty courtroom, ready for a remnant to awaken it. (Aside: Throughout the history of your once-great nation, more than two million men, with a duty to defend the Constitution against ALL enemies, foreign and DOMESTIC, have marched off

to secure the blessings of liberty to their future posterity, never to return home. It behooves you to preserve whatever blessings of liberty remain. Don't spit on their graves by flippantly discarding what they preserved.)

Proof #4: Federal and State constitutions existed prior to the existence of bar attorneys, yet you cannot get the non-bar "Assistance of Counsel" guaranteed by the 6th amendment. In fact, an attorney cannot represent an ordinary citizen. The practice of law is an occupation of common right (meaning anyone can practice law) according to *Sims v. Ahrens*, 271 S.W. 720 (1925). And the U.S. Supreme Court in *Schwartz v. Board of Examiners* 353 U.S. 238,239 refused to say whether or not states can license the practice of law. Everything is backwards for enfranchised persons. If you enlisted into the government, then you are prohibited from a non-bar attorney guaranteed by the 6<sup>th</sup> amendment. Again: a licensed attorney cannot represent private people and a non-licensed attorney cannot represent public persons. Which kind are you? How do you suppose you enlisted?

You are considered legally incompetent. A judge will tell you to retain competent counsel. Like a child, you are under a legal incapacity and must be represented. There are many advantages to remaining incompetent. Others will manage your affairs. You can receive benefits such as Social Security. And, you can only go to jail when a lawyer wants to punish you. Like a child being given "time out". Here is proof:

The Supreme Court in a 1972 case *Argersinger v. Hamlin*, 407 U.S. 25, ruled:

*"Absent a knowing and intelligent waiver, no person may be imprisoned for ANY offense, whether classified as petty, misdemeanor, or felony, unless he was represented by counsel at his trial."*

That's right! A Roman officer cannot bind (arrest) a Roman citizen. Acts 22:29.

I don't know about other states, but in my state there is a law that made the bar association an agency of the state in 1933. The canon of ethics prohibits any lawyer who is an agent of the plaintiff from representing the defendant. That's right! A lawyer would instantly lose his license if he were to claim to represent a private citizen in any proceeding brought by the state.

The U.S. Supreme Court in the 1793 case *Chisholm v. Georgia*, 2 U.S. 419, at page 459 confirmed that the law profession was corrupted in ancient times: "The rude and degrading league between the bar and feudal barbarism was not yet formed."

Let him who has wisdom calculate. Bar = barbarism.

Proof #5: A lawyer cannot claim that you have rights. *U.S. v. Johnson*, 76 F.Supp. 538 is a 1947 case where

- a defendant "... indicated he was standing upon the right of a lawyer not to disclose the confidential communications of his clients."
- "Likewise, he claims that the judge before whom the matter was heard, assured him that his rights would be protected and lead him to believe that he would be immune from prosecution."

He lost his case and appealed. The appeals court determined:

*"The privilege against self-incrimination is neither accorded to the passive resistant, nor the person who is ignorant of his rights, nor to one indifferent therein. It is a fighting clause. Its benefits can be retained only by sustained combat. It cannot be claimed by attorney or solicitor. It is valid only when insisted upon by a belligerent claimant in person."*

Now read that again and notice "It cannot be claimed by attorney..." That's right! An attorney cannot go into a courtroom and claim that you have rights.

Proof #6: Read the 1988 Judicial Improvements Act, Public Law 100-702 (102 STAT 4672) Section 297(a) allows federal judges to serve in state courts. (It is interesting to note that Title 28 U.S. Code, section 297(b) refers to states as countries). If there were judicial branches in any state this could not happen. How did we go from a Supreme Court decision in the *Milligan* case, that state courts must protect their citizens from your Federal Government, to a law that allows federal judges to sit in state courts? Answer: your nation has been surrendered.

Proof #7: Your nation was settled by persecuted Christians who risked death to establish a nation where they could live Biblical lives. Where God's commandments prohibit bearing false witness. Where civil authority must punish those who bear false witness per Deuteronomy 19:18-19. Where, historically, sworn testimony was taken when placing your hand on a Bible.

Contrast the history with what we have now. Now the Supreme Court determined on March 7, 1983 in *Briscoe v. Lahue*, No. 81-1404, that police cannot be punished for giving perjured testimony that convicts someone. Did you authorize your servants to lie? Can anyone be safe in such a system? Do you want your nation back?

Proof #8: Back when states were states, we had a system of justice where you had a right to a jury of your peers. A jury of your peers is a jury of 12 people who know you, see the chapter on your right to a trial by jury.

Now that you know lawyers have forced you to take oaths to their gods, and forced you to deny God's dominion here on earth, you can now appreciate what Christ said in Luke 11:52 "Woe unto you lawyers for ye have taken away the key of knowledge; ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered." And also in Matt 23:13,33 (NIV) "You shut the kingdom of heaven in men's faces. You yourselves do not enter, nor will you let those enter who are trying to... How will you escape being condemned to hell?" Did you read that right? Did Christ lie, or are lawyers condemned to hell? see John 8:44. [Again I've underlined the word enter, so that you understand the voluntary citizenship issue].

"They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves ..." 2<sup>nd</sup> Peter 2:19 (NIV)

Proof #9: The acts of congress cannot be copyrighted, and the acts of the Courts cannot be copyrighted, yet all legal citations refer to copyrighted law books. If you make the mistake in court, just once, of referring to one of their copyrighted law book, then you just granted jurisdiction.

Proof #10. The Summary Judgment rule enforces the pagan maxim that "he who refuses to fight must lose." If you don't respond to the specifics of the accusation, then you are automatically guilty. Because of this automatic guilt:

- You are forced against your will to fight your neighbor or lose whatever they want to take.
- You are a pawn. You are put on a dueling field and forced to fight. This is a form (forum) of entertainment for your Roman occupation forces. The same adversarial traditions that fed Christians to the Lions still entertain these anti-Christians. Their own Gladiators went to their deaths to entertain the bloodlusts of these black robed Latin speaking priests.
- Jesus gave us an example to follow when we are confronted with this summary Judgment rule. Jesus Christ remained silent at his arraignment before Pilate (Matt 27:14, Mark 15:3-5). This is referred to by Christians as the good confession (1<sup>st</sup> Tim 6:13). Also see Mark 14:61 and Isaiah 53:7
- Jesus Christ said in Matt 5:25 and Luke 12:58 that you are to agree with your adversary lest they deliver you to the judge.
- 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:5-7: Shame... to go to law against another ... in front of unbelievers. Why not rather be wronged?
- Traditionally, according to the Bible, justice was served when a thief made fourfold restitution. Why then did Jesus Christ say in Luke 6:30 that if anyone takes what is yours you must not demand restitution? Why did the same unchanging Jesus that warned us to **judge not** lest ye be judged (in Matthew 7:1-2 while speaking to the multitudes) also tell us to **judge** righteous judgment (in John 7:24 while speaking in the temple)? Why are we told not to judge our brother (Romans 14:10) yet the least esteemed in the Church are to make judgments (1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:4)? Could it be that there are two court systems? One under Roman law and one under Christian law? Could it be that we are not to participate with evil? Now that you understand the alternative: Why not rather be wronged?
- Early Christians did not ask for restitution. The few that did were harshly admonished. Example: 1<sup>st</sup> Corinthians 6:7: (NIV) "The very fact that you have lawsuits among you means you have been completely defeated already."
- Is your court system for Christ or is it Anti Christ?

2<sup>nd</sup> Samuel 23:3 (King James Version) "...He that ruleth over men must be just, ruling in the fear of God."

According to *Occult Symbols* by Dr. Cathy Burns, "The Law of Karma has been symbolized by the Scales of Justice."

Can a Judge be a Christian? (Answer: Matt 7:1-2, Luke 6:37, Romans 2:1, Romans 14:4,10, 1<sup>st</sup> Cor 4:5, etc.)



Jesus Christ said in Matt 5:34 that Christians cannot swear oaths, and in verse 37 that any testimony beyond a yes or no answer is evil. Is you local court for Christ or is it Anti Christ?

In your once great nation there was a time when an oath to God put an END to all argument. Hebrews 6:16. Is this court rule available to you in your local courtroom?

According to all encyclopedias an oath is always a religious ceremony. Does your court require separation of their Satanic church from their state, or does your court prohibit separation of their Satanic church from their state? In their courts, you no longer place your left hand on a Bible, while saluting the black robed priest with your right hand.

Well after the 1803 case of Marbury v. Madison, which lawyers use as the source of judicial authority, Thomas Jefferson wrote in a letter to Mr. Jarvis dated September 25, 1820:

*"To consider the judges as the ultimate arbiters of all constitutional questions is a very dangerous doctrine indeed, and one which would place us under the despotism of an oligarchy. Our judges are as honest as other men, and not more so. They have, with others, the same passions for party, for power, and the privilege of their corps... their power the more dangerous as they are in office for life, and not responsible as the other functionaries are, to the selective control. The Constitution has erected no such single tribunal, knowing that, to whatever hands confided, with the corruptions of time and party, its members would become despots."*

THATS RIGHT! THE SUPREME COURT DOES NOT INTERPRET THE CONSTITUTION.

Also consider:

Luther v. Borden, 48 U.S. 1 at page 52 (in the year 1849):

*"But the other disputed points in making constitutions, depending often, as before shown, on policy, inclination, popular resolves, and popular will, and arising not in respect to private rights,-... but in relation to politics, they belong to politics, and they are settled by political tribunals, and are too dear to a people ... for them ever to intrust their final decision, when disputed, to a class of men who are so far removed from them as the judiciary; a class, also, who might decide them erroneously as well as right, and if in the former way, the consequences might not be able to be averted except by a revolution, while a wrong decision by a political forum can often be peacefully corrected by new elections or instructions in a single month:"*

## 7.12 Some additional thoughts.

Luke 11:46, 52 (KJV) And he said, Woe unto you also, ye lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. ... Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

"The most Glorious legacy that one can bequeath to posterity is Liberty; the only true security."

U.S. v. Stewart, 234 F.Supp. 94 (1964):

*"United States Government officer may be sued only if he acts in excess of his statutory authority or in violation of the Constitution for then he ceases to represent government."*

US Supreme Court, Laird v. Tatum, 408 U.S. 1, page 28:

*"This case involves a cancer in our body politic. It is a measure of the disease which afflicts us. ... Those who already walk submissively will say there is no cause for alarm. But submissiveness is not our heritage. The First Amendment was designed to allow rebellion to remain as our heritage. The Constitution was designed to keep the government off the backs of the people. ... The Bill of Rights was designed to keep agents of government and official eavesdroppers away from assemblies of people. The aim was to allow men to be free and independent and to assert their rights against government. ... When an intelligence officer looks over every nonconformist's shoulder... the America once extolled as the voice of liberty heard around the world no longer is cast in the image which Jefferson and Madison designed, but more in the Russian image,..."*

Psalm 64:2 Hide me from the secret counsel of the wicked; from the insurrection of the workers of iniquity... (7) But God shall shoot at them with an arrow; suddenly shall they be wounded

John Quincy Adams: "Posterity – you will never know how much it has cost my generation to preserve your freedom. I hope you will make good use of it."

- 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy 3:1 "This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come."
- Isaiah 10:1 Woe to those who make unjust laws.
- Hosea 4:6 ... seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children.
- Isaiah 58:1 "Cry aloud, spare not; Lift up your voice like a trumpet; Tell My people their transgression..."
- John 16:33: **In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.**
- Revelation 2:26: **And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations.**
- Ecclesiastes 12:13 "Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this is the whole duty of man."

Amen.

### 7.13 Resource List

The word “repent” means “reconsider.” It takes time to reconsider the ways of the world and turn to face God. After you put your hand to the plow, I suggest baptism as a new child of God. Christians are to depart from iniquity. Incorporate into God’s government. You cannot depart from iniquity if you are incorporated into a beast.

Here are some links to look into:

Disclaimer: These links are provided for your research. None of them has endorsed my work. I don't recommend substituting alternate forms in lieu of government forms. I link these here so you can learn to spot their errors.

Social Security and Taxes: <http://www.linkjesus.com/sstaxes.htm>  
[www.nossn.com](http://www.nossn.com) offers a W-4T withholding termination form and other “freedom materials”  
[www.libertyleague.org](http://www.libertyleague.org) support for the unenumerated  
[www.restoringamerica.org](http://www.restoringamerica.org)  
[www.epic.org/privacy/ssn](http://www.epic.org/privacy/ssn)  
[www.patriotsaints.com](http://www.patriotsaints.com)  
[www.no-debts.com/anti-federalist/census.html](http://www.no-debts.com/anti-federalist/census.html)  
[www.pacinlaw.org](http://www.pacinlaw.org)  
[www.RTR.org](http://www.RTR.org)  
[www.givemeliberty.org](http://www.givemeliberty.org)  
[www.anti-irs.com](http://www.anti-irs.com),

and the “Save a Patriot” sites: [www.taxtruth4u.com](http://www.taxtruth4u.com) and [www.informamerica.com](http://www.informamerica.com) and don't miss their [www.informamerica.com/SocialSecurity/sslquitSS.htm](http://www.informamerica.com/SocialSecurity/sslquitSS.htm)

for another view of Social Security history: <http://home.earthlink.net/~walterk1/Patr/SS/SSNotes.html>

Work without a SSN as an independent contractor:  
 Links

[www.preferredservices.org](http://www.preferredservices.org)

Since you have already cancelled your bank account, you probably have found ways to cash checks. If not, you can keep an account for you in either gold or U.S. dollars.

National Commodity and Barter Association, P.O. Box 2255, Longmont Colorado 80502 phone 303-654-1111.

There are other offshore anonymous accounts and trusts that you can open through middlemen. These attract the attention of the IRS and are not recommended.

For those who have completely dropped out of the worldly system, you can buy a good quality Heaven Passport, or ID card, from the Embassy of Heaven Church, 8777 Basl Hill Rd. SE, Stayton, Oregon 97383. phone 503-769-5034. They sell many worthwhile publications. These people are willing to go to jail and loose their property for their Christian beliefs.

[www.embassyofheaven.com](http://www.embassyofheaven.com)

No longer available: CPA Book Publishers 503-668-4941 had a large catalog of Christian centered books for those who are patriotic.

Endtime Magazine has plenty of news about the push toward a one-world government, and the latest news of the UN, the world court, the Pope and Gorbachev. Endtime, P.O. Box 2066, Richmond, IN 47375. Phone 1-800-ENDTIME

For the latest news on the United Nations global government go to [www.americanpolicy.org](http://www.americanpolicy.org)

Newswatch Magazine. [www.newswatchmagazine.org](http://www.newswatchmagazine.org)

Also recommended:

The Power of Prophecy newsletter by Texe Marrs. 1708 Patterson Road, Austin Texas 78733. Free newsletters to their customers.

To understand the limitations of federal bureaucracies, I recommend the book "Vultures in Eagle's Clothing" by Lynne Meredith. \$50. Phone 562-592-9077. She also sells a book "Getting Hired without a Social Security Number." (published by Free the People, P.O. Box 370, Sunset Beach, California)

Another book to prove that the income tax is voluntary is "*Investigating the Federal Income Tax*" by former IRS special agent Joseph Banister. He was formerly employed as an enforcer in the IRS Criminal Investigation Division, but he had a change of heart when he learned the truth. His web site is [www.freedomabovefortune.com](http://www.freedomabovefortune.com)

The book "Dual Citizenship: The Christian's Responsibility in Secular Government" by Patrick Matrisciana. Published by Jeremiah Books.

The book "STORM WARNING: The coming persecution of Christians and traditionalists in America" by Don McAlvany.

The book "The Social Security Swindle: How anyone can drop out" by Irwin Schiff. Freedom Books, Hamden, CT. ISBN 0-930374-05-3.

No longer available for those who are involved in legal issues "The Anti-Shyster" magazine 214-418-8993. But see <http://adask.wordpress.com> (as seen on CBS News 60 Minutes)

Another legal newspaper is "The Justice Times". They focus on Tax issues.

Luke 21:36 "Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man."

END

## 8 Index

666 .....	115, 141
Ab assuetis non fit injuria .....	96
allegiance, definition .....	100, 113
Allodial .....	137
Amish .....	74, 157, 161
Amish objecters are exempt from SSNs .....	161
Amish objections to SSNs.....	162
Amish with SSNs lost their religious liberty.....	157, 307
Anabaptists.....	74, 287
Antichrist .....	289–91
Apocalypse.....	102
Armageddon.....	132
Articles of Confederation.....	99, 157, 160, 243, 345
Ashwander v. TVA .....	38, 96, 149, 157, 168, 183, 229, 347
Attorn .....	135, 234
Attorneys.....	332, 350, 351
Authority, delegated.....	186, 316
Baptism .....	124
Catholic .....	124
Barclay, Robert .....	84, 85, 271
beheaded saints who did not take the mark shall rise first .....	286, 292
benefactor.....	38, 39
Birth Certificate .....	233, 264, 317, 327, 328, 331
Blackstone’s Commentaries	
Public Wrongs.....	79, 95, 312
Rights of Persons.....	78, 126
blasphemy, definition.....	104
Bo-otes .....	285
Capitol Building.....	71, 110, 138, 145, 197, 257
Citizenship .....	98, 177, 185, 187
commerce.....	91, 93, 94, 156, 211, 213
Communism.....	117
Communist Manifesto.....	117, 118, 127, 129, 150, 195, 251
Constitutor .....	247
Constructive contracts.....	157, 185, 216
Corban.....	106, 142, 151
Crockett, Davey .....	154
Daniel's 70th week .....	300
Declaration of Independence .....	37, 78, 95, 112, 167, 312, 320, 341
Democracy .....	95, 322, 323
Department of Agriculture .....	137, 261
Department of Justice .....	109, 248, 258
Department of the Treasury .....	118, 137, 148, 155, 214, 251, 260, 261, 262, 345
District of Columbia .....	145, 147, 190, 254, 255
Driver License Photograph .....	67
earthquake, great .....	277, 288
Egyptian obelisk.....	145, 147
Employment.....	101, 149, 159, 163, 166, 205, 208, 218, 219
Federalist Papers .....	77, 153, 154, 321, 322
Fourteenth Amendment .....	137, 177, 178, 179, 187, 189, 195
Franklin, Benjamin .....	95, 148, 246, 310
Freewill .....	78, 84
Galileo.....	136, 290
Gold coin.....	99, 261, 332
Internal Revenue Service .....	89, 162, 211, 225, 257, 317, 346

International Monetary Fund .....	262, 345, 347
INTERPOL .....	262, 345, 346
Isis .....	142, 144, 146
judgment must begin at the house of God .....	116
law of nature .....	78
authorizes U.S. to exist .....	334
dictionary definition .....	335
individuals restored to, if gov't fails to enforce, for we are all equal .....	78, 81
right to punish murder and the like is vested in every individual .....	79, 312
Liberty cap .....	61, 122, 123, 138, 258, 260
Lincoln, Abraham .....	77, 144, 154, 156, 195, 255
Mace of the United States .....	98, 237
Marriage License .....	147, 315, 329, 330
martial law .....	101, 106, 149, 349
Mayflower Compact .....	253, 340
Mennonite .....	43, 74, 213
Miranda v. Arizona .....	48, 66, 74, 309
mutiny against God .....	82, 196, 308
Napoleon .....	105, 298, 299
Necessities of Life .....	36, 37, 38, 39, 90, 96, 112, 192, 228
oaths .....	43-46, 56, 58
Papal Bulls .....	49, 218, 252
Pauper laws .....	96, 99, 155, 157, 160, 161, 177, 185, 192, 194, 234, 243
Penn, William .....	84, 266, 308
Perfect law of liberty .....	197, 312
Persons are not people .....	315
Pilgrims .....	76, 80, 110, 136, 298, 311, 340
Pope's miter .....	146
property, A man's home is his castle .....	136
protection draws subjection .....	158
Public Schools .....	74, 118, 126, 137, 150, 160, 195
Quaker .....	84, 85, 124, 271, 308
rapture .....	291-96
Real ID .....	147, 188, 189
Revolutionary War debt of 18 million Lira .....	100, 251, 345
Right Hand and Forehead	
Engraved badge on uniform's cap .....	82, 121, 140
Engraved charagma .....	61, 70, 82, 120, 121, 126
Five Biblical references are not physical marks .....	114, 125
oath .....	44, 47, 107, 124
Stigma .....	120, 141, 144
Right to contract .....	91, 99, 115, 167, 168
Right to self-medicate .....	36
Right to sell your labor .....	88, 96, 205, 209, 215, 229
rights do not come from government .....	86
Roe v. Wade .....	127, 328, 331
Salvation .....	270
Social Security	
has no trust fund .....	152
no promise to pay .....	149, 152, 193
once declared unconstitutional .....	152
only available to the destitute .....	96, 185, 192
safety net .....	214
Social Security Act .....	37, 149, 152, 157, 160, 165, 182, 216, 264
Social Security Administration .....	149, 160, 161, 253, 268
Socialists cannot be U.S. citizens .....	193, 243
Spooner, Lysander .....	73
SSN .....	148, 182

statutory construction rules .....	180
tacit procuracy .....	98, 332
Tax law cases .....	88, 169, 170
Ten Commandments .....	40, 70, 81, 83, 92, 115, 198, 200
Tertullian .....	51
Treaty	
GATT .....	150, 263, 266, 268
Jay .....	345
Paris .....	105, 148, 175, 253, 256
Tripoli .....	259
Universal Declaration of Human Rights .....	268, 348
Trial by jury .....	318
tribulation .....	293
Tyndale, William .....	203, 252, 303, 308, 321
U.S. Supreme Court does not interpret the Constitution .....	353
United Nations headquarters .....	150, 264, 268
United States Citizenship .....	172, 185, 186, 188
United States government is not founded on Christianity .....	259
usury .....	214, 332
Vatican .....	124, 145, 147, 263, 266, 273
venue .....	135–37
volunteers cannot be damaged .....	250
W-4 form .....	167, 206, 221
Washington monument .....	145
Washington, George .....	71, 254, 257, 341, 342, 344
Welfare prohibited by Constitution .....	37, 153
worship .....	66
Wycliffe, John .....	50, 83, 174, 309

Books by [Steven D. Miller](#):

1. [The Citizen Cannot Complain](#)
2. [Oaths: Mandatory or Voluntary?](#)
3. [Census: Mandatory or Voluntary?](#)
4. [Social Security: Mark of the Beast](#)
5. End Time Deceptions
6. [Identification Credentials: Mandatory or Voluntary?](#)
7. [The Sign of Jonah: Christ's only divine credential](#)
8. [Defense of Marriage](#)



Originally published on the internet in 1999 as an essay showing that the Social Security number has all attributes of the dreaded Mark of The Beast of Revelation chapter 13, this book has been greatly expanded to answer the many rebuttals that have been submitted by skeptics.

- Throughout Bible prophecy, angels tell us that prophetic beasts symbolize governments.
- There is NO *antichrist* mentioned anywhere in the book of Revelation, yet many people are waiting for a one-man world leader to issue a physical mark on the hand or forehead. Throughout the Bible, there are five references to marks on both hands and foreheads, but none are physical marks.
- Are you living at a time in history when your God-given right to contract (buy or sell) has been replaced by a beast-granted right, granted to those who can show credentials obtained by a number?
- Treaties with multinational authorities require the U.S. government to issue social security numbers.
- Very few people are able to survive with just their God-given rights. Everyone else conducts banking, sells their labor and buys housing, medicine, education and many other necessities of life with their Beast credentials. Yes indeed, you **might** not buy or sell without a mark or number of a beast. Are multinational government credentials now mandatory for what was once our God-given right to travel, marry, raise children, cash a check, or even inherit property from our own family?
- Can a signature "under penalty of perjury" violate the First and Second Commandments?
- In order to get an ID card so that you can buy or sell most necessities of life, you must first violate at least six of God's Ten Commandments.
- A beast that raised up out of the earth, while exercising the authority of the scarlet beast who raised up out of the sea, upon whose heads is the name of blasphemy, has deceived you into worshiping (with a perjury oath signature) a substitute lord to get a graven Mark, issued by a final world government, symbolically in your right hand and forehead, that must be used as a banking authorization number to buy or sell. And as a work authorization number to sell your labor.
- The final moments of world history are unfolding before us.